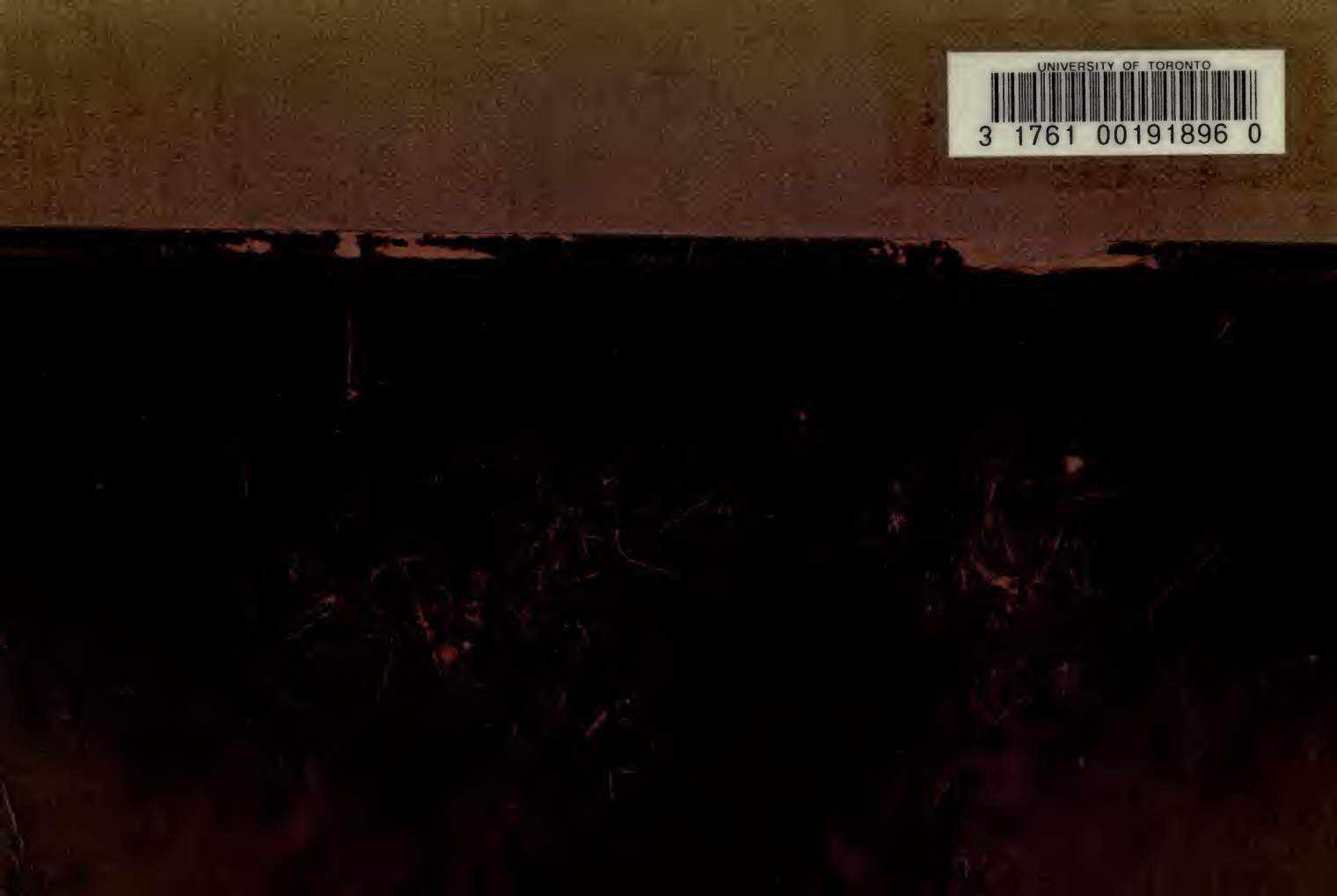
UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO
3 1761 00191896 0

THE TUDOR TRANSLATIONS

EDITED BY

W. E. HENLEY

XXX

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/chronicletransla04froiuoft

THE CHRONICLE OF
FROISSART

TRANSLATED OUT OF FRENCH BY

SIR JOHN BOURCHIER
LORD BERNERS

ANNIS 1523–25

With an Introduction by

WILLIAM PATON KER

VOLUME IV

5 H 31 H
26/5/02

LONDON
Published by DAVID NUTT
At the Sign of the Phœnix
LONG ACRE
1902

D
113
F713
1901a
V.4

Edinburgh: T. and A. CONSTABLE, Printers to Her Majesty

HERE BEGINNETH
THE THIRD AND FOURTHE BOKE OF

SYR JOHN FROISSART

OF THE CRONYCLES OF ENGLANDE, FRAUNCE, SPAYGNE, PORTYNGALE, SCOTLAND, BRETAYNE, FLAUNDERS, AND OTHER PLACES ADIOYNYNG, TRANSLATED OUT OF FRENCH INTO ENGLISHE BY IOHAN BOURCHIER, KNIGHT, LORDE BERNERS, DEPUTIE GENERALL OF THE KYNGES TOWNE OF CALAIS AND MARCHESSE OF THE SAME; AT THE COMMAUNDEMENT OF OUR MOST HIGHE REDOUTED SOVERAYNE LORDE KYNGE HENRYE THE EYGHT, KYNG OF ENGLAND AND OF FRAUNCE AND HYGH DEFENDER OF THE CHRYSTYAN FAYTH, ETC.

[1525]

THE PREFACE
OF SIR JOHAN BOURCHIER, KNYGHT, LORDE BERNERS

SYTHE hystorie (as I have in my Preface upon the fyrst volume of this cronycle declared) is the wytnesse of tymes, the lyght of trouthe, the lyfe of remembraunce, the maistres of the lyfe, the messanger of olde season, wherof innumerable commodyties growen: I ne thynke the labours myspente, that I at the highe commaundement of our moost redoughted soveraygne lorde Henry the Eyght, kyng of Englande and of Fraunce, highe defender of the Christen faythe, etc. have enployed aboute the translacyon of nowe the foure volumes of sir Johan Froissart, out of Frenche into our Englysshe tong. Certainly nat the bountie of the same cronycles, in whom are conteygned the warres of these parties, whiche warres (discryved in Frenche by sir Johan Froyssart ryght ornately), as many that have great understandynge in dyvers tonges, in whome warres are written, plainly saye, for knyghtly feates, manhode, and humanyte, passe ryght moche the warres of farre countreis: nor the great pleasure that my noble countreymenne of Englande take in redynge the worthy and knightly dedes of their valyaunt auncettours, encorageth me halfe so moche, as the princely exhorte, whiche, of all erthely kynges the very worshyppe and honour, our foresaid gracyous soveraygne gave me; he who for the manyfolde royall vertues in his highnesse founde, nat of two or thre small realmes, but is worthy to reygne and be kyng over the unyversall worlde, delyteth in nothynge more than to

THE PREFACE OF THE TRANS-LATOUR

have, as I sayd, the moost famous dedes of his predecessours and subjettes sette out with all dilygence; so that it mought appere to every mannes sight, over what and howe worthy people his auncettours have done, and nowe his majestie with all kyngly prudence reigneth: and herin his hyghnesse taketh synguler pleasure to beholde howe his worthy subjettes, seyng in hystorie the very famous dedes, as it were ymages, represent their valyaunt auncettours, contende by vigorous vertue and manhode to folowe, yea to passe them if they maye. Truely, the ymages as they used in olde tyme to erecte in worshyp and remembraunce of them that were discended of noble blode, ne beare halfe the wytnesse that the noble dedes sette out in hystorie done; whiche well appereth by the wordes of the prudent kyng Agesilaus, who, dying, commaunded that neyther ymage nor picture to his resemblaunce shulde be made: For if I have, sayd he, any noble thyng famously done, it shall beare wytnesse ynough of me: if I have nought done, certainly all the ymages lytell aveylen; as who saythe suche thynges mought be made in mynde of them that were but dastardes, and never dyde worthy dede in all their lyfe. Wherfore, for the love and honour that I beare to our moost puissant soveraygne, and to do pleasure to his subjettes, bothe nobles and commons, I have endevored me to translate out of Frenche (as sayd is) into Englysshe the four volumes of sir Johan Froissart, and reduced them into twayne. Wherin if I have erred, I praye them that shall defaute fynde to consyder the greatnesse of the hystorie and my good wyll, that aske nothyng elles of them for my great labour but of their curtesy to amende where nede shal be; and yet for their so doynge I shall praye to God finally to sende them the blysse of Heven. Amen.

Thus endeth the preface of sir Johan Bourchier, knight, lord Berners, deputie of Calais, translatour of this present cronycle: and hereafter foloweth the table with the chapters as they stande in the boke by order, etc.

SYR JOHN FROISSART

HERE AFTER FOLOWETH THE TABLE OF THIS PRESENT VOLUME

[THIRD AND FOURTH BOOKS]

PAGE

CAP. i. First, howe syr Johan Bourchyer, governour of Gaunt durynge the truse, had newe vitayled the towne of Gaunt; and howe a maner of people, called comporselles, dyde moche hurte in the countrey 13

ii. Howe the bridge of Taylbourcke was won by the Frenchemen; and howe the Englisshmen fortyfied themselfe agaynst the commyng of the Frenchmen; and howe the admyrall of Fraunce and his rout aryved at Edenborowe in Scotlande . 20

iii. Howe the Frenchemen founde a wylde countrey of Scotlande, and were yvell content with the admyrall: and howe he pacyfied them with fayre wordes; and howe Fraunces Atreman and his company had nerehande taken Ardenbourke in Flaunders . 24

iiii. Howe the lorde of saint Albyne and Enguerante Zendequyn saved Ardenbourke fro takynge; and howe the quene of Hungery sent ambassadours into Fraunce, to marry therle of Valoyse to her eldest doughter 28

v. Howe the duchesse of Brabant wrote to duke Frederyke of Bavyere of the maryage of the yonge Frenche kyng with her nese Isabell of Bavyer; and howe the duke and the lady came to Quesnoy 31

vi. Howe Fraunces Atreman toke the towne of Dan; and howe the Frenche kynge wedded the lady Isabell of Bavyere, and after wente and layde siege to Dan 36

vii. Howe dyvers burgesses of Sluse were beheeded; and howe Sluse was chaunged for the lande of Bethune; and howe the siege of Dan contynewed longe 39

viii. Howe the Gauntoyse fledde out of Dan by nyght; and howe the Frenchemen toke the towne and distroyed it; and also howe the kynge dystroyed the countrey of the foure craftes . 42

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

ix. Howe the Frenche kynge departed oute of Flaunders, and gave leave to his men to departe; and howe he came to Parys to treate with the ambassadours of Hungry; and howe the marques of Blanqueforte toke by strenght to his wyfe the same lady, enherytour of Hungry 44

x. Howe the duke of Burbone toke Bertuell in Poictou; and also of the great assemble that the kynge of Scottes made to entre into Englande 47

xi. Howe the Frenchemen and Scottes wan the castell of Varley, and dystroyed dyvers other townes in Northumberlande; and howe they withdrewe agayne into Scotlande, whan they knewe that the kynge of Englande was commynge on them with a great puyssaunce 50

xii. Howe sir Johan Hollande slewe syr Rycharde Stafforde: and howe the erle of Stafforde came to the kynge to demaunde justyce 52

xiii. Howe the kynge of Englande caused to be dystroyed the churche of Mewreus in Scotlande; and howe the barones of Scotlande aunswered the admyrall of Fraunce, and devysed to leave Scotlande and to lette the Englysshemen alone . . 56

xiiii. Howe the kynge of Englande toke Edenborowe, the chiefe cytie of Scotlande; and howe the duke of Lancastre was in purpose to retourne into Wales to close in the Frenchemen and the Scottes; and what the Frenchemen and Scottes dyd in the sayd countrey 58

xv. Howe the erle of Oxenforde brake the pursute that the kynge of Englande had thought to have made into Wales after the Frenchmen and Scottes; and howe the kyng retourned the same way that he came; and howe the Frenchemen and Scottes determyned to retourne againe into Scotlande . 61

xvi. Howe the Frenche lordes were in great paryll in Scotlande, and coude nat finde the meanes to passe over the see; and how they shewed the erles Duglas and Morette the hardnesse that they founde in that countrey: and what answere they made to them 64

xvii. Howe the admyrall enfourmed the Frenche kynge and his counsayle of the state of Scotlande; and howe the duke of Burgoyne had great desyre to cause the Frenche kynge to make a journey into Englande 67

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

xviii. Howe by the grace of God two burgesses of Gaunt entred to treate with the duke of Burgoyne for peace; and howe they gave the charge therof to a knight of Flaunders; and what answere the duke gave unto them 69

xix. Howe these two foresayd burgesses assembled their frendes to acomplysshe their enterprise, and sent syr Johan Delle for the dukes letters of peace 73

xx. Howe syr Johan Delle came to Gaunt to the markette place, where as Roger, and Jaques, and the aldermen of the cytie were; and howe he delyvered them letters fro the duke of Burgoyne; and howe they of Gaunt sente to Turney; and of the confyrmation of the peace; and of the charters that were made therof 76

xxi. Howe sir Johan Froissart, auctour of this cronycle, departed out of Fraunce and went to the erle of Foyz, and the maner of his voyage 86

xxii. Howe the prince of Wales and the Princesse came to Tarbe; and of the request that the countesse of Armynake made to the Prince and Princesse; and howe the countrey of Gascoyne was newly agayne in warre 94

xxiii. Of the warres that the duke of Anjou made agaynst the Englysshemen; and howe he recovered the castell of Malvoysyn in Bygore, whiche was afterwarde gyven to the erle of Foize 109

xxiiii. Howe the garyson and castell of Lourde was caste downe and discomfyted by the great dylygence that the erle of Foiz made. 114

xxv. Howe the peace was made bytwene the duke of Berrey and the erle of Foyz; and of the begynnynge of the warre that was bytwene the erle of Foiz and the erle of Armynake . . 129

xxvi. Of the great vertuousnesse and larges that was in the erle of Foize; and the maner of the pytuous dethe of Gascone, the erles sonne 136

xxvii. Howe syr Peter of Byerne had a stronge dysease, and of the countesse of Bisquay, his wyfe 145

xxviii. Of the great solempnyte that the erle of Foiz made at the feest of saynte Nycholas, and the tale that the Bastot of Maulyon shewed to sir Johan Froissart 149

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

xxix. Howe dyvers capytaynes, Englysshe and other, were discomfyted before the towne of Sanxere by the Frenchemen . 154

xxx. How a squyer called Lymosyn tourned Frenche; and howe he caused Loyes Rambalt his companyon in armes to be taken 160

xxxi. Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foiz; and howe the towne of Yran rebelled for the great traveyle, dommage, and outrage that was done therto 165

xxxii. Howe the kynge of Castyle left the siege of Lyxbone; and howe they of saynt Yrayne excused themselfe . . 176

xxxiii. Of the marveylous batayle that was at Juberothe, bytwene the kinge of Castyle and kynge Johan of Portugale . 178

xxxiiii. Of the Spanyardes, howe they ordred themselfe and their batayle 189

xxxv. Howe the Frenche knyghtes and Gascons, suche as were taken prisoners at Juberoth by the Portugaloyes, were slayne by their maysters, and none escaped 195

xxxvi. Howe the kynge of Castyle and all his great batayle were discomfyted by the kyng of Portugale before a vyllage called Juberothe 197

xxxvii. Howe a spiryte called Orthone served the lorde of Corasse a longe tyme, and brought him ever tidynges from all partes of the worlde 202

xxxviii. Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretayne; and howe that dyvers Englyssh fortresses aboute the countrey of Tholous were recovered and tourned Frenche . . . 210

xxxix. Howe the castelles of Convall, of Bygore, and of Nesvyll, were taken, and all they within taken, slayne, and hanged 220

xl. Howe the kinge of Cypres was slayne and murthered in his bedde by his owne brother, by exortacyon and corruptyon of the infydeles for the bountye and hardynesse that was in hym 226

xli. Howe the kynge of Armony was examyned, and howe lx. M. Turkes were slayne and distroyed in the realme of Hungry 232

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

xlii. Howe pope Urbane and pope Clement were at gret discorde togyder; and howe the Cristen kynges were in varyaunce for their lectyons; and of the warres bytwene them . . 238

xliii. Howe they of Portugale sent out messangers into Englande to shewe tydynges of their countrey to the kynge of Englande, and to the great lordes there 248

xliiii. Howe Laurens Fongase, ambassadour fro the kynge of Portugale into Englande, shewed to the duke of Lancastre the maner of the discorde that was bytwene the realmes of Castyle and Portyngale 263

xlv. Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth bytwene the kynges of Castyle and Portyngale 273

xlvi. Howe the ambassadours of Portyngale had aunswere of the kynge of Englande and great gyftes; and howe they tooke their leave and went into their countreys . . . 284

xlvii. Howe the duke of Lancastre assayled the lordes, knightes, and squyers, that were in the bastydes before Brest in Bretayne, and howe they defended themselfe 292

xlviii. Howe the duke of Lancastre and his hoost whane they had sojourned a moneth at Colongne, than they departed and rode towarde saynt James in Galyce 298

xlix. Of the great apparell and provyson that generally was made in the realme of Fraunce by the kynge there, and by his counsayle, for a journey to be made into Englande; and also of the deth of Fraunces Atreman . . . 305

l. Howe the kyng of Portyngale wrote amyably to the duke of Lancastre, whan he knewe that he was arryved at saynt James in Galyce; and of the socours that the kynge of Castyle sent for into Fraunce; and howe the towne of Ruelles in Galyce was taken by Englysshemen . . 316

li. Howe the duke of Lancastres marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vieclope in Galyce, whiche yelded by composycion; and of the ambassadours that the duke sent to the kynge of Portyngale 321

lii. Howe they of Bayon yelded theym to the duke of Lancastre; and howe the marshall of his hoost entred into the towne and toke possessyon therof 341

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

liii. Howe the duke of Lancastre and the duchesse helde them at saynte James in Galyce; and of the comforte that the Frenche knyghtes gave to the kynge of Castyle . . 345

liiii. Of the great apparell of shyppes and galeys that the Frenchemen made on the see to passe into Englande . . . 347

lv. Howe the Frenche kinge and his uncles arryved at Sluse in Flaunders 349

lvi. Howe the Frenche kynge taryed at Sluse with his great hoost, to the entent to entre into Englande 350

lvii. Howe syr Symon Burley wolde have had by his counsayle saynt Thomas of Caunterburyes shryne removed to the castell of Dover, wherby he atchyved great hate . . 351

lviii. Howe the kynge of Armonye passed into Englande, in truste to fynde some meanes of peace or good appoyntment bytwene the kynge of Englande and the Frenche kyng . 354

lix. Howe the kinge of Armony retourned out of Englande, and of the aunswere that was made to hym . . . 356

lx. Howe the duke of Berrey departed fro Parys to come to Sluse; and howe the constable of Fraunce toke the see, and of the wynde that was contrary to hym 358

lxi. Howe the voyage into Englande was broken by reason of the wyndes and of wynter, and by counsayle of the duke of Berrey 361

lxii. Howe kynge Charles of Fraunce and the Frenche, lordes returned yvell content fro Sluse and out of Flaunders, whereas their provysyons were made to have gone into Englande; and of the feest that was made at London . 362

lxiii. Howe a squier called Jaques le Grise was acused in the parlyament howse at Parys before all the lordes there present, by a knyght called Johan of Carongne, and what judgement was gyven upon them; and howe they justed at uttraunce in Paris in a place called saynt Katheryne, behynde the Temple; and howe Jaques le Grise was confounded 364

lxiiii. Howe the kyng of Aragon dyed; and howe the archebysshoppe of Burdeaux was set in prisone at Barcelona . 370

lxv. How a batayle of armes was done in Burdeaux before the seneschall there and dyvers other 378

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

lxvi. Howe Johan of Bretaygne, sonne to syr Charles of Bloyes, was delyvered out of prison by the meanes of syr Olyver of Clysson, constable of Fraunce 382

lxvii. Howe the duke of Burbone was chosen to go into Castyle and dyvers other; and howe syr Johan Bucke admyrall of Flaunders was taken prisoner by the Englysshmen . 389

lxviii. Howe the Englysshemen aryved and brent dyvers villages . 393

lxix. Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall toke the towne of Rybadave, whiche was strongly kept . . . 395

lxx. Howe the duke of Lancastre sent for the admyrall and marshall and his other offycers to come to the weddynge of his doughter and the kynge of Portyngale . . . 403

lxxi. Howe the duke of Lancastre and his men rode towardes the cytie of Besances; and howe the towne made composycion with them 406

lxxii. Howe the duchesse and her doughter went to se the kyng of Portyngale and the quene; and howe the towne of Besances submytted them under the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre 409

lxxiii. Howe they of Besances that had ben sente to the kynge of Castyle came home to their towne after it was rendred up to the duke of Lancastre 412

lxxiiii. Howe syr Johan Hollande and syr Raynolde de Roy fought togyder in lystes before the duke of Lancastre in the towne of Besances 419

lxxv. Howe the kynge of Portyngale and the duke of Lancastre determyned to entre into the realme of Castyle . . 424

lxxvi. Howe syr Wylliam of Lygnac and sir Gaultyer of Passac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Castyle . . . 425

lxxvii. Howe a great myschiefe fell in Englande bytwene the gentylmen and Commons for accompte of suche money as had been reysed of the Commons 434

lxxviii. Of the great dyscordes that were in Englande after the breakynge up of the Frenche armye; and how the governours about the kynge were constrayned by the Commons of the good townes to make acomptes of such money as was come into their handes the season that they ruled . 437

THE TABLE

CAP. PAGE

lxxix. Howe the constable of Fraunce and dyvers other lordes and knyghtes of the realme apparelled great provysions to go into Englande to wyn townes and castels . . . 440

lxxx. Howe the duke of Bretayne sent for all his lordes and knyghtes to come to counsayle unto Wannes, and after counsayle he desyred the constable to go and se his castell of Ermyne; and howe he toke hym there prisoner, and the lorde of Beaumanoyre with hym 446

lxxxi. Howe the constable of Fraunce was delyvered at the request of the lorde de la Vale, payenge a certayne raunsome; and howe the constable delyvered to the duke thre castelles and a towne, and payed a hundred thousande frankes . . 453

lxxxii. Howe writinges were made at the duke of Bretayns devyse for the constable to rendre his towne and castelles to the duke and to his heyres for ever; and how they were delyvered to the duke 456

lxxxiii. Howe tydynges came to the Frenche kynge fro the partyes of Almayne, the whiche were to hym ryght displeasaunt, and unto his uncles 460

lxxxiiii. Howe the duke of Lancasters men assayled the towne of Aurence, and toke it; for it gave up as other dyd . . 461

lxxxv. Howe the kynge of Portyngale brente a towne whan he was departed for Porte, and besieged two castels . . 469

lxxxvi. Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his host came before Feroule and assauted it, and it was won and brought under the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre . . . 472

THE CRONYCLE OF FROISSART

CAPITULO PRIMO

Howe sir Johan Bourchier, governour of Gaunt during the truse, had newe vitayled the towne of Gaunt. And howe a maner of people called comporsels dyde moche hurte in the countre.

SIR JOHN BOURCHIER who had the governyng of Gaunt under kynge Rycharde of Englande, and the capiteyns of the commontie of the towne, as Peter de Boyes, Frances Atreman,[1] and Peter le Myttre,[2] they provyded surely for the warre, and duryng the truse they had greatly vitayled and refresshed the towne with all provision parteyning to the warre, and also the castell of Gauvre, and other places under their rule.

[1] *Ackerman.*
[2] *de Winterc.*

In the same season there was a company of rutters gadered togyder in the wode of Respayle, and there they had fortifyed a house, so that it coude nat lightly be wonne. They were people chased out of Alos, of Grantmount, and out of other places in Flaunders, and had lost all that ever they had, and wyst nat how to lyve, but by robbyng and pillyng wheresoever they coude gete it: so that there was as than no spekynge but of these pygges of Respayle. This woode is bytwene Regnays and Grauntmount, Anghien and Lysen: they dyde moche hurt in the lordship of Athe, and in the lande of Floberge, and of Lyssnes, and in the lande of Danghien. And these pyllers were borne out by them of Gaunt, for under the coloure of them they dyde moche hurt as in robbynge and sleynge; they wolde go into Heynalte and take men and women in their beddes, and leade them

CAP. I

Howe sir Johan Bourchier had newe vitayled the towne of Gaunt.

to their forteresse, and raunsome them at their pleasure: they made warre to every man. The capitayne of Athe, who was called Baudrius de la Mocte,[1] layde often tymes awayte for them, but he coude never trappe them, they knewe so many shyftes. They were so feared in the fronters of Heynalte and Brabant that none durst go that waye into the countre.

[1] *Bauduins de la Motte.*

The duke of Burgoyne on the other parte, for the warr that he loked for, he garnysshed and provided for all his townes in Flanders. There was capitayne of Bruges, the lorde of Guystelles, and of Courtrey, sir Johan Jeumount, and sir Willyam of Namure.[2] As than sir Willyam[3] of Guystels was lorde of Dan, and of Courtray, sir Johan Jeumount, and sir Peter of Neyper.[4] In lykewise in all the townes on the fronter of Fraunce, there were men of warre set by the duke of Burgoyne. In the towne of Ardenbourcke, there was in garyson sir Guy of Pontaillyer, marshall of Burgoyn, sir Ryflarte of Flaunders, sir Johan of Jeumont, sir Henry of Coynge,[5] the lorde of Montigny in Ostrevant, the lorde of Longuevall, sir Johan Barnet,[6] sir Peter Baylleull, Philpot Gany,[7] Raoleyn de la Foley, and dyvers other. These men of armes were two hundred; and so they toke advyse toguyder, and were in wyll to ryde into the Foure Craftes, and distroy that countre, for moche vitayle came fro thens into Gaunt. And so on a day they departed and toke that way. And the same day that the Frenchemen were rydden forthe, there was rydden forthe out of Gaunt a two thousande men mete for the warre, and Fraunces Atreman was their capitayne: and so sodainly they mette with the Frenchmen in a village; and whan eche of them knewe other, they sawe well they shulde have batayle. Than the Frenchmen valiantly set fote to the erthe, and approched their ennemyes, and the Gauntoyse in lykewise set on them; there they beganne to shote and to fight eche with other; they were on suche a place that the Gauntoyse coude nat passe at their advauntage; there was a sore batayle, and many feates of armes done on bothe partes, and dyvers caste to the grounde. Sir Riflart of Flaunders was ther a good knight, and dyd valiantly. The knightes and squyers fought valiantly with the Gauntoyse,

[2] *et de l'Escluse messires Guillaumes de Namur.*

[3] *Gui.*

[4] *et de Yppre messires Pières de le Sieppe.*

[5] *d'Antoing.*

[6] *Berlette.*

[7] *Grancy.*

and so it behoved them to do, for there was no raunsome. But finally the Gauntoyse were of suche nombre that they obteyned the place, and the Frenchmen were constrayned to lepe on their horses, or els they had been all lost, for the Gauntoyse surmounted them. And there was slayne sir John Varlet,[1] sir Peter of Bailleule, Bell Forrier,[2] Philyppe of Gancy,[3] Raolen de la Foley, and dyvers other, whiche was great domage; and the other were fayne to flye, and to entre into Ardenbourcke, or els they had ben deed without recoverie. And after this adventure, the vycount of Meaulx was sent in garyson to Ardenbourcke, with a certayne nombre of men of armes, and they newly repayred the towne, and he had with hym a hundred speares of good men of armes. And as than sir Johan of Jeumont was great baylye of Flaunders, and so he had ben two yere before: he was greatly douted in all the countre of Flaunders, bycause of his valyantnesse. And whan he might get any of the Gauntoyse, there went no raunsome for them, for he outher putte them to dethe, or els cutte of their handes and fete, or putte oute their eyen, and sende them home, to gyve ensample to the other Gauntoyse; he was so renoumed in Flaunders to do justyce without pytie in correctyng the Gauntoyse, that there was no spekyng in all Flaunders but of hym.

CAP. I

Howe sir Johan Bourchier had newe vitayled the towne of Gaunt.

1 *Berlette.*

2 *Pierre de Bailleul et de Belle-Fourière.*

3 *Grancy.*

Thus in every realme the worlde was in trouble, as well bitwene Fraunce and Englande, as Castell and Portyngale, for ther the warre was newly renewed. And the lady of Anjowe, who wrote herselfe quene of Naples and of Hierusalem, was come to Avygnon to the Pope, and there kepte her house, and her son Loyes with her, who was called kynge of Cecyle, the whiche his father hadde conquered. The quenes entencyon was to make warre in Provence, without they of that countre wolde take her for their lady, and become under her obeysaunce; and sir Bernarde de la Salle was entred into Provence, and made warre there in her quarell. The same season the lorde of Coucy was also at Avygnon, and had layen a xv. wekes in his bedde, of a hurte that he hadde on his legge with rennyng of a horse. And whan he was hole, than he oftentymes dyde vyset the quene and reconforted her, the whiche he coulde do right well.

CAP. I

Howe sir Johan Bourchier had newe vitayled the towne of Gaunt.

The quene taryed there for to abyde for the duke of Berrey, who was also comynge to Avignon to speke with the Pope, and to ayde his suster the quene. The Frenche kyng and his uncles hadde sente into Provence sir Loyes of Sanxere, marshall of Fraunce, with fyve hundred men of armes, to warre in that countre, without they wolde come to obeysaunce under the quene. Some submytted themselfe, but nat all; howebeit, the cytie of Marcell, and the grettest parte of the countre yelded them to the quene, but the cytie of Ayes, in Provence, and Tarraston, and dyvers knyghtes of the countre, wolde nat yelde them to the quene, sayeng, howe she had no ryght to demaunde the countie of Provence tyll she were peasably receyved for lady, and her sonne as kynge, of Pulle,[1] and Calabre, in Naples, and Cecile; and whan she hath possession of these, than Provence shall obeye her, as reason requyreth. In those marchesse there made warre for the erle sir Charles de la Paixe, the erle Conversaunt, and sir Johan of Luzenbourge, his sonne. And with the quene at Avignon, as chefe of her counsayle, was sir Johan of Baylleule.

[1] *Apulia.*

In the same season there fell in Lombardye a marveylous insydence, which was moche spoken of throughe out all the worlde, and that was of the erle of Vertus, called sir Galeas, and of his brother sir Barnabo, the grettest in all Lombardy. They had raygned longe and governed all Lombardy lyke two bretherne: the one of them ruled nyne cyties, and the other tenne, and the cyte of Millayne was governed one yer by the one, and thother yere by the other. Whan sir Galeas dyed, he lefte behynde hym a sonne, who was than erle of Vertus, and named like his father sir Galeas. But than swaged the love bitwene him and sir Barnabo, his uncle, for than sir Galeas doughted hym of sir Barnabo, his uncle, leest that he wolde take away his landes fro him, lyke as he dyde fro his father. For his uncle of olde tyme toke awaye the lande fro their brother sir Mauffe,[2] and caused him to dye. So thus therle of Vertus douted hym greatly of his uncle; howebeit, he wrought subtelly to bringe hymselfe in suretie, I shall shewe you howe. Sir Barnabo had in usage, that all suche landes as he had rule of, he raunsomed them so grevously, and wolde taxe the men two or thre tymes in a

[2] *Matteo.*

yere, to paye the halfe or thirde parte of their goodes, and none durst saye agaynst hym for feare. And sir Galeas, erle of Vertus, dyde otherwyse, for the entent to gete love; he toke none ayde of his men, but lyved all onely by his revenewes, and that rule he kept a fyve yere after the dethe of his father, so that he had the love of all Lombardy, and every man said they wolde be gladde to lyve under hym, and every man spake yvell of sir Barnabo prively as they durst, bycause he toke so excessyvely of them. So finally the erle of Vertus thought to execute his entent, as he that doughted greatly his uncle, and as it was sayde he sawe some lykelyhode. On a day he sente secretely for suche as he trusted best, and to some he shewed his entent, but nat to all, for feare that his purpose shulde be knowen. CAP. I

Howe sir Johan Bourchier had newe vitayled the towne of Gaunt.

And so it fortuned that sir Barnabo on a daye rode forthe fro one castell to another to sporte hym. The erle of Vertus his nephewe knewe therof, and layde for hym thre busshementes, to the entent that his uncle shulde nat scape; for he must nedes at leest passe by one of them; the erle commaunded to take hym but nat to slee him, without he made great defence. So as sir Barnabo roode forthe and thought none yvell, nor was in no feare of his nephewe, so he fell in the daunger of one of the busshmentes, the whiche opyned and approched hym with their speares couched in the rest. Sir Barnabo had with hym a squyer of Almaygne, who came to hym and sayd, Sir, save yourselfe, for yonder company maketh but yvell countenaunce agaynst you, they are parteyning to youre nephewe sir Galeas. Sir Barnabo aunswered, I knowe nat howe to save myselfe, if they owe me any yvell wyll, but I have done no trespasse to my nephue, wherby that I ought to flye awaye. So alwayes they of the busshement drewe nerer and nerer streight upon him. There was a knight of Almaygne with sir Barnabo, and whan he sawe this company approche towarde his maister, he had sir Barnabos swerde in his hande and drewe it oute of the sheth, and tooke it his maister, and sayd, Sir, defende yourselfe. And than the knight drewe out his owne swerde lyke a valyant man to stande at his defence. Howbeit, all aveyled hym nothyng, for incontynent he was envyroned, and his mayster also, with their ennemyes; and the sayd knight was

CAP. I

Howe sir Johan Bourchier had newe vitayled the towne of Gaunt.

ther slayne, bycause he putte hymselfe to defence, wherof sir Galeas was afterwarde ryght sore displeased. So sir Barnabo was there taken, for he made no defence, nor none of his men, and so he was brought to a castell wher his nephue was, who was gladde of his comynge. The same day sir Barnabos wyfe and chyldren were taken, who were to mary, and they were kepte in Myllayne in prison. Than sir Galeas toke all the seignories, townes, and castels, that parteyned to sir Barnabo in all Lombardy to his possessyon, and his uncle dyed, I can nat saye howe. I thynke he was lette blode in the necke, accordynge to the blode lettyng in Lombardy, whan they wyll avaunce a mannes ende. Anone these tidynges sprang abrode; some were glad therof, and some were sorie; for this sir Barnabo hadde done in his tyme many cruell and horryble dedes, and pytuous justyce withoute reason, so that but fewe people complayned his trouble, but sayde, he hadde well deserved it. Thus ended sir Barnabo, who had in his dayes raygned puissauntly in Lombardy.

Nowe lette us retourne to the duke of Burbons, and the erle of Marchesse army, and what they dyde in Poictou, and in Lymosyn.

They departed fro Moleyns,[1] in Burbonoyse, and so rode forthe with great revell, and the duke had in his company his nephewe, Johan of Harcourte. The specyall nombre of his army came out of Berry, Auvergne, Poictou, Rouergue, Xaynton, and Lymosyn, and they met togider at Nyorte, a xii. leages fro Poicters. In this meane season sir Wyllyam of Lynacke, a right valyant knyght, seneschall of Xaynton, who was as than governoure of Myllayne,[2] in those marchesse, and so he came into Angoulinoys, with a certayne nombre of men of armes, a two hundred. He rested before the castell of the Egle,[3] in the whiche were Englisshemen, and all the wynter and somer past before had greatly domaged the countre. Than this sir Wyllyam lyghted afote, and so dyd all his company, and valyantly assayled the castell; it was a sore assaute and well contynued, for they within defended themselfe for feare of their lyves. Sir Wylliam hymselfe that day dyde right nobly, and gave ensample howe his men shulde assayle withoute any sparynge. This assaut was so well contynued, that the castell was taken byforce; the

[1] *Moulins.*

[2] *Millau.*

[3] *Aigre.*

Frenchemen entred in by ladders, and all that were within slayne and taken. Thus this sir Wylliam of Lygnac dyde the first enterprise in that season, abydinge for the duke of Burbone and his route.

Howe sir Johan Bourchier had newe vitayled the towne of Gaunt.

Whan the duke of Burbone was come to Nyorte, and his company, there he founde a great nombre of men of warre abydinge for hym. And there was redy his cosyn, the erle of Marche, with a great nombre, and also the vycount of Tonnere,[1] and sir Henry[2] of Thouars seneschall of Lymosyn, the lorde of Pons, the lorde of Parteney, the lorde of Thouars,[3] the lorde of Puyssaunce,[4] and dyvers other barons of Poytou, and of Xaynton. And than sir William of Lignacke came to the duke, who had newly wonne the castell of the Egle, wherfore the duke gave hym great thankes. Whan all these men of warre were assembled toguyder, they were a sevyn hundred speares, besyde the Genevoys, and other varlettes: they were in nombre two thousande fightynge men. Thane they toke advyse whyder they shulde go, outher to Vertuell, or to Taylbourc, or to Mountlewe. And all thynges consydered, they determyned to go to Mountlewe, bycause it was a castell standyng on the laundes of Burdeaux: they thought if they might get that castell, all other shulde be the more easyer to wynne; and, also, than shulde no man come out of Burdeaux without their knowledge. So they rode thyderwarde and passed Angolesme, and so came before Mountlewe, and ther layd their siege. The chefe leaders of all the dukes hoost was sir James Pounsarte, and Johan Bonne Launce. Incontynent they made redy to assayle the castell, and so envyroned the castell aboute, and gave assaute with great courage, and they within defended themselfe valiantly. Surely there was an harde assaute and well contynued, and many a proper dede of armes done, for the Frenchmen dilygently mounted up on their ladders, and fought with daggers hande to hande on the walles: so moche dyde the Frenchemen, that by pure assaute they wan the castell, and they within slayne, there were but a fewe that were saved. Whan the Frenchemen had possession of Mountlewe, they newlye furnysshed it with men of warre and other provisyon, and than they toke the waye to Taylbourcke, of the whiche forteresse Dynandon of Perat[5] was capitayne, a proper

[1] *Thouars.*
[2] *Aimeri.*
[3] *Thors.*
[4] *Pouzauges.*
[5] *Parade.*

CAP. I

Howe sir Johan Bourchier had newe vitayled the towne of Gaunt.

man of armes; he made but lytell counte of the Frenchmen. And whyle the duke laye at siege before this castell, his company wanne two lytell fortresses, whiche had sore harryed the fronters of Poictou and Lymosyn, by reason of the Englysshmen that were in them; these two fortresses were called Troucet, and Archac. And all that were within were slayne, and the castelles delyvered to them of the countre; and they dyde beate them downe to the grounde.

CAP. II

Howe the bridge of Taylbourcke was wonne by the Frenchemen, and howe the Englysshemen fortifyed themselfe against the comyng of the Frenchemen. And howe the admyrall of Fraunce and his rout arryved at Edenborowe, in Scotlande.

THUS the siege was layd before Tailbourcke by four bastedes. There was in Tailbourcke a bridge on the ryver of Charent, and the Englysshemen and Gascoyns had well fortifyed it, so that all the season before ther coude no shyppe passe to Rochell, nor into Xaynton, without daunger or by truage. Than the Frenche lordes advysed to wynne the bridge to have the lesse to do, and to lye the more surer in their bastydes; they caused to come to Rochell shippes by the ryver of Charent, and in theym certayne Genevoys and crosbowes, and made them to scrymysshe with them of the bridge. There was a sore assaute, for the Englysshemen and Gascons had ryght well fortifyed the bridge, and valyantly dyde defende themselfe: so they were assayled by lande and by ryver.

Johan the sonne of the erle of Harcourt was there made knight and reysed his baner; the duke of Burbone his uncle made him knight. This assaut was well continued, and many a feate of armes ther done; the Genevoys and crosbowes that were in the shyppes, shotte so rudely and so hole toguyder at them on the bridge that none of them durste scantely shewe any defence. What shulde I make longe tale; by force of assaut the bridge on the ryver was wonne,

CAP. II

Howe the bridge of Taylbourcke was wonne by the Frenchemen.

and all that were founde theron slayne and drowned, none scaped. Thus the Frenchemen had the bridge of Taylbourc, their siege was the easyer. It was but thre leages fro saynt Johns Dangle, and two leages fro Xauntes, in the best countre of the worlde.

Of the losse of Tayllebourke, they within, Dynandon, and other, were sore dismayed, as they had good cause, for they had lost therby the passage of the ryver. Howebeit, yet they wolde nat yelde them, they thought themselfe in a stronge place, and trusted on some rescue fro Burdeaux. For it was shewed in all those fronters and Englysshe forteresses, that the duke of Lancastre, or elles the erle of Buckyngham, with two thousande men of armes and four thousande archers, shulde come to Burdeaux to fyght with the Frenchemen, and to reyse all their siege. Of this they greatly trusted; but it fortuned otherwyse, as I shall shewe you. It was ordayned in Englande, that the duke of Lancastre and sir Johan Hollande, brother to the kynge, sir Thomas Percy, sir Thomas Trivet, the lorde Fitzwater, sir Wylliam Wyndesore, sir John Fitzwaren, and other barons, knightes, and squyers, with a thousande speares and thre thousande archers, shulde have gone to Burdeaux, to have ben there all the somer, and to have refresshed Mortayne, Boutvyll, and other fortresses in Gascoyne and Languedocke, and to fight with the Frenchemen if they founde them in the countrey; and after that they had taryed there a season, than to have gone fro thens into Castell, to Bayon, and to Navarre; for they were in treatie with the kyng of Naver. This was ymagined in Englande, but all tourned to nought; for whan they knewe the certaynte that the admyrall of Fraunce, with a thousande speares of chosen knightes and squyers, were come into Scotlande, than they chaunged their purpose, and durst sende none of their men oute of the realme, for they doughted greatly the dedes of the Frenchemen and Scottes joyned toguyder. Also the same tyme there ranne a voyce through all Englande, howe they shulde be the same somer assayled with the Frenchmen in thre parties; one by Bretaygne, for the duke there was become Frenche: and another by Normandye, for the whiche, as it was sayd, the constable of France made his provisyon at

CAP. II

Howe the bridge of Taylbourcke was wonne by the Frenchemen.

Harflewe and Depe, and so alonge the see syde to saynt Valeries and to Crotoy; and the thirde by the Scottes; so that for dought of this they wolde suffre no knightes nor squyers to go out of Englande, but made provisyon to defende their havyns and portes of the see. The same season the erle of Arundell, Richarde, was admyrall of the see, and was on the see with a thre or foure score great shyppes, furnysshed with men of armes and archers; and he hadde small shippes that ranne in and oute, and viewed the boundes of the yles of Normandy, to knowe tidynges.

Nowe lette us leave to speke of the duke of Burbone, and of the siege of Taylleboureke, where as he laye a nyne wekes, and let us shewe howe the admyrall of Fraunce toke lande in the realme of Scotlande, and what chere they had made to them at their firste lodgynge.

The Frenche army that went into Scotlande had wynde at wyll; it was in the monethe of Maye, whan the waters be peaseable and meke, and the ayre softe and swete. First they costed Flanders, Holande, Zelande, and Frise, and at last aproched to the sight of Scotlande. But are they aryved, ther fell an harde adventure to a yonge knyght of Fraunce, a proper man of armes, called sir Aubert Dangyers. The knyght was yong and of haute courage, and to shewe his strength and lyghtnesse of body, he lepte up clene armed on the walle of the shyppe, and in the lightynge his fete slypped, and so fell over the borde into the see, so that he coulde nat be holpen, for incontynent he sanke downe, bycause of the weight of his harnes, and also the ship sayled ever forthe. Of this knightes adventure all the barownes and knyghtes were sore dyspleased, but there was no remedy. And so longe they sayled, that they arryved at Edenborowe, the chiefe towne in Scotlande, and wher as the kyng in tyme of peace moost commenly laye. And as soone as the erle Duglas and the erle Morette[1] knewe of their comynge, they wente to the havyn and mette with them, and receyved them swetely, sayeng howe they were right welcome into that countrey. And the barons of Scotlande knewe ryght well sir Geffray de Charney, for he had been the somer before two monethes in their company: sir Geffray acquaynted them with the admyrall, and the other knyghtes of Fraunce.

[1] *Moray*

CAP. II

As at that tyme the kynge of Scottes was nat there, for he was in the wylde Scottysshe; but it was shewed these knyghtes, howe the kyng wolde be there shortly; wherwith they were well content, and so were lodged there about in the vyllages. For Edenborough, thoughe the kynge kepte there his chefe resydence, and that it is Parys in Scotlande, yet it is nat lyke Tourney or Valencennes, for in all the towne there is nat foure thousande houses; therfore it behoved these lordes and knyghtes to be lodged about in vyllages, as at Donfermelyne, Cassell, Donbare, Alvest,[1] and suche other. Anone tidynges sprange about in Scotlande, that a great nombre of men of armes of Fraunce were come into their countre: some therat dyde murmure and grudge, and sayde, Who the Devyll hath sent for theym? What do they here? Cannat we maynteyne our warre with Englande well ynoughe withoute their helpe? We shall do no good as longe as they be with us. Let it be shewed unto them, that they may retourne agayne, and that we be stronge ynough in Scotlande to maynteyne our warre without theym; and therfore we wyll none of their company. They understande nat us nor we them; therfore we cannat speke toguyder: they wyll anone ryffle and eate up all that ever we have in this countrey: they shall doo us more dispytes and domages than thoughe the Englysshemen shulde fyght with us; for thoughe the Englysshemen brinne our houses, we care lytell therfore; we shall make them agayne chepe ynough; we are but thre dayes to make them agayne, if we maye geate foure or fyve stakes, and bowes to cover them.

Howe the bridge of Taylbourcke was wonne by the Frenchemen.

[1] *Dalkeith.*

CAP. III

Howe the Frenchemen founde a wylde countrey of Scotlande, and were yvell content with thadmyrall, and howe he pacifyed them with fayre wordes; and howe Fraunces Atreman and his company had nere hande taken Ardenbourcke in Flaunders.

THUS the Scottes sayde in Scotlande, at the comynge of the Frenchmen thyder, for they dyde sette nothynge by them, but hated them in their courage and diffamed theym in their language as moche as they myght, lyke rude people without honoure, as they be. All thynges consydered, it was to great an armye of so many noblemen to come into Scotlande, and knewe no reason why; a twentie or thirttie knyghtes of Fraunce had been better than all that nombre of fyve hundred or a thousande; and the cause why is this.

In Scotlande ye shall fynde no man lightlye of honoure nor gentylnesse; they be lyke wylde and savage people; they wyll be with no man acquaynted, and are greatly envyous with the honoure or profyte of any other man, and they dought ever to lese that they have, for it is a poore countre. And whan the Englysshemen maketh any roode or voyage into the countre, as they have done often before this tyme, if they thynke to lyve, they muste cause their provysion and vitayle to folowe theym at their backe, for they shall fynde nothyng in that countrey but with moche payne; nor they shall fynde none yron to showe their horses, nor leddar to make harnesse, sadelles, or bridelles. For all suche thynges cometh to them redy made oute of Flaunders; and whan that provisyon fayleth, there is none to gette in the countrey. Whan the barownes and knightes of Fraunce who were wonte to fynde fayre hostryes, halles hanged, and goodly castelles, and softe beddes to reste in, sawe themselfe in that necessite, they began to smyle, and said to the admyrall, Sir, what pleasure hath brought us hyder?

CAP. III

Howe the Frenchemen founde a wylde countrey of Scotlande.

We never knewe what povertie ment tyll nowe. We fynde nowe the olde sayenge of our fathers and mothers true, whane they wolde saye, Go your waye, and ye lyve long, ye shall fynde harde and poore beddes; whiche nowe we fynde. Therfore lette us go oure voyage that we be come for; lette us ryde into Englande; the longe taryenge here in Scotlande is to us nother honourable nor profytable. The admyrall apeased them as well as he myght, and sayde, Sirs, it behoveth us to suffre a lytell, and to speke fayre, sithe we be in this daunger; we have a great longe waye yet to passe, and by Englande we can nat retourne; therfore lette us take in gree that we fynde; we can nat be alwayes at Parys or Dygeon, at Beautie or at Chalons: it behoveth them that wyll lyve in this worlde, thynkynge to have honoure, to suffre somtyme as well povertie as welth.

Thus sir Johan of Vien, admyrall of Fraunce, apeased his companyons with these wordes, and suche other, whiche I can nat all reherce. They acquaynted them as moche as they might with the barownes of Scotlande, but they were visyted by them but very lytell; for as I have sayde before, there is in them lytell honour, and of all people yvell to be acquaynted withall. The moost company that the Frenchemen had, was the erle Duglas and the erle Morette: these two lordes dyde theym more solace than all the resydue of Scotlande. Yet there was another thyng that was right harde to the Frenchmen; for whan they were in Scotlande, and wolde ryde, they founde horses to dere, for that that was nat worthe tenne florens they coude nat bye under threscore or a hundred, and yet with moche payne to gette any for money; and yet whan they had any horses, than hadde they nother harnesse, sadell, nor bridell, without they had brought it with them out of Flaunders. In this trouble and daunger were the Frenchemen; yea, and moreover, whane their varlettes went forthe a forragynge, and hadde charged their horses with suche as they coulde gette, in their retournynge home the Scottes themselfe laye in wayte for theym, and all that they had taken from them, and they well beten and some slayne; so that there was none that durste go a foragynge for feare to be slayne. For in a moneth the

CAP. III
Howe the Frenchemen founde a wylde countrey of Scotlande.

Frenchemen loste of their varlettes mo than a hundred; for if they went forthe thre or foure toguyder, they never returned agayne. Thus the Frenchemen were handeled; and besyde that, the kynge of Scottes was desyred to come forthe, and so were the other lordes, knightes, and squyers of the realme. But they aunswered and sayd, howe they wolde make no warre into Englande as at that tyme; and that they sayd, to thentent that the Frenchemen shulde paye well for their comyng. For or the kyng wolde come out of the wylde Scottysshe to Edenboroughe, he demaunded to have a great somme of money for hym and for his people. And the admyrall of Fraunce was fayne to promyse and to seale, that the kynge shulde have a certayne somme of money or he and his company avoyded the realme; if he had nat done thus, he shulde have hadde none ayde of the Scottes: he was fayne to make that marchaundise or elles a worse; and yet, whan he had made the best accorde and apoyntment that he coude make with theym, he hadde by them but lytell profyte nor helpe, as ye shall here further in the hystorie.

But nowe a lytell I wyll retourne and tell of the adventures of Flaunders and of the maryage of the yonge Frenche kyng, and howe Ardenbourcke hadde nere been taken by stelthe, where as the vycont of Meaulx and sir John of Jeumont laye in garyson.

After the disconfyture that sir Ryflarte of Flaunders had made in the lande of the Foure Craftes without Gaunt, than he came to Ardenbourcke, and thyder was sente in garyson sir Robert of Bethune, vycount of Meaulx, and there he founde sir Johan of Jumont and his company; and thyder was sente a xl. speares, knightes and squiers, suche as desyred to seke adventures. Whane the vycount was come thider, he entended to fortify and repayre the towne in all poyntes. Fraunces Atreman and they of Gaunte subtelly ymagined night and day howe they might anoye and do domage to their enemyes, as they shewed right well to their neighbours, as Andwarp, Teremonde, Ardenbourcke, Bruges, Danne, and Scluse. They ever ymagined howe to wynne any of them by crafte; and to say the trouth, they had suche company as were mete to execute suche dedes. So it fortuned,

CAP. III

Howe the Frenchemen founde a wylde countrey of Scotlande.

about the ende of Maye, Fraunces Atreman and a sevyn thousande with hym departed fro Gaunt, to thentent to wynne Ardenbourke by stelth, and all the knightes and squyers therin; and specially they desyred to have the capitayne, sir Johan Jumont, bycause he had done them many great domages, as in takyng and sleyng, and putting out of their eyen, and cuttyng of handes, fete, and eares of their men. So thus on a Wednisdaye, aboute the dawnynge of the daye, they came to Ardenbourcke, and had with them scalynge leddars redy: the vycount of Meaulx, sir Johan Jumount, sir Ryflarte of Flaunders, the lorde of Damert,[1] sir Tercelette of Montigny, and sir Parducas of Pount saint Marke, the lorde of Languevall, and sir Johan his sonne, sir Hewe Desnell, the lorde de Lalayne, sir Reynolde of Loumye, and dyvers other, lay slepyng in their beddes, on trust of the watche. Nowe beholde what adventure they were in. The watche that had watched all nyght was as than departed, and their reliefe nat come as than; the same season Fraunces Atreman and the Gauntoise with their ladders were redy come into the dikes, and so came to the walles and dressed up their ladders, and began to mount. The same season by adventure there was walkynge within the wall the lorde of saynt Albyne, and with hym a squyer of Picardy, named Enguerant Zendequyn, a Picarde, with a morespike. I thynke they had ben of the watche the same night, and was nat as than departed: to say the trouthe, and they had nat ben, Ardenbourcke had been taken, and all the knightes in their beddes.

[1] *Donmart.*

CAP. IIII

Howe the lorde of saynt Albyne and Enguerant Zendequyn saved Ardenbourke fro takyng; and how the quene of Hungry sente ambassadours into Fraunce, to mary therle of Voloyes to her eldest doughter.

WHAN sir Gousseaux of saynt Martyne[1] and Enguerant Zendequen sawe howe the Gauntoyse mounted up the walles by ladders, and they saw wher ther was one puttynge his legge over the wall, to have entred into the towne, they were than sore abasshed, but yet nat so moche but that they toke conforte to themselfe; for they sawe well if they fledde, the towne were lost without recovery; for they parceyved well that theyr entryng was bytwene the departyng of the watche and the comynge of the reliefe. Than Enguerant sayd to the morespyke, Steppe on forwarde; beholde yonder the Gauntoyse are entrynge; helpe to defende us, or elles the towne is loste. And so they thre went to the same place where as they sawe the Gauntoyse entrynge, and the Pycarde with the morespyke strake hym that was entrynge over the wall suche a stroke, that he bare hym clene fro the wall and ladder, and so fell downe into the dyke. And therwith the watche arose, and sawe howe there were in the dykes and there aboute a great batayle of the Gauntoyse; thane he sowned his trumpette, Treason, treason. Therwith the towne styrred, every man oute of their beddes, and harkened to the crye, and sawe howe the Gauntois wolde have stollen their towne. Than they armed them as fast as they might; howebeit, for all this the Gauntoyse dyde all their best to have entred into their towne; and the sayde thre persones valyantly defended the walles more than the space of halfe an hour agaynst all the comers, the whiche turned to their great prayse. Thane the other lordes and knightes came thyder in good array, as the vycount of Meaulx, with his baner before hym: sir Johan of Jeumont, his penon before hym: and sir Ryflarte of Flaunders, and other; and they

[1] *Goswin de Saint Aubin.*

founde the knight, the squyer, and the morespyke, fightynge and defendynge the walles: thane they cryed their cryes to the rescue. And whan Fraunces Atreman and the Gauntoyse parceyved the matter, and howe they hadde fayled of their ententes, they withdrewe themselfe fayre and easely, and reculed their people, and so departed and retourned into the rule of the Four Craftes. And so than they of the garyson of Ardenbourke toke more hede to the kepyng of the towne than they dyde before, and they honoured greatly among them the foresaid thre persones, for and they had nat been, the towne had ben loste and all their throtes cutte.

CAP. IIII
Howe the lorde of saynt Albyne and Enguerant Zendequyn saved Ardenbourke fro takyng.

Ye have herde here before howe the duke of Anjou, who called hymselfe kynge of Naples, of Cecyle, and of Hierusalem, made warre thre yeres, in Pule, Calabre, and in Naples, agaynst sir Charles de la Paix; and in the makynge of that warre he dyed, and in lykewise so dyde sir Charles de la Paix. Some sayd he was slayne in the realme of Hungry, by the consentment of the quene; for after the dethe of the kyng of Hungry, bycause this sir Charles was sonne to the kynges brother, therfore he maynteyned that the realme shulde fall to hym. For his uncle the kynge of Hungry, after his dethe, lefte behynde hym but doughters. So, therfore, the quene feared leest he wolde disheryte her doughters; and therfore, as it was sayd, she caused this sir Charles de la Paix to be slayne, of whose dethe ther was had great marveyle. And so therby the quene was sore enforsed, and of her yonge sonne the kyng beyng at Avignon, and so they made warr in Provence. The kynge of Hungry lyvenge, the barons and prelates of Hungry counsayled hym to gyve Margarete, his eldest doughter, whiche was likely to be a great enheritour, to Loyes of Fraunce, erle of Valoyes sonne, and brother to the Frenche kynge, bycause they thought he shulde than abyde among them in Hungry. And whan the kynge was deed, they sent ambassadours into Fraunce to the kynge and to his uncles, shewyng howe the quene of Hungry wolde have for her eldest doughter the erle of Valoyes. This request semed to the kynge and to his uncles, and to the barons of Fraunce, to be right noble and profitable, excepte one thynge; they thought therby that the erle of Valoyes shulde be very farre of fro his owne

CAP. IIII

Howe the lorde of saynt Albyne and Enguerant Zendequyn saved Ardenbourke fro takyng.

[1] *Maillezais.*

[2] *La Personne.*

nacion; howebeit, all thynges consydred, they thought it a noble and a right profitable thyng for the erle of Valoyes to be kyng of Hungry, the whiche is one of the grettest realmes in crystendome. So these ambassadours were gretly feested and nobly receyved, and to them gyven many great gyftes: and so agayne with them ther went to Hungry other ambassadours out of Fraunce, as the bysshop of Mayllerete[1] and sir John la Parson,[2] who by procuracyon generall, whan they were come into Hungry, he wedded in the name of the erle of Valoyes the lady Margarete, and thanne the bysshoppe retourned into Fraunce, and also sir Johan Parson, who had wedded the lady and lyen by her a bedde, curtesly, accordynge to the custome in suche matters requyred. And of this, whan he came into Fraunce, he shewed letters patentes and publyke instrumentes, so that they of Fraunce were well content. And so longe after the erle of Valoyes wrote hymselfe kyng of Hungry.

Also ye have herde how the duke of Burgoyne and the duke Aubert of Bavier, lorde of Heynalte, Hollande, Zelande, and Frise had maryed their chyldren at Cambray toguyder, at whiche maryage the Frenche kyng was with great tryumphe. Some sayde, howe the same tyme that the Frenche kynge and his uncles, the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Burbone, and the duke Aubert were there at Cambray, and the lady of Burgoyne, the lady of Brabant, and the lady of Heynalte, howe that by the procurement of the duchesse of Brabante, there was secretely a treatie of maryage moved bytwene the yonge kyng Charles of Fraunce and the lady Isabell, doughter to duke Stephyn of Bavyer. For kyng Charles of Fraunce that laste dyed, before in his dethe bedde he ordayned that Charles his sonne shulde be maryed into Almaygne, if they sawe any place convenyent, wherby the Almayns shulde be alyed to Fraunce; for he sawe well howe the kyng of Englande was maryed to the kyng of Almaynes suster, wherby he spedde moche the better. This duchesse of Brabant, who was a ryght sore ymaginatyve lady, shewed many reasons to the kynges uncles and to his counsayle, sayenge, howe this lady was doughter to a great lorde in Almaygne, and the greattest of all the Bavyers, and howe that therby they shulde have great

alyaunce in Almaygne; for duke Stephyn, she sayde, was so great a manne, that he myght well breke the purposes of the great lordes of thempyre, for he was as great or greatter than the kynge of Almaygne; the whiche enclyned sonest the counsayle of Fraunce to parceyver in that mater. Howebeit, the matter was handeled right secretely, for there were but fewe that knewe therof tyll it were doone, and the cause why this was; it is the usage in Fraunce that any lady, doughter to any great lorde, yf the kynge shulde mary her, firste she shulde be sene and viewed all naked, by certayne ladyes therto admytted, to knowe if she were proper and mete to brynge forthe chyldren: and also bycause this lady was of a farre countre, so that if she shulde be pleasaunt to the kyng or nat, or elles all were broken: for these causes the matter was kepte secrete. But the lady, about the feest of Penthecost after, she was brought to Brabant to the duchesse there, who joyfully receyved her, and ordered her, accordynge to the usage of Fraunce: and with her in company was duke Frederyke of Bavyer, her uncle, by whom, to saye trouthe, the maryage was firste procured, by suche wayes as I shall shewe you.

CAP. IIII
Howe the lorde of saynt Albyne and Enguerant Zendequyn saved Ardenbourke fro takyng.

CAP. V

Howe the duchesse of Brabaunt wrote to duke Frederyke of Bavyer of the maryage of the yonge Frenche kynge with her nese Isabell of Bavyer; and howe the duke and the lady came to Quesnoy.

WHAN that duke Frederyke of Bavier came first into France to serve the Frenche kyng, in his journey that he made into Flaunders, and came to the siege of Bourbourc, true it was, he was feasted and receyved by the kynges uncles, bycause he was come so farre of to serve the kynge as out of the countre of Bavyer, the whiche was more than two hundred leages of. This was reputed for a great servyce, and he was alwayes loged nere to the kyng, in token of good love and favour. And whan he

CAP. V
Howe the duchesse of Brabaunt wrote to duke Frederyke of Bavyer.

departed out of Bavyer, he thought surely that there shulde be batayle bytwene the Frenche kyng and the kyng of Englande, in the marchesse of Flaunders or of Fraunce, for so ranne all the brute in all Almaygne; therfore the kynge and his uncles gave hym the more thanke. And thus as he was with the kyng in that voyage before Burbourke and Bergues, the kinges uncles curtesly demaunded on a day of hym, if he had any doughters to mary, sayeng, howe they lacked a wyfe for the kyng, and howe that they had rather the kynge shulde mary in Bavyer rather thane in any other place, for aunciently the Bavyers were of the counsayle of Fraunce. The duke aunswered and sayd, Surely I have no doughter to mary, but myne elder brother, duke Stephyn of Bavyer, hath a right fayre lady to his doughter. Of what age is she of, quod the lordes. Bytwene xiii. and fourtene, quod the duke. That is all that we desyre, quod the kynges uncles: therfore, sir, whan ye do retourne home into Bavyer, speke to your brother of the mater, and bring your nese a pylgrimage to saynt Johns of Amyence, and the kyng shal be there, if it please hym: we thynke he wyll desyre it, for he loveth gladly to se fayre thynges, and if he wysshe to have her, she shall be quene. So this was the first procurement; and as at that tyme there was no more done nor sayde, the kynge knewe nothynge of these wordes. And whane this duke Frederyke of Bavyer was retourned home, he shewed all this mater to duke Stephyn of Bavyer, his brother, who studyed somwhat at his wordes, and at last sayd, Fayre brother, I beleve well it is as ye saye; my doughter shulde be happy if she myght come to so highe an honour as to be Frenche quene; but Fraunce is very farre of, and it is a matter wisely to be regarded to make a quene. I shulde be ryght soore displeased if my doughter shulde be caryed into Fraunce for suche a purpose, and than sente home agayne; yet I had rather mary her at myne ease, nerer home. This was the aunswere that duke Stephyn gave to his brother duke Frederyke, wherewith duke Frederyke was well content, and wrote all his aunswere in substaunce to the kynges uncles, and to his uncle duke Auberte, and to the duches of Brabant. They hadde went that duke Frederyke had forgoten the mater, for they were aboute maryages for the

kynge in other places. And the kynge was nere agreed to the doughter of the duke of Lorayne, for she was a fayre damosell of her age, nere to the kynges age; she was of noble and great generacyon of the house of Bloyes: also ther was spekyng for the doughter of the duke of Lancastre, who was after quene of Portyngale; but there was no conclusion, bycause of the warre; therfore the mater hanged styll in suspence. And as ye have herde before, the duches of Brabant, whan she was at Cambray, at the maryages of Burgoyne and Heynalte, and that the Frenche kyng was ther, and the duke of Burbone and Burgoyn were there, than she moved forthe this maryage of Bavyer, for the kyng, affirmynge that it was moost profitable and honorable for the kynge, bycause of the alyaunce with Almaygne. Madame, quod the kynges uncles, we here nothynge therof. Well, quod the duchesse, I warrant you ye shall here somewhat therof or this somer be paste. Her promyse was well fulfylled, for she dyde so moche, that duke Frederyke, uncle to the damosell, was so agreed with his brother, duke Stephyn, that he shulde convey the lady into Fraunce, and that it shulde be noysed all the waye that they went a pylgrimage to saint Johans of Amyence. Every man supposed the same, for Almayns gothe often on pylgrimage; it is their usage.

CAP. V

Howe the duchesse of Brabaunt wrote to duke Frederyke of Bavyer.

Whan duke Frederyke and his nese, the lady Isabell of Bavyer, had ben thre dayes at Brusels, than they toke leve; but it was the duchesse intensyon to be as soone at Amyence or soner than they. So than they came into Heynalte to Quesnoy, where they founde the duke and the duchesse, and sir Wyllyam erle of Ostrevaunt and his wyfe. There they were nobly receyved, for duke Aubert was her uncle, and had great marveyle what brought them into that countre, and than demaunded why they came thyder. Certaynlye, quod duke Frederyke, I have had moche payne to bringe the mater to this purpose; and so there he shewed hym all the mater, and sayd, I have brought my brother in that mynde, that I have brought my nese hyder as ye saye; but whan I departed, my brother sayd to me, Nowe Frederike, my fayre brother, ye leade with you Isabell my doughter without any sure estate; for if the Frenche kyng wyll refuse

CAP. V
Howe the duchesse of Brabaunt wrote to duke Frederyke of Bavyer.

her, than is she shamed for ever; therfore advyse you well, for if the matter come nat well to passe, ye shall have me your enemy for ever. Therfore, fayre uncle, ye maye se what daunger I have putte myselfe in. Than duke Aubert sayd, Fayre nephue, be nat dismayde, for by the pleasure of God she shal be the Frenche quene, and thane shall ye be quyte, and have the love of duke Stephyn your brother.

Thus they taryed at Quesnoy the space of thre wekes, and the duchesse, who was sage, endoctryned the yonge damosell of Bavyer in maner and in countenaunce, and chaunged her appayrell, for she was but simplye arrayed after the state of Fraunce. Thanne she arrayed her as thoughe she had ben her owne doughter. And whan every thyng was redy, the duches and the damoselle rode forthe tyll they came to Amience. And by that tyme was come thyder the duches of Burgoyne and of Brabant, and also the Frenche kynge and his counsayle. The lorde de la Ryver and sir Guy de la Tremoyle, barownes and knightes, issued out of Amyence to mete and receyve them of Heynalte. Thus they were brought into Amyence, and had moche honoure done to them, and the lordes and ladyes eche of theym dyde vysite other lovyngly; but with moche payne the kynge might slepe, for the inwarde desyre that he had to se her that shulde be his wyfe; and he demaunded of the lorde de la Ryver whan he shulde se her. Of those wordes the ladies had great sporte; so that the Fridaye whan the damosell was redy, the thre duchesses ledde the damosell to the kynge, and than she kneled downe, but the kynge toke her up by the hande and behelde her well, by which regarde love entred into his herte. Than the constable of Fraunce sayd to the lorde Coucy, Sir, by my faythe this ladye shall abyde with us, I se well by the kyng, for his eyes gothe never from her. So whan they had ben with the kynge certayne space, the ladyes toke leave of the kynge and went to their lodgynges; as yet they knewe nat the kynges intencyon. Than the duke of Burgoyn charged the lorde de la Ryver to enquere of the kyng his mynde; who dyde so right dilygently, sayeng, Sir, and it lyke youre grace, howe lyke you this yonge lady; shall she abyde with

Howe the duchesse of Brabaunt wrote to duke Frederyke of Bavyer.

us? Yea, truely, quoth the kynge, she right well pleaseth us; therfore shewe unto myne uncle of Burgoyne, that she maye be delyvered to us. Whan the lorde de la Ryver herde hym saye so, he incontynent shewed it to the duke of Burgoyne; and he streight waye went and shewed it to the ladyes, wherof they had great joye, and cryed, Nowell. Thus the lordes and ladyes were in great joye, and the kynges uncles were in mynde to have had the maryage at Arras, but it pleased nat the kyng to go soo farre; therfore he desyred his uncle that it might be done ther. Well, quod the duke, in a good hour be it, so let it be.

Than the duke of Burgoyne, the constable, the lorde de la Ryver, and the lorde de la Tremoyle, and dyvers other in his company, went to the lady of Heynault, and founde her with her nese by her: there he shewed them these tidynges, how the kyng had broken their purpose as the mariage to be at Aras, sayeng, howe the matter touched the kyng so nere, Wherfore to morowe next we must heale him of his sickenesse. The duches began to smyle; and so than they departed eche fro other with great joye and solace.

The same Saturday at night Fraunces Atreman and the Gauntoyse, with a sevyn thousande with hym, wente out of the landes of the Foure Craftes, after he had fayled of takynge of Ardenbourke. And he promysed to them of Gaunt at his departynge, that he wolde never retourne into Gaunt tyll he had won some good towne. For the Gauntoyse dyd what they might to putte the Frenchemen to suche busynesse, that they shulde sende no more companye into Scotlande to the admyrall, to make warre agaynst the Englysshmen; for ther was a common brute, that the constable and dyvers other men of armes, and certayne crosbowes of Gene, shulde entre into the see, and go into Scotlande to reconforte their men that were ther allredy, makyng warre agaynst Englande. Frances Atreman, who was a proper man of armes, issued the sayd Saturday out of the quarter called the Foure Craftes, and all night he went costyng Bruges, trustyng to have wonne it, but it wolde nat be. Whan he sawe that he fayled there, he wente to Danne, and there his spyes mette with hym, and

CAP. V

Howe the duchesse of Brabaunt wrote to duke Frederyke of Bavyer.

sayde, Sir, it were good ye went to Danne, for sir Roger of Guystelles, who is capitayne there, is nat nowe in the towne. And true it was, he was goone to Bruges, wenyng that the towne of Dan had ben strong ynoughe for their defence, but he was disceyved.

CAP. VI

Howe Fraunces Atreman toke the towne of Dan, and howe the French king wedded the lady Isabell of Bavyer, and after went and layde siege to Danne.

WHANNE Fraunces Atreman knewe by his espyes that sir Roger of Guystels was nat in Dan, he devyded his company in two, and tooke hymselfe the lesse nombre, and sayd, Sirs, go you yonder wayes to suche a gate, and whane ye here me blowe, go to the barryers and breke them downe, and I and my company shall bete downe the gate, for it wyll be over long or we entre by ladders; the towne shal be ours, I put no dout. It was done as he ordayned, and so wente with the lesse nombre: and so the first went with ladders into the dykes: they founde no withstandyng, and passed the myre and dressed up ther ladders, and so entred into the towne and came to the gate, sownynge their hornes without any daunger, for the good men of the towne were in their beddes: this was the xvii. day of July. Thus they came to the gate and brake the barriers, and they without brake downe the barriers there, so that every man entred. Than they of the towne began to styrre, but that was to late, for they were taken in their houses, and as many as were founde in harnesse and at defence were slayne without mercy. Thus the good towne of Dan was taken, wherin was founde great richesse, and specially the sellers full of Malvesey and wyne Granade. And it was shewed me howe there was great richesse there of them of Bruges, whiche they had brought thyder, for feare that they had of rebellyon of the common people.

CAP. VI

Howe Fraunces Atreman toke the towne of Dan.

Fraunces Atreman, whan he sawe that he was lorde of Dan, he was greatly rejoysed, and sayd, Nowe have I well kept my promyse with them of Gaunte: this towne shall serve us well to maister Bruges, Sluse, and Ardenbourcke. Than incontynent he made a crye, that no man shulde be so hardy to touche or do any displeasure to any lady or gentylwoman in the towne. There was the same tyme there a sevyn knightes wyves, who were come thyder to se the lady of Guystelles, she was redy to lye downe a chylde beed. Thus after they had pilled the towne, and slayne all suche as wolde nat take their parte, than they went to repayre the towne agayne. Whanne they of Bruges herde therof, they were sore displeased, and nat without cause, and armed them, and with baner displayed came before the towne of Dan, and began to scrimysshe and to assayle the towne; but all was for nought; they lost more than thei wan, and so retourned agayne to Bruges. Whan these tidynges came to Gaunt, they were greatly rejoysed, and reputed that enterprise for a noble dede, and Fraunces Atreman for a valyant man.

Nowe let us returne to the Frenche kynges weddyng.

Whan the duches Margarete of Heynalte, who had the yonge lady in her kepynge, whan she sawe the day was come, she apparelled the lady honestly. And to them came the duches of Burgoyne and the duches of Brabant, accompanyed with many ladyes and damosels: these thre ladies conveyed the lady Isabell of Baviers in a chayre, rychelye covered, with a crowne on her heed, worthe the richesse of a realme, whiche the kynge had sent her before: and the bysshoppe of the same place dyde wedde them in the presens of all the lordes and ladyes. After the masse and solempnyte finysshed, the kyng and all they went to dyner, whiche was great and sumptuous, and erles and barownes served the kynge in ryche array. Thus the day contynued in great sporte tyll it was night: than the kyng went to bedde with his newe wyfe: so the feest endured tyll the Wednisday after. Than tidynges came to the kynge and his counsayle, howe Fraunces Atreman had wonne the towne of Danne; also there came an haraude from the duke of Burbone, and brought letters to the kyng, signifyeng hym howe Taylbourcke was wonne and

CAP. VI

Howe Fraunces Atreman toke the towne of Dan.

turned Frenche, and howe the duke of Burbone and his company was goyng to ley siege to Bertuell,[1] and howe they had in Poyctou, Xaynton, and Limosyn reconquered sixe forteresses. These tidynges somwhat rejoysed the court, and sette at nought the lesyng of Danne, savyng that it was concluded that the kyng shulde do nothing tyll he had ben in Flaunders and won agayne Danne, and to entre so farre into the Four Craftes, out of the whiche all the venym issued, that he shulde leave no house standynge, but to dystroy all. Than messangers were sent over all the realme of Fraunce, commaundynge all men of warre to be by the first day of August in the marchesse of Picardy, to ley siege to Dan. These tidynges spredde abrode in the realme of Fraunce, and every knight and squyer made them redy to come to the kyng, as they were commaunded. The same day duke Frederyke of Bavyer, and duke Aubert, and all the barony toke leve of the kyng, and every man retourned home to their owne, and lefte with the kyng the lady Isabell of Bavyer, as than the Frenche quene.

[1] *Verteuil.*

The Frenche kyng, who had made his commaundement throughe all his realme, sayd howe he wolde never come in Parys tyll he had ben before the towne of Danne. And so the xxv. day of July he departed fro Amyence with the constable, and dyvers other lordes of his house, and went to Arras, where he taryed but one night, and the next day he went to Lan[2] in Arthoyse, and dayly men of warre came to hym fro all partes; and so at last he came to Ipre, so that by the firste day of August he was before Dan, and laye so nere to it, that the gonne shot passed over his heed. A thre dayes after came to the kynge Wylliam of Heynalte, who was ryght welcome to the kynge and to the duke of Burgoyne. So there they layde a goodly siege about Dan, and therin was enclosed Fraunces Atreman, who bare himselfe valiantly, for every day ther was outher scrimysshe or assaut, without it were truse. The lorde of Clary, who was mayster of the ordynaunce with the lorde of Coucy, was striken with a quarell out of the towne, of whiche stroke he dyed; whiche was great domage, for he was a noble knight. To the siege of Danne there came men oute of the good townes of Flaunders, as Ipre, Bruges, and out of Franke.

[2] *Lens.*

At this siege were beyond a hundred thousande men. The kyng laye bytwene Dan and Gaunte; and capitayne of the Flemmynges was the lorde of saynt Pye and the lorde of Guystels, with a xxv. C. speares,[1] and laye myddes amonge them for feare of discencion. CAP. VI Howe Fraunces Atreman toke the towne of Dan.

[1] *xxv. speares* P.

CAP. VII

Howe dyvers burgesses of Sluse were beheeded; and howe Sluse was chaunged for the lande of Bethune; and howe the siege of Danne contynewed longe.

AT an assaut there was made knyght by the kynge Wylliam of Heynalte: that day he reared up his baner, and quytte hymselfe lyke a good knight. But at that assaute the Frenchemen loste more than they wanne, for Fraunces Atreman had with hym certayne archers of Englande, who greatly greved the assaylantes; also he had great plentie of artillary, for whan the towne was wonne it was well furnysshed, and also he caused moche to be brought fro Gaunt, whan he knewe that he shulde have siege layde to the towne. In the same season, whyle the siege laye thus before Danne, some of the greattest of the towne of Sluse, suche as than bare moost rule in the towne, were so wrapped with treason, that they wolde have delivered the towne to the kinges enemyes, and to have murdred their capitayne and his company in their beddes, and to have set fyre in the kynges navy, that lay there at ancre, laded with provisyon for the kynge; before he wente to Danne, he was in purpose to have gone into Scotlande after his admyrall. And also these treators had thought to have broken downe the see bankes, therby to have drowned the greattest parte of the kynges hoost. Of all this they had made marchaundise with them of Gaunte. And all these treasons shulde have ben done in one night; but ther was a good man in the towne, as he was in an hostry, herde all this treason that they were purposed to do, and incontynent he went to the capitayne, and shewed hym the mater, and named to

CAP. VII

Howe dyvers burgesses of Sluse were beheeded.

hym certayne of them that had thus conspyred the treason. Whan the capitayne herde that, he sore marveyled, and toke a threscore speares of his company and wente fro house to house of the treatours, and so toke and sette them in dyvers prisons in sure kepynge. Than he toke his horse and rode to the kyng, and so came to his tente before hym and the duke of Burgoyne; he shewed all the mater howe the towne of Sluse was likely to have ben lost, and all the kynges host likely to have ben in the water to the brestes; wherof the kyng and the lordes had great marveyle. And than the capitayne was commaunded that he shulde retourne to Sluse, and incontynent to stryke of all their heedes, withoute any respyte, therby all other to take ensample. So the capitayne retourned, and incontynent strake of all their heedes. This was the conclusion of that busynesse. Than the duke of Burgoyne cast in his advyse, to fynde some meanes to entreat his cosyn, sir William of Namure, to have of hym the towne of Sluse by exchaunge for other landes, and to joyne that towne to the countie of Flaunders; and this was moche by thadvyse of sir Guy de la Tremoyle, who had the somer before sojourned in Sluse, with a certayne nombre of men of warre.

Whane sir Wylliam of Namure herde first spekynge of that matter, he was marveylously displeased, for the towne of Sluse, with the apendauntes and profytes of the see, was a fayre and profytable herytage, and it was fallen to him by his auncestours, wherfore he loved it the better; howebeit, the duke of Burgoyne lay so sore on hym therfore that there was no remedy but to make the exchaunge. For the dukes entensyon was to make there a stronge castell, to subdue all comers and goers by the see entryng into the havyn of Sluse, and to kepe it with men of warre, so that none shulde entre by the see in those marchesse without their daunger, and to make a towre so highe, to se twentie leages into the see. So thus brevely this sir Wylliam of Namure was so sore desyred by the duke of Burgoyne and his counsayle, that he was contente to exchaunge Sluse for the landes of Bethune, whiche is a fayre and a great herytage in that countrey; he to have that to hym and to his heyres for ever. And so than incontynent the duke of

CAP. VII

Howe dyvers burgesses of Sluse were beheeded.

Burgoyn sette workemen a worke to make the castell of Sluse.

Nowe lette us speke of the siege of Danne.

There was nere every daye an assaute, and dyvers scrimysshes at the gates and barriers, so that dyvers were hurt and slayne daylye. The Frenchmen coude nat well come to the walles, bycause of the dykes were full of myre; for if it had ben rayny wether, the hoost shulde have had moche ado, and shulde have ben fayne to have dislodged, wheder they wolde or nat; but by the space of a moneth that the siege endured, it never rayned, and they had vitayle ynoughe. Howebeit, bycause of the yvell ayre and the stynkynge of deed beestes and horses the ayre was so corrupte, that dyvers knightes and squyers were therby sore sicke, so that dyvers went to refresshe them at Bruges and other places, to forsake the yvell ayre.

The kynge hymselfe went and laye at Marles,[1] howebeit his tentes were styll pight up in the felde. The entent of Fraunces Atreman was to holde styll the towne, tyll socours came out of Englande to reyse the siege; and surely they of Gaunte had sende into Englande for rescue, and surely the kyng of Englandes uncles had come over the see sufficiently garnysshed with men of warre and artillarye to have reysed the siege, but that they were lette bycause of the admyralles beyng in Scotlande, with a certayne nombre of men of armes. And also it was sayde in the realme of Englande, that the constable of Fraunce shulde come after into Scotlande with a great puissaunce for to make warre into Englande; wherby the Gauntoyse were nat rescued; wherfore it behoved them within the towne of Dan to make an yvell bargayne.

[1] *Male.*

CAP. VIII

Howe the Gauntoyse fledde out of Dan by night, and howe the Frenchemen toke the towne and distroyed it; and also howe the kynge distroyed the countre of the Foure Craftes.

THE xxvii. day of August the towne of Dan was won. For whan Fraunces Atreman parceyved that he had no socour, and that his artillary began to fayle, than he was somwhat disconforted in hymself, and sayd to them of his counsayle, Sirs, I wyll that we of Gaunt go our wayes, and lette us shewe this one to another secretely, for if they of the towne knewe of our departyng, to save themselfe, their wyves and chyldren, paradventure they wyll make a shrewde marchaundyse for us, yea, and delyver us to oure enemyes, so that they may be in rest and peace; and that shulde coste us oure lyves; but I shall kepe theym well therfro. Wherfore let us kepe us all toguyder, and let us go about the towne to vysite the watche, and lette us cause the men and women of the towne to go into the mynster, makynge theym to beleve that to morowe next we shall have a great assaute: and bicause we wolde that they shulde have no domage, therfore we wyll have them in suretie in the churche out of the waye. And we shall saye to the watchemen, that we wyll go out and make a scrymysshe with the hoost; and whan we be in the feldes, lette us ryde on the spurres to Gaunte. They of his counsayle sayd, Sir, ye have well sayd, so lette it be. And so every man ordayned themselfe as they had purposed, and in the evenyng they trussed redy all their goodes, suche as they might cary awaye, and put all women and children and other prisoners into the mynster, and specially all ladyes and gentylwomen, sayeng to them, Fayre ladyes, we shall have to morowe in the mornyng a great assaute, and we wolde nat that ye shulde be abasshed or take any domage. So thus they lefte them in the churche, and at the first hour of the night the Gauntoise went and dyde visyte the watche, and on the walles there were none but they of the towne. Than Fraunces Atreman sayde to

them, Sirs, make this night good watche, and depart nat fro the walles for any thyng ye here or se, for in the mornyng we shall have an assaut; but yet first this night I wyll awake the hoost. His wordes were well beleved; every man went he had sayd trouthe. Whan he had ordayned every thynge accordynge to his mynde, than he caused a gate to be opyned, and so he and all his company issued out, and he was nat halfe a leage fro the towne but it was day light: than they of the towne parceyved well that Fraunces Atreman and all his company were gone; than they thought themselfe disceyved. Than the chefe of the towne began to entreate with the men of the kynges, that were there as prisoners, sayeng to theym, howe they had slayne Fraunces Atreman the same night.

CAP. VIII

Howe the Gauntoyse fledde out of Dan by night.

Whan dyvers of the towne of Dan understode howe Fraunces Atreman and his company were gone, and howe the gate was opyn, they ran out of the towne that best might. And whan this was knowen in thoost, the Bretons and Burgonyons desyring to wyn, mounted on their horses and fell in the chase, and pursued the Gauntoise tyll they came within two leages of Gaunte: so in the chase there were many slayne and taken, mo than fyve hundred, but of them were but fewe Gauntoise, but moost of Danne, that fledde out of the towne. In the meane season the towne was assayled, where was made no defence; so the Frenchemen entred on every syde by ladders, and had passed the dykes with moche payne. And whan they were within, they had wende to have won gret riches, but they founde there nothyng but poore people, men, women, and chyldren, and great plentie of good wynes; and so for dispyte and displeasure they sette fyre in the towne, so that it was nighe all brent; wherof the kynge and the duke of Burgone was sore displeased, but they coude nat amende it. Howebeit, the ladyes and gentylwomen with moche payne were saved fro hurt of their bodyes or losse of their goodes.

After the takyng of Dan, the kyng was counsayled to dislodge. And so the king went and lodged a two leages fro Gaunte, at a towne called Artvelle. And whyles the kyng lay there, his men of armes rode in the countrey of the Four Craftes, and distroyed all the countre, bycause in tyme

CAP. VIII
Howe the Gauntoyse fledde out of Dan by night.

past the Gauntoyse had chiefe confort ever fro them; therfore they brent downe towres, churches, and houses, and chased the men, women, and chyldren into the woodes. Whan the Frenchmen had done that distruction, than it was ordayned to go and lay siege to the castell of Gavre, and than after to Gaunte. But all that tourned to nothyng; for tidynges came to the kynge beyng at Artvelle, fro the quene of Hungry, by the bysshop of Wasselure,[1] the sayd quenes ambassadour, with dyvers knightes and squyers in his company; and they brought letters of credence, certifyeng howe the said quene was comyng into Fraunce, to fetche Lewes of Fraunce, erle of Valoys, to have hym into Hungry to her doughter, whom sir Johan la Parson had wedded by procuracion in the name of the erle of Valoyes. These tidynges pleased greatly the kynge and his counsayle; and so it was thought, that for the honoure of the yonge Lewes, erle of Valois, that they shulde returne into Fraunce, and thought they hadde done ynoughe for that season in the countre of Flaunders.

[1] *Bacs.*

CAP. IX

Howe the Frenche kyng departed out of Flaunders, and gave leave to his men to departe, and howe he came to Parys to treate with the ambassadours of Hungry; and howe the Marques of Blanquefort toke by strength to his wyfe the same lady enherytoure of Hungry.

THAN the Frenche kyng departed fro Artvell the xii. day of Septembre, and gave leave to all men of warre to retourne to their owne houses; of the whiche departynge the Gauntoyse were ryght gladde. Than the kyng went to Craye,[2] where the quene his wyfe was; for whan he went fro Amyens to Flaunders, he sent her thyder to kepe her estate; and so he taried ther certen dayes, and so the kyng wente to Parys, and the quene to Boyse de Vyncens. And ther the kyng and his counsayle entended for the ordring of the yong erle of Valoyes, for he wolde

[2] *Creil.*

CAP. IX

Howe the Frenche kyng departed out of Flaunders.

that he shulde go nobly into Hungry, where as they toke hym for kyng: but the mater chaunged otherwyse in a shorte season after in the realme of Hungry, as ye shall here after. It is of trouthe that the quene of Hungry, mother to the yonge lady whom the erle of Valoys had wedded by procuracion, as ye have herde before, had all her entent to make therle of Valoys kyng of Hungry, desyring in her mynde nothyng so moche; and for the same entent she had sente the bysshop Vasereull and other of her countrey into Fraunce. And in the meane season that these ambassadours came into Fraunce, the kynge of Almayne, who wrote himselfe kyng of Romayns, had a brother yonger than hymselfe, named Henry of Blanquefort.[1] This kyng of Romayns was enfourmed of the state of the treatie bytwene the quene of Hungry and the yonge erle of Valoys, and howe that the ambassadours were goone for hym into Fraunce. This kyng of Romayns, who loved better the profite of his brother rather than of his cosyn, cast his advyse, and had done long, and all his entensyon and affection was howe to bring the mater about secretely and craftely, as he well shewed; for if the quene of Hungry had knowen of his mynde, she wolde have provided remedy right well therfore; but she knewe it nat, as it well appered. The counsayle of Almayne knewe right well that the quene of Hungry and her doughter were a sportyng of them at a castell nere to the marchesse of Almaygne. That ones knowen, the marques of Blanqueforte assembled a great nombre of men of armes, to the nombre of ten thousande, and so came sodaynly, and layde siege to the castell where as the quene was. Whan the quene sawe that, she was sore dismayed, and incontynent sent to the marques, to knowe why he had besieged her, and what thynge he demaunded. The marques answered, that it was for none other thynge, but that she wolde mary her doughter to a stranger, brother to the Frenche kyng, by whom she coude never have any conforte if she neded; therfore, he sayd, it were more better and profitable for her and for the realme of Hungry to let hym have her who is her cosyn, rather than another of a farre countre, as Lewes, erle of Valoyes. The quene answered agayne and sayd, howe she never herde before his

[1] *Brandenbourg.*

CAP. IX

Howe the Frenche kyng departed out of Flaunders.

desyre, and therfore she was agreed with the Frenche kynges brother; sayeng also, howe the kyng of Hungry, her husbande, or he dyed, had ordayned that it shulde so be. To the whiche sayeng, the marques answered and sayd, he cared nat for all that, but sayd, howe he had the good wyll of the most parte of all the realme of Hungry, wherfore he sayd he wolde have her, outher by fayre meanes or by foule. The quene was sore dismayd with those wordes; howebeit, she helde her styll and sente all about for socoure, but none wolde come to her agaynst the marques. And there the Hungryes shewed well howe they hadde as lyve have the marchaundyse of Almaygne as of Fraunce. And whan the quene sawe that she coulde have no conforte of her men, she wyste nat what to do. The marques thretened her, that if he wanne her by force, he wolde sette her in a towre, with bredde and water, as longe as she lyved, whiche made the quene afrayed, for she sawe well she was but in a weake place, without men, vitayle, or provision. Than she treated with the marques, and delyvered hym her dere doughter, and incontynent he dyd wedde her and bedde her.

Thus sir Henry of Boesme, marques of Blanqueforte, came to the herytage of Hungry, wherof he was kynge more by force than by love, as to the consentynge of the olde quene, but she was fayne to agre, or els to have made a worse marchaundyse. These tidynges were anone knowen with the ambassadoures that were in Fraunce, and were comyng homwarde, and the erle of Valoys redy at Troyse, and had taken leave of the kyng, and of his uncles; whan he herde of these tidynges he was sore displeased, but he coulde nat remedy it.

[1] *hugros* P.

Thus the Hungres[1] departed right sore displeased, they had good cause why; the yonge erle retourned to Parys to the kynge his brother, and to his uncles, who made no great force of that maryage, sayeng howe the erle of Valoyes was happy that his wyfe was taken fro hym; for they sayde, howe Hungry was very farre of, and yvell to be ledde by the Frenchemen, nor they coude have but lytell ayde or conforte of them: therfore this mater was forgoten and lytell sette by. Than they thought for hym another maryage, that was the doughter of the duke of Myllayne, who was inherytoure

to all Lombardy, whiche lande is more ryche than the realme of Hungry, and more nerer for the Frenchemen.

CAP. IX

Howe the Frenche kyng departed out of Flaunders.

Nowe lette us leave to speke of these mariages, and lette us retourne to the duke of Burbone, who was in Poyctou, at the siege before Bertuell: and than lette us retourne to the admyrall beyng in Scotlande, and shewe howe he dyd there.

CAP. X

Howe the duke of Burbone toke Bertuell, in Poictou. And also of the great assemble that the kyng of Scottes made to entre into Englande.

THE same season that the kyng was in Flaunders, as well before Dan, as before other places, the duke of Burbone with a great nombre entred into Lymosyn, and into Poictou, and toke dyvers castelles and fortresses that were as than Englysshe, as Archeacke, Garnac, Mountlue, eight myle fro Burdeaux, and Taylbourcke, on the ryver of Charent, and than wente and layde siege before Bertuell,[1] a stronge castell in Poictou, on the marchesse of Limosyn, and Xaynton. Of Bertuell were capitayns, Andrue Pinas, an Englyssheman, and Bertrande Montryvet, Gascoyne, and they had with them a certayne nombre of good companyons. At this siege there was dyvers assautes and scrimysshes, and many feates of armes done, and nighe every day at the barryers, what by them within and them without, there was scrimysshyng where as were some slayne and some hurt; howebeit, the duke of Burbone sayde he wolde nat departe thens tyll he had the castell at his pleasure, for so he had promysed the duke of Berry whan he departed fro hym last. And durynge the siege, it fortuned that Bertrande du Montryvet, one of the capitayns of the castell, as he was devysing to make a newe dyke, ther came a gonne shotte fro the hoost, and sodainly slewe the sayd Bertrande, who before that tyme had escaped sixtene peryllous sieges; of his dethe they within the castell were sore dismayed and soroufull, but they coude nat amende it; and so than Andrewe was capitayne alone. And than

[1] *Verteuil.*

CAP. X
Howe the duke of Burbone toke Bertuell.

within fyftene dayes after, there was a treatie bytwene them without and them within, to yelde up the castell with all the provision therin, and they within to be surely conveyed to Boutevyll, wherof Dyrandon de la Perade was capiten. Thus the Frenchemen had the castell of Bertuell, whiche incontynent they newly repayred, and furnysshed with artyllary and men of warre. Than the duke wente and refresshed hym at a good towne therby called Cares,[1] and so from thens to Lymogines, and there he taryed an eight dayes, and determyned to retourne into Fraunce. And so he dyde, and founde the kyng at Parys, with his nephue the erle of Valoyes, who receyved hym with great joye.

[1] *Charroux.*

Nowe lette us retourne to the busynesse of Scotlande, and to the admyrall of Fraunce, and what he dyde in that season.

Ye have herde here before howe the admyrall of Fraunce, with a certayne men of warre landed in Scotlande at Edenborowe, and howe they founde there another maner of countre than it was shewed the yere before by the barones of Scotlande. For the kynge there and the barons of Scotlande the yere before had enformed sir Geffray of Charney, and sir Aymarde de Marse, that if the seneschall, constable, or admyrall of Fraunce wolde passe the see and come into Scotlande, but with one thousande speares, and fyve hundred crosbowes, with harnesse to arme a thousande Scottes, that than with the ayde of the hole realme of Scotlande they wolde fyght with thenglysshmen, and make so great a hole in Englande, that it shulde never be recovered. And so thus the Frenchemen with the admyrall passed the see, and were come into Scotlande; howebeit, they founde nat all the sayd promyse nat very true; first, they founde harde people and yvell frendes, and a poore countre; suche knightes and squyers of Fraunce as were there knewe nat wheder to sende their varlettes to forrage, they durst nat without they went in great routes, for the bribours of the countrey who watched for them at the passages, and often tymes slewe of them. At last kyng Robert of Scotlande came to Edenborowe with a payre of reed blered eyen, it semed they were lyned with sendall. And it semed ryght well by hym, that he was no valyant man in armes: it semed he had rather

lye styll than to ryde. He had a ix. sonnes, and they loved well armes. So thus whan the kyng was come thyder, the lordes and knightes of Fraunce drewe to hym and dyd their dutie; and there was present the erle Duglas, the erle Morette,[1] the erle de la Mayre,[2] the erle of Surbaulte,[3] and dyvers other: there the admyrall requyred the kyng, that the cause of their comyng into that countre myght be accomplysshed, sayeng howe they wolde fayne make a journey into Englande. The barons, knightes, and squyers of Scotlande, suche as desyred to avaunce themselfe, were right joyfull, and said that if God be pleased they wolde make suche a voyage that shulde be to their honour and profyte. The kyng than sent out his commaundement to assemble his power, and so at the day assigned he had redy a xxx. thousande men all on horsebacke. And as they came, they lodged accordynge to the usage of their countrey, I thynke nat all at their ease.

CAP. X

Howe the duke of Burbone toke Bertuell.

[1] *Moray.*
[2] *Mar.*
[3] *Sutherland.*

Sir Johan de Vyen, who had great desyre to ryde, and to enploye his tyme into Englande, to do some great enterprise, whan he sawe the Scottes were come, he sayd, Sirs, nowe it is tyme to ryde, we have lyen to long styll. So than the settyng forwarde was publysshed to every man: than they toke their waye to Rosebourcke.[4] In this journey the kyng was nat, he abode styll at Edenborow, but all his sonnes were in the army. The thousande complete harnesse that the Frenchemen brought with them was delyvered to the knightes of Scotlande, and of Norwiche,[5] who were before but yvell harnessed, of the whiche harnesse they had great joye, and so they rode towarde Northumberlande. And so longe they rode that they came to the abbey of Maures,[6] and there they lodged all about the ryver of Tymbre,[7] and the nexte day they came to Morlane, and than before Rosebourcke. The kepar of Rosebourc under the lorde Montagu was a knight called sir Edwarde Clyfforde. The admyrall of Fraunce and the Scottes taryed and behelde well the castell; and all thynges considred they sawe well to assayle it shulde lytell aveyle them, for the castell was stronge and well furnysshed with artillary. And so than they passed by and drewe along the ryver syde aprochyng to Berwyke. And so long they rode that they came to two towres right strong,

[4] *Roxborough.*
[5] *Norway.*
[6] *Melrose. Maures* P.
[7] *Tweed.*

CAP. X
Howe the duke of Burbone toke Bertuell.

whiche were kept by two knightes, the father and the sonne, bothe were called sir Johan Strande; aboute these towres were fayre landes and a fayre place, the whiche incontynent were brent, and the two towres assayled. Ther was many feates of armes shewed, and dyvers Scottes hurte with shotte and cast of stones; finally the towres were wonne, and the knightes within, by playne assaut, yet they defended them as longe as they might endure.

CAP. XI

Howe the Frenchemen and Scottes wanne the castell of Varley, and distroyed divers other townes in Northumberlande, and howe they withdrewe agayne into Scotlande, whan they knewe that the kyng of Englande came on them with a great puyssaunce.

AFTER the conquest of thes two towres, than they went to another castel called Varley,[1] parteyning to the herytage of sir John Montagu, and capitayne there under hym was sir Johan of Lusseborne, who had there with hym his wyfe and his chyldren, and all his good. He knewe well before that the Scottes wolde come thyder, therfore he had purveyed the castel to the best of his power to abyde the assaute. So about this castell taryed all the armye. This castell stode in a fayre countre, by a fayre ryver whiche cometh out of Tymbre,[2] and ronneth into the see. So on a day there was a great assaut, and the Frenchemen bare them well the same day, moche better than the Scottes dyd, for they entred into the dykes, and passed through with moche payne. There was many feates of armes done, what by them above and them beneth; the Frenchemen mounted up by ladders, and fought hande to hande with daggars on the walles: sir Johan Lusseborne dyd quyte hymselfe lyke a valyant knight, and fought with the Frenchemen hande to hande on the ladders. At this assaute there was slayne a knight of Almaygne, called sir

[1] *Werk.*

[2] *une belle rivière qui rentre en la mer par le Tuide.*

CAP. XI

Howe the Frenchemen and Scottes wanne the castell of Varley.

Bleres[1] Gastelayne, whiche was great domage. There were many hurt that day; but finally there was so moche people, and thassaute so well contynued, that the castell was wonne, and the knight, his wyfe and chyldren taken, and a xl. other prisoners. And than the castell was brent and rased downe, for they sawe well that it was nat to be kept, seyng that it was so farr in Englande as it was. Than the admyrall and Scottes rode towarde Auwike,[2] in the lande of the lorde Percy, and lodged there about, and brent certayne villages; and so came to another castell of therle of Northumberlandes, standyng on the see syde, but they assayled it nat, for they knew well they shulde lese their payne. And so they rode all about that fronter, half waye bytwene Berwyke and Newcastell, on the ryver of Tyne, and there they understode howe that the duke of Lancastre, therle of Northumberlande, the erle of Notingham, the lorde Nevell, and the barons of those marches of Northumberlande, and of the bysshoprikes of Yorke and Dyrham, were comynge on them with a great power. Whan thadmyrall of Fraunce knewe therof, he was right joyfull, and so were all the barons of Fraunce that were in his company, for they desyred to have batayle, but the Scottes cared lytell therfore; there they were counsayled to returne againe towarde Berwyke, bycause of their provisyon that folowed them, and also to be nere their owne countre, and there to abyde for their ennemyes. So thadmyrall beleved them, and returned towarde Berwyke, wherof sir Thomas Redman was capitayne, and with hym right good men of armes. So the Frenchmen and Scottes lay before the towne but assayled it nat, and so passed by the next day, and toke the waye to Burbourcke,[3] to retourne to their owne countrees.

[1] *Weris.*

[2] *Alnwick.*

[3] *Dunbar.*

Tidynges was brought anon into Englande, howe the Frenchmen and Scottes were in Northumberlande, and distroyed and brent the countre: the kynge of Englande knewe right well before of their comynge, wherfore the lordes were redy in the felde, and toke their way towarde the Scottes. Thenglysshmen had made that somer the grettest provisyon that ever they made, to go into Scotlande, bothe by lande and water; they had a xxvi.[4] vessels on the see charged with provision costyng the fronters of Englande,

[4] *vi.xx.*

CAP. XI
Howe the Frenchemen and Scottes wanne the castell of Varley.

redy to entre into every haven of Scotland. And the kyng came himselfe acompanyed with his uncles, therle of Cambridge, and sir Thomas Holand; ther was also therle of Salisbury, therle of Arundell, the yong erle of Penbroke, the yong lorde Spensar, therle of Stafforde, and therle Mysien,[1] and so many barons and knightes, that they were four M. speres, besyde them that were before with the duke of Lancastre, therle of Northumberlande, therle of Notyngham, the lorde Lucy, the lorde Nevell, the lordes and barons that were on before pursuyng the Scottes, who were a two M. speares, and xv. M. archers. And the kynge and the lordes were fyftie M. archers, besyde varlettes.

[1] *Devonshire.*

The kyng folowed the duke of Lancastre so fast, that he and all his host came into the marches about Yorke: for on the way tidynges came to the kyng, howe that his people that were before were likely to fight with the Scottes in the marches of Northumberlande, therfore he made the gretter hast. And so the kyng came at last to saint Johns of Beverley in the marches of Dyrham; and ther tidynges came to the kyng, how that the Scottes were returned into their owne countre; so all the men of warre lodged about in the marches of Northumberland.

Nowe shall I shewe you of an adventure that fell in thenglysshe hoost, wherby that voyage was broken, and mortall warre bytwene certayne of the lordes.

CAP. XII

Howe sir Johan Hollande slewe sir Rycharde Stafforde, and howe therle of Stafforde came to the kyng to demaunde justyce.

IN the marches of saint John of Beverley, in the dyoces of Yorke, the kynge of Englande was lodged with a great nombre of erles, barons, and knightes, for every man lay as nere the kyng as they might, and specially his two uncles, sir Thomas Holande, erle of Lien,[2] and sir Joan Holande his brother. In the kynges company there was a knyght of Boesme, was come to se the quene of Englande,

[2] *Kent.*

CAP. XII

and for love of the quene the kyng and the lordes made hym good chere: his name was sir Myles, he was a fresshe lustye knight after the usage of Almaygne. And so it fortuned besyde a vyllage nere to saint Johans of Beverley, that there fell wordes bitwene this knight and two squyers of sir Johan of Hollandes, brother to the kynge; and to the wordes there came two archers of sir Johan[1] Staffordes. The wordes so multiplyed that the two archers toke parte with the straunger, and blamed the two squyers, sayng, Sirs, ye do wronge to medyll with this knight, for ye knowe he is belongyng to the quene, and of her countre: ye ought rather to support him than otherwise. Than one of the squyers sayd, What, envyous knave, hast thou to do, thoughe I blame hym for his folly? What have I to do, quod the archer; I have right well to do therwith, for he is companyon to my mayster, therfore I wyll nat be in the place to suffre hym to receyve any villany. Yea, quod the squyer, if I thought thou woldest ayde hym agaynste me, I wolde put this swerd through thy body; and made countnaunce as thoughe he wolde have stryken him. The archer stepped backe with his bowe, whiche was redy bente, and sette an arowe therin and drewe it up, and shotte agaynst the squyer, that the arowe pearsed thoroughe body and hart, and so fell downe deed. Whan the other squyer sawe his felowe deed, he fledde awaye, and sir Myles retourned to his lodgynge. The two archers went to their maister, and shewed hym all the adventure: sir Richarde[2] Stafforde sayde, Thou hast done right yvell. Sir, quod the archer, I coude do none otherwise, without I wolde have been slayne myselfe, and I had rather have slayne hym, than he shulde have slayne me. Well, quod sir Rycharde, go thy waye that thou be nat founde, and I shall entreate for thy peace with sir Johan of Holande, by my father, or by some other. So the archer departed.

Howe sir Johan Holande slewe sir Rycharde Stafforde.

[1] *Ralph.*

[2] *Ralph.*

Tidynges anone was brought to sir Johan of Holande, that an archer of sir Richarde Staffordes had slayne a squyer of his, the man that he loved best in all the worlde, and it was shewed hym the maner howe, and that it was for the cause of sir Myles the straunger. Whan sir Johan of Holande was well enfourmed of this adventure, he was ryght sore displeased, and sayd, I shall never eate nor drinke tyll

CAP. XII

Howe sir Johan Hollande slewe sir Rycharde Stafforde.

it be revenged. Than he lepte on his horse, and toke certayne of his men with hym, and departed fro his owne lodgynge, it was as than right late, and so rode into the feldes and enquered where sir Myles was lodged; it was shewed hym he was lodged in the reregarde, with the erle of Devuryniers,[1] and therle of Stafforde. Than sir Johan Hollande toke the waye thyderwarde, and sought to fynde sir Myles. And as he and his men rode up and downe amonge the hedges and busshes, in a straite waye he mette at adventure with sir Richarde Stafforde, and bicause it was night he demaunded who was there. I am, quod he, Rycharde Stafforde. And I am Hollande, quod the other, and I seke for the: one of thy servauntes hath slayne my best beloved squyer: and therwith drewe out his sworde, and strake Richarde Stafforde, so that he slewe hym and fell downe deed, whiche was great pytie; so he passed forthe and knewe nat well what he had done, but he sawe well one falle to the grounde. Sir Richarde Staffordes men were sore dismayd whan they sawe their maister deed; than they cryed, A, Holande, Holande, ye have slayne the sonne of therle of Stafforde, this wyll be hevy tidynges to the father whane he knoweth therof. Some of sir Johan of Holandes servauntes herde well these wordes, and sayde to their mayster, Sir, ye have slayne sir Rycharde Stafforde. Well, quod sir Johan Hollande, what than? I had leaver have slayne him than a worse: the better have I revenged the dethe of my squyer. Than sir Johan of Hollande wente streyght to saynt Johans of Beverley, and tooke the fraunchesse of the towne, and abode there styll, for he knewe well there wolde be moche ado in the hooste for the dethe of that knight, and he wyst nat what the kynge wolde saye or do in the mater. So to eschue all parylles, he tooke sentuary in the towne of saynt Johans of Beverley.

Tidynges anone came to the erle of Stafforde, howe his sonne was slayne by yvell adventure. Thane the erle demaunded who had slayne hym; and suche as were by hym whan he was slayne sayd, Sir, the kynges brother, sir Johan of Holande, dyd slee hym: and shewed hym the cause why, and howe it was. Ye may well knowe that he, that loved entierly his sonne, and hadde no mo but hym, and was a fayre

[1] *Devonshire.*

yonge knyght, and a couragyous, was marveylously sore dyspleased, and sente incontynent for all his frendes to have their counsayle, howe he shulde use hymselfe in the revengynge of his dethe. The moost wysest man of his counsayle sayd, Sir, to morowe in the mornynge shewe all the matter to the kyng, and desyre hym to have lawe and justyce. Thus they suaged somwhat his yre, and so passed that night; and the nexte mornynge Rycharde Stafforde was buryed in the churche of the vyllage therby, and at his buryeng were all those of his lynage, barons, knightes, and squyers, that were in that armye. And the obsequy done, the erle of Stafforde, and a threscore of his lygnage, mounted on their horses, and so came to the kynge, who was well enformed of that yvell adventure; and so the erle founde the kyng and his uncles toguyder, and a great nombre of knightes with them. Whan the erle came before the kyng he kneled downe, and all wepynge sayde with a soroufull harte, Sir, ye are kynge of Englande, and have solemly sworne to kepe Englande in all right, and to do justyce; sir, ye knowe how your brother without any tytell of reason hath slayne my sonne and ayre; sir, I requyre you do me right and justyce, or els ye shall have no worse enemy than I wyll be; and sir, I wyll ye knowe the dethe of my son toucheth me so nere, that and it were nat for brekynge of this voyage that we be in, I shulde bring the host into suche trouble, that with honour it shulde be amended, and so countervenged, that it shulde be spoken of a hundred yeres hereafter in Englande: but as nowe I wyll cease tyll this voyage into Scotlande be done, for our ennemyes shall nat rejoyse of the trouble of the erle of Stafforde. The kyng answered, Knowe for trouthe, that I shall do you justyce and reason, as far forthe as all my barones wyll judge: I shall nat fayle therof for no brother that I have. Than they of the erles lynage sayd, Sir, ye have sayd well, we thanke you therof. Thus the lynage of sir Richarde Stafforde was apeased, and so helde on their journey into Scotlande. And all the journey the erle of Stafforde made no semblant of the dethe of his sonne, wherin all the barons reputed hym right sage.

CAP. XII

Howe sir Johan Hollande slewe sir Rycharde Stafforde.

CAP. XIII

Howe the kyng of Englande caused to be distroyed the church of Meurous, in Scotlande: and howe the barons of Scotlande answered the admyrall of Fraunce, and devysed to leave Scotlande, and to let the Englesshemen alone.

THUS avaunsed forthe the kyng of Englande with sevyn thousande men of armes, and threscore thousand archers. All the strength of the realme of Englande was there, for it was sayd howe the admyrall of Fraunce wolde fight with them. And in dede he had great desyre and wyll so to do, for he sayde to the barons of Scotlande or they came forthe, Sirs, make your sommons to gette as moche strength as ye can, for if the Englysshemen come into Scotlande, I wyll surely fight with them. The Scottes sayd as than howe they were content therwith; howebeit, after they toke other advyse. The kynge of Englande passed forthe so farr, that he passed Duresme, and Newecastell, on the ryver of Tyne, and all the lande of Northumberlande, and so at laste came to Berwyke, wherof sir Mathue Redman was capitayne, who receyved the kynge joyfully. And the kyng taryed nat there long, but passed forthe over the ryver of Twede, and toke his lodgynge at the abbey of Mewrous, the whiche for all the warres that had been bytwene Englande and Scotlande had never no hurt nor domage. But as than it was clene brent and exiled, for it was thentent of the Englysshmen nat to retourne agayne into Englande, tyll they had distroyed all Scotlande, bycause they were fortifyed at that tyme by the Frenchemen. Whane the admyrall of Fraunce knewe that the kynge of Englande was passed the ryver of Twede, and was entred into Morlane, in Scotlande, than he sayd to the barons of Scotlande, Sirs, why do we sytte styll? let us go forthe and advyse our ennemyes, and fyght with them. It was shewed us or we came here, that if ye had out of Fraunce but one thousande of good men of armes, ye shulde be stronge

Howe the kyng of Englande caused to be distroyed the church of Meurous.

ynoughe to fyght with the Englysshemen: and I ensure you ye have mo than a thousande and fyve hundred crosbowes. And surely the knightes and squyers that be here in my company ar parfyte men of armes, and the floure of chivalrye, and wyll nat flye, but abyde suche adventure as God wyll sende you and them.

To these wordes answered the barones of Scotlande, who knewe so well the puissaunce of the Englysshemen, that they hadde no wyll to fight with them, wherfore they said, Sirs, we beleve well that ye and your company be chosen men, and of great valure; but sir, we have knowledge that all the power of Englande is here, there were never so many Englysshemen toguyder assembled as be nowe: and ye wyll, we shall bringe you into suche a place, that ye shall well se and advyse theym; and thanne if ye counsayle that they shall be fought with all, it shall nat be refused by us; for surely, sir, all suche wordes as ye have said, we dyde speke them. A Goddes name, quod the admyrall, let me ones se them. And so anon after, therle Duglas, and other barons of Scotlande, brought thadmyrall unto a highe mountayne, and under the hyll there was a passage, wherby thenglysshe host must passe; on this hyll was thadmyrall, with divers knightes of Fraunce in his company. And there clerely they sawe the Englysshemen and all their puissaunce, and ther they nombred them as nere as they coude, to be a sixe thousande men of armes, and threscore thousande archers, and other. Than all thynges consydred, they sayd howe they were nat of puyssaunce suffycient to fight with the Englysshemen, for they passed nat a thousande speares, and a xxx. thousande of all other men, and but yvell armed. Than the admyrall sayd to the erle Duglas, and to therle Morette, Sirs, ye saye but good reason, thoughe ye have no wyll to fight with the Englisshemen: therfore advyse you what ye wyll do: they are stronge ynoughe to over ryde all your countrey, and to distroy it. And sithe ye maye nat fight with them, I pray you bring me throughe your countre by some privye waye into Englande, if it maye be, and we shall make them warre in some other parte, as they do to us here. Sir, quoth the barones, that shall we well do, for we knowe dyvers wayes.

CAP. XIII

Howe the kyng of Englande caused to be distroyed the church of Meurous.

So thus the admyrall and the barones of Scotlande determyned to forsake Scotlande, and to lette the Englysshmen alone, and to go and entre into Wales, and to go to the cytie of Carlyle, and there to revenge them. So they lefte the Englysshemen, and toke the forestes and mountayns; and as they rode throughe out Scotlande, they distroyed all as they wente, and brent townes, vyllages, and maners, and caused all the men, women, and chyldren of the countre, to drive all their catayle, and to go into the wylde forestes, for they knewe well the Englisshemen wolde nat folowe them thyder; and the kynge of Scottes wente into the wylde Scottysshe, bicause he was nat in good poynt to ryde a warfare, and ther he taryed all the warre durynge, and lette his men alone. So the Frenchemen and Scottes passed the highe mountayns, bytwene Northumberlande and Scotlande, and entred into the lande of Wales,[1] and began to brenne villages, and dyd moche hurte in the Moubrayes landes, and the erle of Notyngham, the erle of Stafforde, and the barone of Grasoppe,[2] and the Mosgraves landes, and so they toke the waye to the cytie of Carlyle.

[1] *Cumberland.*

[2] *Greystoke.*

CAP. XIIII

Howe the kyng of Englande toke Edenborowe, the chefe cytie of Scotlande. And howe the duke of Lancastre was in purpose to retourne into Wales, to close in the Frenchmen and the Scottes; and what the Frenchemen and Scottes dyde in the sayd countre.

WITH[3] the admyrall of Fraunce was the erle of Graunt Pre, and the lorde of saynt Croix, sir Geffray of Charney, sir Wyllyam de Brume,[4] sir James of Boesme the lorde of Pegny,[5] the lorde of Hees, the lorde of Maruell,[6] sir Valeran of Ranevall, the barone Divery, the barone of Fountayns, the lorde of Croye, sir Brake of Braquemont, the lorde of Landury, and well a thousande speres of barons and knightes of Fraunce. And so they and the lordes of Scotlande rode in Northumberlande, bytwene

[3] [*With*] om. P.

[4] *Vienne.*

[5] *Jacques de Vienne sire d'Espagny.*

[6] *Moreuil.*

CAP. XIIII

Howe the kyng of Englande toke Edenborowe.

the mountayns on the fronters of Wales, brennyng townes, maners, and countrees; and the kyng of Englande, and his uncles, with barons and knightes of Englande and their companyes, entred into Scotlande, and brent and exyled on their parte. And so the kyng came and lodged in Edenborowe, the chefe towne in all Scotlande, and there taryed fyve dayes; and at his departyng it was set afyre and brent up clene; but the castell had no hurt, for it was stronge ynough and well kept. Whyle the kyng lay at Edenborowe, thenglysshmen rode abrode in the countre and dyd moche hurt, but they founde nother man nor beest abrode, for all was withdrawen into the forestes. In the Englysshe hoost were mo than a hundred thousande men, and well as many horse, wherof they had nede of great provisyon, and they founde none in Scotlande, but out of Englande there came to them great plentie, bothe by lande and by see. Than the kyng departed fro Edenborowe, and rode towarde Estruleyn,[1] a good towne, wherin there was a great abbey of blacke monkes, and moost commenly the kynges of Scotlande are there buryed; the kyng lay in the abbey; and at their departyng abbey and all was brent. Than they passed the ryver of Taxe, whiche ronneth to saint Johns towne.[2] At the castell of Strulyn there was a great assaute, but it wolde nat be wonne, yet the towne, and all the landes of the lorde Vercy,[3] they brent.

[1] *Stirling.*

[2] *Perth.*

[3] *Erskine.*

The entent of the duke of Lancastre, and of his bretherne, was to passe through Scotlande, and to pursue the Scottes and Frenchemen; for they knew well they were gone the waye to Wales, to go to Carlyle, and so they thought to enclose them bytwene Englande and Scotlande, and to fight with them at their advauntage: this purpose they thought veryly to holde. Thenglysshemen spredde abrode in Scotlande, there was no resystence agaynst them, for the countre was voyde of all men of warre: they were gone into Englande with the admyrall of Fraunce. And so there the Englysshmen brent the towne of saynt Johns, where as the ryver of Taxe[4] rynneth, and there is a good haven to sayle thens over all the worlde; and after they brent the towne of Donde; the Englysshmen spared nother abbeys nor minsters, but set all on fyre. And so they of the vowarde ran to Bredan,[5]

[4] *Tay.*

[5] *Aberdeen.*

CAP. XIIII

Howe the kyng of Englande toke Edenborowe.

whiche is a cytie on the see syde, it is on thentre of the wylde Scottysshe, but they dyd no hurte therto; howebeit, they of the countrey were right sore afrayed: they of that cytie thought to have assaute, for they feared leest the kynge of Englande wolde have come thyder, and have overron all that countre.

Thus in lykewise as the Englysshemen dyde in Scotlande, so dyd the Frenchemen and Scottes in Englande, in the marchesse of Northumberlande and Wales; and they brent a great countre as they went out of Northumberlande, and entred into Wales, whiche was otherwise called Wynslande,[1] and passed by the landes of the lordes of Graystocke, and Clyfforde, and brent in their voyage dyvers great villages, for they[2] were no men of warre in that countre as than, for they were all with the kyng. So they came to the cyte of Carlyle, in Wales, whiche was well closed with gates, walles, and dykes; it was a place that of auncyent tyme kynge Arthure loved right well, bycause that there were great woodes, and many dedes of armes there was done. There laye in Carlyle in garison sir Lewes Clyfforde, brother[3] to sir Wyllyam Nevell, and with hym sir Thomas Mosgrave, and Davy Holgrave, his sonne,[4] and sir Dongorise,[5] and dyvers other of the marchesse and fronters of Wales. For the cytie of Carlyle was chiefe cytie of all that countre, and it was nedefull for good men of warre to be ther, for whan the admyrall of Fraunce came thyder he assayled the cytie by great force, the whiche assaute was cruell and fierse. So thus before the cytie there were many noble dedes of armes done.

[1] Fr. *Westlant* or *Welslant.*

[2] *Sic.* P.

[3] *Loys de Cliffort frère au signeur.*

[4] *Messires Thomas Mousegrave et ses fils, David Houlegrave, etc.*

[5] *Aghorisses.*

CAP. XV

Howe the erle of Oxenforde brake the pursute that the kyng of England had thought to have made into Wales after the Frenchemen and Scottes; and howe the kynge retourned the same waye that he came: and howe the Frenchemen and Scottes determyned to retourne agayne into Scotlande.

THE kyng of Englandes uncles knewe well what waye the admyrall of Fraunce and the Scottes helde, and said how they thought it for the best to folowe theym, and to serche tyll they myght fynde them, and so to fight with them, sayeng howe they coude in no wyse escape them. In this purpose was the duke of Lancastre and his bretherne, and dyvers other of the great barons of Englande, and the moost parte of the commons of the hoost. And as than all their provisyon was come as well by lande as by see, and the kynge also was agreed to the same purpose. And than on a night the erle of Oxenforde, who was as than chiefe of counsayle with the kynge, and bare all the rule, the kyng trusted no man so moche, he turned the kyng clene fro his purpose, I can nat shewe you for what cause, but he enformed the kyng, as it was knowen after, and said, Sir, what thynke ye to do? Wyll ye folowe the way that your uncles hath counsayled? Sir, knowe for trouth, that if ye do so, ye shall never returne agayne, for sir, the duke of Lancastre desyreth none other thynge but that ye were deed, that he might be kyng: howe durst he counsayle your grace to go this wynter season into a strange countrey? Sir, I wolde nat counsayle you to passe the mountayns of Northumberlande, for there be mo than xxx. streightes and passages, that if ye were closed in them, ye shulde never come out agayne without daunger of the Scottes. Sir, putte nat youreselfe into that daunger whatsoever they saye to you; if the duke of Lancastre wyll go, lette hym go, and have the charge therof, but by my counsayle ye shall nat go. Sir, ye

CAP. XV

Howe the erle of Oxenforde brake the pursute.

have done ynough for this one tyme: youre father was never so farre within Scotlande, nor yet kynge Edwarde youre grauntfather; therfore, sir, this oughte to contente you: and save youre owne persone, ye be yonge and lusty, and suche there be that sheweth you fayre semblant, and loveth you but lytell. The kynge gave suche audyence to the sayeng of this erle, that it went never out of his mynde, as ye shall her after.

The next mornyng the lordes of Englande and their people ordred themselfe to departe out of Scotlande, and to folowe their ennemyes to fight with them, as it was concluded the night before. Than the duke of Lancastre came to the king his nephue, nat knowyng of the trouble and chaunge of his purpose. And the kynge beyng in his malencoly, assone as he sawe hym he sayd in great yre, Certesse uncle of Lancastre, ye shall nat attayne as yet to your entent: thynke you for all your wordes, that we wyll lese ourselfe folisshely? I wyll nat beleve you, nor yet your counsayle, for I se therby more domage than profyte to us and to our people. For if ye wyll make this voyage, do it and ye lyste; but as for me I wyll nat, for I wyll retourne into Englande the nexte waye, and all suche as love us wyll folowe us. Than the duke of Lancastre sayd, Sir, I shall folowe you, for ye have never a man in your company that loveth you so well as I do, and also my bretherne; and if there be any man wyll saye, except your persone, that I wolde any thynge otherwyse than well to you or to your people, here is my guage to the contrarie. So there was none that wolde speke any worde; and the kynge helde his peace and spake to other of his servauntes of other maters, and orderyng hymselfe to returne into Englande the same way that he came. And the duke of Lancastre departed fro the kynge right sore troubled in his mynde, and returned to his company, and made newe ordynaunce; for in the morning they had thought to have folowed the Frenchmen into the marches of Wales, but they dyde nat so, for they retourned the next waye into Englande. Lo, thus ye may se howe therle of Oxenforde, who was great with the kyng, brake all this voyage; and dyvers of the great lordes sayd that the kyng was yvell counsayled, seynge that all the

provisyon was come: for they sayd they might well have folowed the Scottes into Wales, for in their so doyng they shulde ever have drawen into Englande warde. And some persons that were wery of payne and travell said howe that all thynges considred they were better to retourne than to go any further, sayeng, howe a great provision must be had to serve suche an host, and howe it was yvell to passe the mountayns that wynter season, wherby they sayd they might rather lese than wynne. CAP. XV Howe the erle of Oxenforde brake the pursute.

Thus in this season brake up the jorney and army of Englande, and the kynge and his lordes retourned into Englande the same way they came, but they hadde distroyed the moost parte of the realme of Scotlande. These tidynges came to the admyrall of Fraunce, and to the Scottes; than they tooke counsayle what was best for them to do, and so concluded to retourne agayne into Scotlande, for their vitails began to fayle, and they were in a poore countrey; for they had distroyed the marches of Carlyle, and the landes of the barone of Clyfforde, the lorde Maubray, and the bysshoprike of Carlyle, but the cytie they coude nat wynne; and the Frenchemen sayd, howe they had brent and distroyed in the bysshoprike of Dyrhame, and Carlyle, that was better worthe than all the townes in Scotlande. So the Frenchmen and Scottes retourned into Scotlande the same waye they came, and whan they came into Scotlande they founde the countrey distroyed. But the people of the countre dyde sette but lytell therby, and said, howe with thre or four poles shortely they wolde make agayne their houses, for they had saved moche of their catayle in the forestes: but all that the Frenchemen tooke they were fayne to paye truely therfore, and dere. The Frenchemen were often in great daunger, for the Scottes and they were at many debates for vitayle; and the Scottes sayd howe the Frenchemen dyde them more domage than the Englysshemen had done. And whan it was demaunded of them, why so, they answered and sayde, howe the Frenchemen as they rode abrode, they beate downe and defoyled their cornes, as whete, barley, and otes, and wolde nat kepe the highe wayes, but rather ryde throughe the corne. Of whiche domages, they said, they wolde have of them a trewe recompence or they departed out of

CAP. XV
Howe the erle of Oxenforde brake the pursute.

Scotlande, and sayde howe they shulde nother have shyppe nor maryner to passe them over the see, without their leave and lycence; and dyvers other knightes and squyers complayned that their woodes were cutte downe by the Frenchemen to make their lodgynges.

CAP. XVI

Howe the Frenche lordes were in great paryll in Scotlande, and coulde nat fynde the meanes to passe over the see; and howe they shewed therles Duglas and Morette the hardnesse that they founde in that countre, and what answere they made to them.

WHAN the admyrall and his company were returned into Scotlande, and were come to Edenborowe, they had endured great payne, and as than they coude fynde nothing to bye for their money; wynes they had but lytell, and but small ale or bere, and their bredde was of barley or of otes, and their horses were deed for hunger, and foundred for povertie. And whan they wolde have solde them, they wyst nat to whom, nor ther was none wolde gyve them one penny, nother for horse nor for harnesse. The soudyers shewed to their capitayns howe they were delte withall, and they knewe it right well by experyence of themselfe, and their men said howe they coude nat long endure in that payne: they said that the realme of Scotlande was suche a countre nat to kepe an hoost in wynter, and if they shulde abyde there tyll somer they shulde be deed for povertie, and if they shulde departe asonder and serche for their lyveng abrode in the countre, they douted that the Scottes wolde slee them in their beddes. The admyrall consydred well all these thynges, and sawe clerely how it was likely to be as they sayde; howebeit, he was in purpose to abyde there all the wynter, and to sende to the Frenche kyng, and to the duke of Burgoyne, certifyeng them what case they were in, and to have newe provisyon of

money and vitayls, and to make a newe fresshe warre agayne the nexte somer into[1] Englande. Howebeit, he sawe well the yvels of the Scottes, and consydred the parell of his people; than he gave leave to departe all suche as wolde: but at their departyng was the mischefe, for the lordes coude fynde no passage for themselfe nor for their men. The Scottes wolde that such knightes and squyers as were but poore shulde departe, to thentent that they might rule the remnant at more ease, and sayd to the admyrall, Sir, lette youre men departe whan they wyll; but as for youreselfe, ye shall nat departe out of this countre tyll we be full satisfied of all suche charges as we have borne all this season for your army.

CAP. XVI
Howe the Frenche lordes were in great paryll in Scotlande.

[1] *to in* P.

These tidynges were right harde to the admyrall, and to the other barons of Fraunce, and shewed all the mater to the erle Duglas, and to the erle Morette, who besemynge were right sore displeased that they were so hardely dalte withall, and said: We be right sorie, for this dealynge wyll cause that never Scottysshe knight shall come into Fraunce to have good chere. And so these two erles spake to the other erles and barons of Scotlande, who said howe they had loste as well as they, Wherfore dissymule you with them, for we wyll be recompensed. Than these two erles sayd to the admyrall, and to the other lordes of Fraunce, howe they coude nat rule the other lordes nor the commons, wherfore it behoved them if they purposed to go out of the realme, to satisfy the commons and to restore agayne all their domages. And whan the admyrall sawe that it wolde be non otherwise, he thought he wolde nat lese the more for the lesse; he consydred well howe he was without conforte, and closed in with the see, and sawe howe the Scottes were of a wylde opynion, wherfore they were fayne to agre to the Scottes entent, and caused a crye to be made, that all maner of persons shulde come to the admyrall of Fraunce, and prove that any of his men had done them any domage, and he wolde recompence them to the value therof; whiche crye apeased the Scottes. And so the admyrall became dettour to them all, and sayd howe he wolde nat departe out of Scotlande, tyll all the complaynantes were fully satisfyed and payed. Than dyvers knightes and squiers hadde

CAP. XVI

Howe the Frenche lordes were in great paryll in Scotlande.

passage, and so retourned, some into Flaunders, and as wynde and weder wolde drive them, without horse and harnesse, ryght poore and feble, cursyng the day that ever they came in Scotlande, sayeng howe there were never men had so harde a voyage: wysshing that the French kyng had peace with Englande one yere or two, and so bothe kynges togider to go into Scotlande, utterly to distroy that realm for ever; for they said, they never sawe so yvell people, nor so false traytours, nor more folysshe people in feates of warre.

The admyrall of Fraunce by them that departed first wrote letters to the Frenche kyng and to the duke of Burgoyne, certifyeng them what case he was in, and how the Scottes delte with hym, and that if they wolde have hym to come home, they must sende thyder suche sommes of money as he was become dettoure, for to be payed to the knightes, squyers, and commens of Scotlande. For the Scottes sayd playnly, that the warre that they made into Englande at that season was for Fraunce, and nat for themselfe: therfore all suche domages as they have taken by that journey, they wolde be fully recompensed agayne or he departed out of Scotlande, to the whiche he had sworne and agreed. The Frenche kyng and his counsayle were bounde to redeme agayne the admyrall, for they sende hym thyder: thane the sommes of money were ordayned for, and the money payed by exchange in the towne of Bruges, so that the Scottes were contente. Than the admyrall departed out of Scotlande whan all thynges was payed, and so toke his leave of the kynge, who was in the wylde Scottysshe, and of the erles Duglas, and Morette, who conveyed them to the see syde; and so he toke shyppynge at Edenborowe, and had wynde at wyll, and arryved at Sluse, in Flaunders. Some knightes and squyers of his company returned nat agayne with hym: they thought they wolde se other countrees, and so they went into dyvers partes. The moost parte retourned into Fraunce so poore, that they were nat able to get themselfe any horse; some bought them horses, and specially the Burgonions, the Campenoise, the Barroise, and the Lorayns.[1]

[1] *et se montoient li aucun espéciaulment li Bourgignon li Campegnois . . . des chevaux des laboureurs que ils trouvoient sus les champs.*

CAP. XVII

Howe the admyrall enformed the Frenche kyng and his counsayle of the state of Scotlande, and howe the duke of Burgoyne had gret desyre to cause the Frenche kyng to make a jorney into Englande.

WHAN the admyrall was retourned into Fraunce to the yonge kynge Charles, and to the duke of Burgoyne, they made hym good chere, as it was reason, and demaunded of hym the condycion of the kynge and of the lordes of Scotlande. He sayd, howe the Scottes somewhat resembled the Englysshemen, bicause they be envyous over strangers; and moreover he sayde, that he had rather be erle of Savoy, or erle of Arthoyse, than to be kyng of Scottes, and sayd howe he hadde sene all the power of Scotlande in one daye togyder, as the Scottes sayd themselfe, and yet he never sawe togyder past fyve hundred speares, and about a xxx. thousande other men of warr, the whiche nombre agaynst Englisshe archers, or agaynst a thousande of other good men of armes, coude nat longe endure. Than the admyrall was demaunded, if he had sene the puyssaunce of Englande? He answered Yea; for on a day, quod he, whan I sawe the Scottes flye awaye for feare of the Englysshmen, I desyred them to bring me where as I might se and advyse the Englysshe hoost; and so they dyde: I was set in a straite passage where as they must nedes passe, and to my demyng they were a lx. thousande men of warre; and the Scottes sayd that it was all the power of England, and that there were none abydinge behynde. Than the kyng and his counsayle studyed a lytell, and at laste sayd, It is a great thyng of threscore thousande archers and of sixe or sevyn thousande men of armes. It maye well be, quod the constable, that they may make that nombre; but yet I had rather fight with theym at home in their owne marches than with halfe the nombre here, and so I herde my maister saye oftentymes whan I was yonge. By my faithe, quod the admyrall, if ye had ben there with a great nombre of men

CAP. XVII
Howe the admyrall enformed the Frenche kyng and his counsayle of the state of Scotlande.

of armes, as I supposed ye shulde have ben, I thynke we hadde famysshed all Scotlande. Thus the constable and admyrall devysed toguyder, and they sette the duke of Burgoyne in great desyre to make an armye into Englande.

Nowe let us leave a lytell to speke of them, and retourne to the busynesse of Flaunders.

It is of trouthe the duke of Burgoyn had ymagined in his mynde to make the nexte somer folowynge, whiche shulde be in the yere of oure Lorde God a thousande thre hundred fourscore and fyve, a great army, and to move the Frenche kyng as moche as he might, to go into Englande. And also the constable of France, who was an expert knight and well beloved in the realme of Fraunce, and had ben brought up in his youthe in the realm of Englande, he in lykewise gave counsayle to the same enterprise, and so dyde the lorde de la Tremoyle. And bycause that the duke of Berrey was in Poictou and Lymosyn, and knewe nothynge of this counsayle, the duke of Burgoyne, who was chiefe about the kynge, he had dyvers ymaginacions. He thought well, that as long as the warre contynued in Flaunders, the voyage over the see into Englande coude nat well be done; wherfore he was more troubled with them of Gaunte, and enclyned rather to their desyres. For he knewe well how they were alyed to thenglysshemen, and howe they had in Gaunte a knight of Englande, called sir Johan Bourchier, sent thyder by kyng Richarde to governe the towne and to counsayle theym. Howebeit, the Gauntoyse desyred to have peace, for they were so overlayd by the warre, that the moost ryche and notablest persones of the towne were nat maisters of their owne goodes, for the wylde soudyours governed them; and the wyse men sawe well, that at length it coude nat endure, but that they were all in great parell. And whan they were toguyder, dyvers often tymes marveyled howe they had endured so longe as they hadde done; they sawe well it was rather by force than by love, for Peter de Boyse alwayes parceyvered in his yvell opynions and domages, so that non durst speke before hym of peace: for if he knewe any persone, though he were never so sage, that spake of any treatie of peace, incontynent he was slayne and murthered without pytie or remedy.

This warre that they of Gaunte hadde maynteyned agaynst their lorde therle Loyes of Flaunders and the duke of Burgoyne had endured a sevyn yere, wherby ther was suche hurte done that it were great marveyle to reherse. The Turkes, Paynims, and Sarasyns sorowed that warre; for of trouthe the marchaundyses of eightene realmes arryved lightely at Sluse, and had their delyveraunce at Danne or at Bruges; whiche was all let by this warre. Than beholde and consydre if these farre parties sorowed this warre, moche more ought to be sorie the landes nexte adjoynynge therto; and there was none coude fynde any meane of peace: and so firste by the grace of God and divyne inspyracion, and by the humble prayers of good folkes, that God opened his eares, and had pytie of the poore people of Flaunders. And howe the peace came by them I shall shewe you fro poynt to poynt: as I shewed you before the begynning, so shall I declare the endynge. The begynnyng of the hate was by John de Bare, Johan Piet, Gylbert Mathue, Johan Lyon, and suche other, and I desyre you to herken therunto.

CAP. XVII

Howe the admyrall enformed the Frenche kyng and his counsayle of the state of Scotlande.

CAP. XVIII

How by the grace of God two burgesses of Gaunt enteredde to treate with the duke of Burgoyne for peace; and howe they gave the charge therof to a knight of Flaunders, and what aunswere the duke gave unto them.

IN this season in the towne of Gaunt was sir Johan Bourchyer, ruler there under the kynge of Englande, and Peter de Boyse dyd assyst hym, and susteygned all their yvell opinyons. Ther were some wyse men right sore displeased with the dyscencion bytwene their natural lorde and the towne; howbeit, they durst nat shewe forth the ententes of their hartes, but one of them to another, as they durst, secretely. For if Peter de Boyse had knowen that they had made any semblant of peace, they shulde have ben slayne without mercy, in lyke maner as he and Philyppe Dartvell had slayne sir Symon Bette and sir Gylbert Brute;[1] and to

[1] *de Grutere.*

CAP. XVIII

How two burgesses of Gaunt enteredde to treate with the duke of Burgoyne for peace.

kepe the people of Gaunt in feare, he had caused dyvers to be slayne in that season. In that season afore or Fraunces Atreman was putte oute of the towne of Dan by the Frenche kyng, and had distroyed the countrey of the Foure Maysters,[1] and that the kynge was returned agayne into Fraunce, as ye have herde before, they of Gaunt began to dout, and the notable men of the towne supposed that the nexte somer the Frenche kynge wolde retourne agayne and besiege the towne. But Peter de Boyse and suche other of his secte made but lyght therof, sayenge howe they wolde gladly se the kynge before their towne, for they sayd they had suche alyaunce with the kyng of Englande, that they shulde soone be ayded and conforted. In this season there was in the towne two valyant men of good lyfe and of good conversacyon, of a meane lygnage, nat of the best nor of the worst, whiche persones were sore displeased to se the discorde bytwene the towne and their naturall lorde; howebeit, they durste nat speke therof, for feare of Peter de Boyse. One of them was a maryner, and the other a bocher; the one called Roger de Cremyn,[2] and the other Jaques Dardenbourke.[3]

[1] *Quatre Métiers.*

[2] *Everwyn.*

[3] *Eertbuer.*

Bi these two persones the matter was first set awarke, and with them a wyse knight of Flaunders, called sir Johan Delle,[4] who tooke great payne therin; but he nor all the knyghtes in Flaunders coude never have brought it to passe, and it had nat ben by the meanes of these two persons. This knight, sir Johan Delle, was wel beloved in the towne of Gaunt, and came and wente at his pleasure without any suspection. These two forsayd persons had great displeasure of this debate, and spake prively togyder therof: and Roger said to Jaques, Wyll there be no remedy founde bytwene the towne of Gaunte, in the whiche we were borne, and is nowe in a harde case, and the duke of Burgoyn our naturall lorde? It were a great almes dede to make a peace; and they that so coude do, shulde have thanke of God, and great prayse of the worlde; for by that meanes the trouble shulde be ceased for ever. Ye saye trouthe, quoth Jaques; but it is a harde thynge to bringe about, for Peter de Boyse is a paryllous man; there is none dare speke of peace for feare of him. Well, quod Roger, yet it cannat be alwayes thus; at last it must nedes have an ende. Shewe me, quod Jaques,

[4] *Heyle.*

by what meanes it myght be, and I wyll gladly here you. Than, quod Roger, ye be the chefe of all the bochery, and moost beloved and dradde; ye might secretely shewe your corage and entent to them that be your frendes, and as ye se howe they enclyne, ye maye speke further, lytell and lytell. And on the other syde, I that am a maryner, and beloved with all maner of men, and I knowe some of their corages, howe that the warre displeaseth them, for they have great domage therby. And I shall shewe my mynde to some, who shall drawe other to the same purpose; and if we maye gette these two craftes of our accorde, the other craftes and other good people, suche as desyreth peace, wyll sone enclyne to us. Well, quod Jaques, and I shall speke gladly to them of my crafte, and speke you to yours. And as they devysed so it was done, ryght secretely and wisely; so that by the grace of the Holy Gost, Jaques Dardenbourc founde all tho of the bochery well enclyned to his wyll: and Roger on his part, by meanes of his fayre language, founde the maryners ryght well agreed therto, for their crafte was nere loste for lacke of usage.

CAP. XVIII

How two burgesses of Gaunt enteredde to treate with the duke of Burgoyne for peace.

Thus these two wyse men shewed eche to other howe they founde their people disposed to have peace. Than they said howe they must have some other sage persone to shewe all this matter to their lorde. At last they remembred them of a knight called sir Johan Dell; and so they went to hym and discovered to hym all their ententes secretly, and sayd, Sir, we have laboured so moche to them of our craftes, that they be well enclyned to have peace, so that our lorde the duke of Burgoyn wolde pardon them, and to graunt us our auncyent fraunchesses, according to the tenours of our charters and bulles. Than this sir Johan sayd, I shall gladly go and entreate hym. And so this knight went out of the towne to the duke, who was in Fraunce with the kyng, and he shewed hym all the forsaid mater, and dyd so moche with his fayre langage, that the duke enclyned to here what he wolde saye. And for the desyre that the duke had to make a voyage into Englande, the lightlyer he condiscended to have peace with them of Gaunt; and also his counsayle, sir Guy de la Tremoyle and sir Johan de Vyen, and the constable and the lorde Coucy, counsayled him to take peace with

CAP. XVIII
How two burgesses of Gaunt enteredde to treate with the duke of Burgoyne for peace.

them. Than the duke answered and sayd to sir John Delle, I am content to do in this mater as ye wyll devyse, and so retourne ye agayne to them that sent you hyder. And the duke demaunded of hym, if Fraunces Atreman were a counsayle of this treatie or nat. Sir, quod he, I thynke he knoweth nothynge therof; he kepeth the castell of Gavre, and I knowe nat if they that sent me hyder wolde that he shulde knowe it or nat. Tell them, quod the duke, that they speke hardely with him in the mater, for I thynke he wyll nat be agaynst me, for as I understande he desyreth gretly to be at peace with me. As the duke commaunded, so this knyght dyd, and retourned to Gaunt and brought these good tidynges: and than he went to the castell of Gavre to speke with Fraunces Atreman, and discovered all his entent secretely to hym. And whan Fraunces had a lytell studyed, merely he said, And if my lorde the duke wyll pardon them of Gaunt and upholde their fraunchesses, I shall nat be rebell agaynst hym, but be right diligent to have peace. Than this knight departed fro hym, and went agayne into Fraunce to the duke, and shewed hym all the mater. The duke herde hym gladly, and wrot letters, open, and close, sealed with his seale, to them of Gaunte. And this knyght with those letters retourned into Flaunders, and so came to Gaunt; but he shewed nat the letters as than, but he promysed Roger and Jaques to accomplysshe their ententes. Beholde nowe what parell this knight and they were in; for if sir Johan Bourchier and Peter de Boyse had knowen of the mater, all the worlde shulde nat have saved their lyves.

CAP. XIX

Howe these two foresayd burgesses assembled their frendes to accomplysshe their enterprise, and sente sir Johan Delle for the dukes letters of peace.

THANNE Roger and Jaques said to sir John Dell, Sir, ye shall come on Monday nexte comyng into this towne at nyne of the clocke, and bringe with you the dukes letters, and shewe them openly to the commons of Gaunte, wherby they shall gyve the more credence, for by that houre we wyll be lordes of the towne, or elles slayne in the quarell. Well, quod sir Johan, be it as ye saye; and so ended their counsayle for that tyme; and sir Johan Delle went out of the towne to accomplysshe his purpose. These other two wyse men studyed howe to bringe aboute their purpose, and so spake with some of their frendes and aldermen of the craftes, so that they had a great nombre of their accorde, and determyned that on the nexte Monday, at nyne of the clocke, they shulde departe out of their houses, with the banner of Flaunders before them, cryeng: The lyon of Flaunders, the lorde of the countrey, hath gyven peace to the good towne of Gaunte, and hath pardoned clerely all trespasses. For all this mater was sagely handeled, yet it came to the knowlege of Peter de Boise; and as soone as he knewe therof, he went streight to sir Johan Bourchyer, who was soveraygne capitayne ther under the kyng of Englande, and sayd to hym, Roger Cremyn and Jaques Dardenbourke wyll be to morowe by nyne of the clocke in the market place, with the banner of Flaunders before theym, and they wyll crye through the towne, The lyon of Flaunders, lorde of this countre, hath gyven peace to the towne of Gaunte, and hath pardoned all trespasses. What shall we do? The kynge of Englande shall nat be thane obeyed, without we prevent them, and putte them out of our jurysdyctions. What is best than to do? quod sir Johan Bourchier. Than aunswered Peter and sayd, It behoveth that to morowe in the mornyng we assemble in harnes all our men in the house

CAP. XIX
Howe these two foresayd burgesses assembled their frendes to accomplysshe their enterprise.

de la Vale, and than let us go throughe the towne, with the kynge of Englandes baner before us, and lette us crye also, The lyon of Flaunders, kynge of Englande, lorde of this countrey and towne of Gaunte. And whan we come into the market place, suche as be on our partie wyll drawe to us, and than lette us slee all the other treatours. It is well devysed, quoth sir Johan Bourchier; lette it so be done.

Nowe beholde, if God dyde nat moche for these two, Roger and Jaques; for they were enfourmed of Peter de Boyse devyse. And whan they knewe it, they were nat abasshed, but late in the evenynge they sente to all their frendes, that where as they shulde be the nexte daye in the market place by eight of the clocke, in any wyse they desyred them to be there by sevyn of the clocke: and that they dyde to prevent Peter de Boyse. To this poyntment every man was agreed, and on the Monday in the mornyng sir Johan Bourchyer and his company came to the house called de la Vale, and with hym a threscore; and Peter de Boyse came thyder with a xl.; there they armed them, and in good ordynaunce sette themselfe forwarde. And Roger and Jaques assembled their frendes togyder, and the moost parte of the aldermen and burgesses of Gaunt came to them: than they toke the erles baner and went through the towne, cryeng the foresaid crye; and suche as herde the crye, and sawe the aldermen of their craftes and the baners of the erle, they folowed after and came to the same company. And so by sevyn of the clocke they came to the market place, and there set themselfe in good order, with therles baners before them, and ever there came mo and mo to them. These tidynges came anone to sir John Bourchier and to Peter de Boyse, who were assemblynge of their people: than they went forthe with the baners of Englande before them, and as they wente they cryed their cryes before devysed. And so they came to the said market place, and there araynged themselfe before the other; but ever suche as came, the moost parte went to the erles baners; so that if a hundred came, fourscore went thyder; insomoche, that all the place was full of men of armes, and so they stode eche regardyng other.

Whan Peter de Boyse sawe howe the aldermen of the

CAP. XIX

Howe these two foresayd burgesses assembled their frendes to accomplysshe their enterprise.

craftes drewe to Roger and Jaques, he was sore abasshed, and douted greatly of his lyfe; for he sawe suche as were wont to serve hym flye awaye fro hym, and so prively he stale awaye oute of the prease, and hydde hymselfe for feare of dethe. And whan Roger and Jaques sawe that nighe all the people drewe to their parte, they were right joyouse and well conforted, and nat without good cause; for than they sawe well that the people of Gaunt wolde be in peace with their lorde. Than they departed with a certayne of their company, with the baners of Flaunders before them, and so came to sir Johan Bourchyer and to the Englysshemen, who were nat very sure of their lyves, whan they sawe them come towarde them. Than Roger demaunded of sir Johan Bourchier wher Peter de Boyse was, and what was his entent, and whyder he was their frende or enemy. The knight answered and said, I thynke Peter de Boyse be here by me. And whan he sawe that he was gone, he sayd, I knowe nat wher he is become; I went he had been in my company; but as for me, I am and wyll be servaunt to my naturall lorde, the kyng of Englande, who sende me hyder at your owne desyres, if ye well remembre. It is true, quod they; for if ye had nat ben desyred to come hyder by the towne of Gaunte, ye shulde have ben slayne; but for the honour of the kynge of Englande, who sende you hyder at our request, ye shall nat nede to feare, nor non of yours; ye shall have no hurte; we shall save you from all domages, and conducte you to the towne of Calayes; wherfore departe to your lodgynges peasably, and styrre nat for any thynge ye here or se; for we wyll be under the obeysaunce of oure naturall lorde the duke of Burgoyne, and wyll make no more warre. The knyght was ryght joyouse of that aunswere to be so quyte, and sayd, Sirs, sythe it wyll be none otherwyse, so be it; and I thanke you of that ye offre me at this tyme.

CAP. XX

Howe sir Johan Dell came to Gaunt to the markette place, where as Roger and Jaques and the aldermen of the cytie were, where and howe he delyvered them letters fro the duke of Burgoyne; and howe they of Gaunt sent to Turney, and of the confyrmacion of the peace and of the charters that were made therof.

THAN sir Johan Bourchier departed peasably fro the place with all thenglisshmen; and suche Gauntoyse as were in his companye fledde awaye and hydde themselfe. And anone after entred into the towne sir Johan Delle, and came into the market place with the dukes letters, sende thyder by the duke; and there they were opyned and reed to all the people, whiche gretlye pleased theym. Than Fraunces Atreman was sent for fro the castell of Gavre, who incontynent came to them and agreed to the treatie, and sayd it was well. And so therupon sir Johan Delle was sente agayne to the duke, who was as than at Arras, and shewed hym all the demeanour of the Gauntoyse, and howe that Peter de Boyse had as than no rule nor audyence in the towne, and howe that if he had ben founde he had been slayne; and howe that Fraunces Atreman dyde acquyte hymselfe valyantly and confyrmable to the peace. All these thynges pleased moche the duke, and so he sealed a charter of peace and a truse to endure untyll the firste day of Januarye, and in the meane season a counsayle to be had for that matter in the cytie of Tourney. And all this sir John Delle brought agayne with hym to Gaunte, wherof all the people had great joye, for they shewed than howe they had great desyre to have peace. All this season sir Johan Bowchier and the Englysshemen and Peter de Boyse were styll in Gaunte, but there was no man wolde do any thynge after them. And Peter de Boyse lyved styll in rest, with that he sware that he shulde nat procure nor move any thynge that shulde cause any warre bytwene the

towne and their naturall lorde. And thus was done by the meanes of Fraunces Atreman, who spake for hym; wherby Peter lyved in reste, for they knewe well that Peter alwayes helde with their opynions, and was a true and a good capitayne. CAP. XX

Howe sir Johan Dell came to Gaunt to the markette place.

This truce durynge, they of Gaunte apoynted theym that shulde go to Tourney to conclude this treatie, and Fraunces Atreman was sent thyder as chiefe, bycause he was a man reasonable and well knowen with all lordes; and with hym wente Roger Cremyn and Jaques Dardenbourke. And they came to Turney in the utas of saynt Andrewe, with a fyftie horse, and were all lodged toguyder at the sygne of the Samon, in the strete of saynt Brise; and the v. day of Decembre thyder came the duke of Burgoyne and the duchesse his wyfe, and the lady of Nevers their doughter, and they entred into Turney at the gate towarde Lyle. And agaynst their entrynge, the Gauntoyse that were there issued out to mete with theym. And whan they sawe the duke, they enclyned theymselfe on their horses bare heeded: and the duke passed lightely by theym, for he made haste to mete with the duchesse of Brabante, who was comynge to the cytie by the gate of Malynes, and she was lodged in the bysshoppes palays. So thus began the treatie bytwene the duke and the towne of Gaunt, and sir Johan Delle toke great payne to go and come bytwene the parties; and at the desyre of the duches of Bourgoyne and of the lady Nevers, the duke forgave all his yvell wyll, and the peace was made, cryed, accorded, written, and sealed bytwene the parties, in maner as foloweth:

Hereafter ensueth the tenoure of the letters and charters of peace.

Philyppe, the sonne of Fraunces duke of Burgoyn, erle of Flaunders, Artoyse, and Palatyne,[1] lorde of Selynes, erle of Rethell and Malynes, and Margarete, duchesse and countesse of the sayd countreis, to all them that heareth or seyth this present writynge, we sende gretynge. We wyll that it be knowen, that oure welbeloved subjectes, aldermen and commons of our good towne of Gaunte, hath right humbly requyred our lorde the kyng and us, that we shulde have

[1] *d'Artois et de Bourgongne, palatins.*

CAP. XX

Howe sir Johan Dell came to Gaunt to the markette place.

pytie and mercy on them, and to pardone all offences by theym, or any for theym, done to the kynge or to us: and for pytie and compassyon of our said subjectes, by our letters we have pardoned them. And also we have confyrmed their auncyent privyleges, frauncheses, customes, and usage, in case that they wyll playnly obey the kynge and us. Whiche pardone they of Gaunte and their parte takers have receyved right humbly by suche letters and messangers as they sent to us in great nombre to Turney, and they have clene renounsed all debates and warres, and with good hartes are returned to true obeysaunce to the kyng and to us, promysyng from hensforthe to be true frendes and faithfull to the kynge and to us; to the king as their soveraygne lorde, and to us as their naturall lorde, by reason of Margarete our wyfe as their naturall lady and heretour. Wherfore the kynge and we have receyved to our grace our said subjectes, and have gyven them letters of pardon and pure remyssion, with restytucyon of their privyleges, customes, and usages, the whiche more at large appereth by the content of oure letters. After whiche pardons our sayd subjectes have made to us dyvers supplycacions, the whiche we have receyved, and have caused them by good delyberacyon to be sene, vysited, and examyned by our counsayle, the whiche well sene, and for the commen profite of all the countre, and to eschue all discensions that herafter might fall, of our speciall grace, and by the contemplacion of our good subjectes, we have ordred and determined in maner as foloweth: Firste, whereas they desyre that we shulde confyrme their auncient privileges of Tourney, Audenarde,[1] Grauntmont, Meule,[2] Teremounde, Ruplemount, Abste,[3] Atharcle,[4] Breuelies,[5] Donse, and of the chateleyns and playne countrey parteyning to the same townes: we have ordayned that the inhabytauntes of the sayd townes shulde come to us, bringyng with them their privyleges, which shal be sene by our counsayle; and that done, we shall so do, that our said subjectes of Gaunt and they of the sayd good townes shall by reason holde them content; and if any of the sayde privyleges be lost by any case, fortune, or otherwyse, we shall make good reformacion therof. Also whereas they have desyred for the course of marchaundyse, we have con-

[1] *Dauduarde* P.
[2] *Nevele.*
[3] *Alost.*
[4] *Axel.*
[5] *Biervliet.*

sented that they have all their auncyent course, payeng their custome of olde tyme contynewed. Also whereas they desyre, that if any of the inhabytauntes of our towne of Gaunt, or any of their adherentes, happe to be arrested in tyme to come in any countre out of the countrey of Flaunders, for the occasyon of the debates and foresayd discensyons, that than we shulde cause theym to be released and to lyve in reste: and in that case we have graunted, that if any of them be arrested for that cause, we shall ayde, conforte, and defende them with our power, agaynst any that so shulde trouble them, as we be bounde to defende our good and true subjectes. Also they requyre, that all suche prisoners as we have, whiche were of their partie, that they shulde be delyvered; we have ordayned and do ordayne, that all suche prisoners, if they be putte to their raunsome, that they pay their raunsome and be delyvered, payeng also their reasonable expenses: so that if any of these prisoners or their frendes or kynne have in their handes any fortresses of ours kepyng it agaynst us, first that they delyver suche forteresses, into oure handes, and also in lykewise that they delyver all suche prisoners as they have in their handes.

Howe sir Johan Dell came to Gaunt to the markette place.

Moreover by our habundant grace we have ordayned and do ordayne, that all suche as by the occasions of the debates and discencyons that were laste in oure countrey of Flaunders, and have ben banisshed out of our good townes of Bruges, Ipre, the countre of Francke, and other townes and places, and also, all suche as hath ben banysshed by justyce of the lawe out of Gaunt, or put out or judged without lawe and be absent: that all suche be restored and maye retourne and dwell in the sayd towne, and all suche as hath taken their parte, to be restored agayne at their pleasure, to suche places as they came fro; and whan they entre agayne into any of the sayd townes, that they swere to our offycers to be true to us, and to kepe the peace and suretie of the sayde townes, nor that they beare any yvell wyll prively nor aparte to any of the inhabytauntes of the sayd townes, nor to do them any yvell or domage; and that all suche as entre into any towne shall swere to obey the kynge and us; and suche as be absent the tyme hereafter lymitted, shal be restored to all the fees, houses, rentes, and herytages, whersoever they

CAP. XX
Howe sir Johan Dell came to Gaunt to the markette place.

be, natwithstandyng any forfayture done by them, by the occasyon of the sayd discensyons, but they to enjoye them as in their primer state. Also if any of the sayd inhabytauntes of the towne of Gaunt, or any of their adherentes be out of the towne, and be in the countreis of Brabant, Holande, Zelande, or in Cambresis, or in the bysshoprike of Liege, that they come and submytte themselfe to us, or to suche as we shall appoynte, within the space of two monethes after the publycacion of this peace; that than they to enjoye the pardone and foresaid grace: and suche as be in the realme of Englande, or in Fryselande, Almayne, and other on that syde the great see, they to come and submytte theymselfe within foure monethes after notifycacion of this peace: and suche as be beyonde the great see, at Rome or at saynt James, they to have respyte of their submissyon a hole yere after knoledge of this peace; and than they thus sworne, may enjoye this our sayd pardone: and also all suche as hath ben banysshed or judged out of our sayd towne by the sayde occasyon, that they be restored to their fees, houses, rentes, and herytages, whansoever they wyll at their pleasure. As for movable goodes that hath ben taken of eyther partie, there shal be no restytuicion made therof, but every partie to be quyte therof. Also if any oblygacions be made for any movable goodes, taken for the said occasyons for dischargynge of their conscyence, to render them agayne: and all suche houses as shall be delyvered agayne to the owners, that nothing be taken out of theym, nayled or pynned with yron or leed, and fro thensforthe the revenewes to be payable to the owners. And also though it be so, that some of our subjectes of Gaunt have done homage for suche landes as they holde to other lordes than to the true owners, wherby their landes myght be forfited:[1] natwithstandynge, we of our specyall grace, wyll that they shall styll enjoye suche landes in doynge to us homage for that they holde of us without, and to other meane for that they holde of them. And also we graunt all disenherytaunces and recognysaunces done by the lawe bytwene any partes to stande, so that our subjectes of Gaunt, aldermen, counsaylours, and commens of the same, and their adherentes, by their owne good wylles, renounce all their alyaunces, promises, oblygacions made,

[1] *fortifyed* P.

CAP. XX

Howe sir Johan Dell came to Gaunt to the markette place.

and homage that they or any of them have done or made to the kyng of Englande, or to any of his deputies or officers, or to any other that be no good wyllers to the kyng or to us, and fro hensforwarde to swere to be true to the kyng as to their soveraygne lorde, and to his successours kynges of Fraunce, and to us as their ryght lorde and lady, and to our successours erles of Flaunders, and to us do servyce as true subjectes ought to do to their lorde and lady: as to defende our persons, honours, herytages, and rightes, and to lette, to their powers, all suche as wolde the contrarye, and to gyve knowledge therof to us or to our officers, savynge alwayes their privyleges and fraunchesse. Also to the entent that oure subjectes of the towne of Gaunt shulde be alwayes in good peace and true obeysaunce to the kyng, and to us and to our heyres erles of Flaunders, and to eschewe all discensyons and debates that myght fall, we wyll and ordayne, that all these sayde artycles be surelye kepte without breakynge; and straitely we commaunde all our subjectes, on payne to lese that they maye lese to us, that for any occasyon of the sayd debates or discensyons, that they do nothing openly nor prively in worde nor dede, that shulde be prejudiciall to them of Gaunt, nor to rebuke or to gyve theym any yvell language. And if any do contrarye to these sayde artycles, or do any injury or domage to theym of Gaunte, or to any of their alyes, or any that helde on our partie, by occasyon of any of the sayd debates or discencyons do any suche offence, that by suche knowledge of the lordes offycers, and by the lawes to whom it appertayneth, that the dede be cremenell, the doers, ayders, and counsayle kepars withoute fraude be punysshed by their bodyes and goodes, as brekers of the peace, as well by justyce of our officers as of our lordes officers, by the lawes of the countrey to whom it apparteyneth, and reasonable satisfactyon made to the partie hurte, of the goodes of the trespaser, and the resudue to us or to the lordes of the soyle, savyng ever to all townes their privyleges. And if any of our burgesses of the sayd towne of Gaunt, though they be nat banysshed by the lawe, and if they be gyltie for breakynge of this peace, and thynke by reason of the privyleges of olde tyme therby to be saved, and nat to lese any of their goodes: yet nowe we wyll by this

CAP. XX

Howe sir Johan Dell came to Gaunt to the markette place.

present treatie that they shall lese their goodes, and the partie hurte satisfyed therof, as is said before, and the resydue to come to the right heyres, as thoughe they were deed, in all other cases savyng the privyleges of the towne of Gaunte. And if suche yvell doers can nat be taken, thane they to be banysshed and deprived fro their goodes. Also if there be any that in wordes or otherwyse do contrarye to this our said ordynaunce, and come to the knowledge of our offycers, we wyll that all suche be punysshed and to make amendes, in suche maner that they maye be ensample to all other; the punysshment to be done by the offycers of the lawe, and by them to whom the right apparteyneth, natwithstandynge any privyledge or fraunchesse of any place. Also if any persone of the churche do agaynst this ordynaunce, than he to be delyvered to his ordynarie, he to take suche vengeaunce on him as a breaker of the peace, and as the case requireth. Also we wyll that this sayd peace bytwene us and oure subjectes be cryed and publysshed solempnely in this towne, and in all other townes of Flaunders; and herafter if any dout be made in any of the sayd artycles or cyrcumstaunces therof, we shall than declare and cause to be declared by our counsayle every thynge, that all parties shall of reason holde them content. And we aldermen, burgesses, and commonties of the towne of Gaunt, for us and all oure adherentes, we receyve and have receyved humbly the sayd graces, pardons, and benefytes to us done by kyng Charles our soverayne lorde, and by the said duke and duchesse, erle and countesse of Flaunders, our naturall lorde and lady; of the whiche graces and pardons we thanke with all our hertes the kyng our soverayne lorde and his successours, and our naturall lorde and lady aforsayd erle and countesse of Flaunders. And we make and shall make promyse, as trewe and faythfull subjectes ought to do, and we shall kepe and defende their personages and honours; in wytnesse of the whiche thynges, we the sayde duke and duchesse have putte our seales to these present letters; and we shyriffes, aldermen, burgesses, and commons of the sayde towne of Gaunt, have also putte to the seale of the towne of Gaunte. And moreover, we the sayd duke and duches praye and requyre oure welbeloved aunte, duchesse of Lusenbourcke and of

CAP. XX

Howe sir Johan Dell came to Gaunt to the markette place.

Brabant, and our right welbeloved brother the duke Aubert of Bavyer, and also the aldermen, commontie, and counsayle of Gaunt, and also we the duke and duchesse of Burgoyne, and our aldermen, counsayle, and commonties of Gaunt, requyre and praye the barones and nobles of the countrey of Flaunders hereafter folowynge, and to all good townes, as Bruges, Ipre, the terrouer of Franke, and the good townes of Malynes and Anvers, that what for the well of the peace, and knowledge of suretie of the foresaid thynges, and of eche of them, we desyre them to sette to their seales. And we Jane, by the grace of God duchesse of Lusenbourcke, of Brabaunt, and of Lancbourcke,[1] and we duke Aubert of Bavyere, baylye and governour of the countrey of Heynaulte, Hollande, and Zelande, and of the seignorie of Frise, and we Wyllyam, eldest sonne of the erle of Namure, lorde of Sluse, and Hughe lorde Dantoyne, chateleyne of Gaunt, and John lorde of Guystelles and of Harnes, Henry de Bures, lorde of Dysquemewe and of Haure, Johan lorde of Gonuseberge[2] and of Jentoyse,[3] Arnolde of Jouste[4] lorde of Estornay, Philyppe lorde Daxalle, Loyse[5] of the Halse bastarde of Flaunders, Gyrarde of Rasenhen lorde of Baserode, Gaultier lorde of Halme,[6] Philyppe of Namure[7] lorde of Eque, John Villayne lorde of saynt Johans withoute, the chatellayne of Ipre,[8] and Loyse lorde of Lambres knight, and we the borowe maysters and aldermen of Bruges and Ipre, we Philyppe of Redehen,[9] Mountferant aldermen of Mountfranke, and of Mountamare knight shyrife of terrouer of Franke,[10] for and in the name of the sayd terrouer, whiche hath no seale, and the commons and counsayls of the townes of Malynes and Anvers, have by the foresayd prayers and request for the welth of the peace, and in wytnes of the trouthe, and for more suretie of the sayd thynges, and of eche of them, we have putte to the seales of the sayd townes to this present treatie, made at Tourney the eyghtene day of the moneth of Decembre, in the yere of grace a thousande thre hundred fourscore and fyve.

After the makyng of these present letters and charters of peace, and engrosed and sealed, they were publysshed, and the duke had the one parte of them, and the towne of Gaunt the other parte. Than Fraunces Atreman and the commons of the towne of Gaunt beyng there, toke their

1 *Limbourg.*
2 *Grimberghe.*
3 *Gruthuse.*
4 *Gavre.*
5 *Loïs, dit le Hasle.*
6 *Halewyn.*
7 *Mamines.*
8 *Jehans Villain, sires de Saint Jehan à la Pierre; Jehans d'Outre, chastelains d'Yppre.*
9 *Zeldeghien.*
10 *Montfranc de Essines, Phelippes de Montkanart, chevaliers, eschevins dou terroir de Franc.*

CAP. XX

Howe sir Johan Dell came to Gaunt to the markette place.

leave humbly of the duke and of the duchesse, and also of the lady of Brabant, thankyng her a thousande tymes of her ayde and helpe in makynge of their peace, and offred themselfe ever to be redy to do her servyce. The good lady thanked them right swetely, and exhorted them ever to kepe fermely the peace, and so to styrre the people, that they never rebell agaynst their lorde and lady. So than every body departed and went home to their owne: the duke and duches retourned to Lyle, and they of Gaunt returned to their towne. Whan Peter de Boise sawe the sure confyrmacion of the peace, and that all the people of Gaunt had great joye therof, and were in mynde and wyll never to rebell more nor to have warr, he was therof greatly abasshed, and had dyvers ymaginacyons, wheder he shulde abyde stylle in Gaunte, for all thynges was pardoned by the dukes charter, sealed with his seale, or elles to departe into Englande with sir Johan Bourchier and with the Englysshemen, who apparelled them to go; and all thynges consydred, he thought in hymselfe that he coude nat trust this peace nor to abyde in Gaunte. And whan Fraunces Atreman sawe that he wolde nat abyde, he sayd to him, Peter, what thynke ye to do? Why do ye feare? Ye knowe well, that by this treatie, sealed by the duke, that for any thyng that is past, there shall never chalenge be made to you for that. Than Peter answered and sayd, Yea, in letters written lyeth nat all true pardons; some pardoneth well by mouthe and gyveth writyng therof, but yet the hatered remayneth styll in their corages: as for me, I am a man of the towne of Gaunt, of small reputacion and of base lynage, and to my power I have susteyned the rightes, lyberties, and francheses of the towne. Thynke you that within this two or thre yere the people wyll remembre it? I feare nay. There be great lygnages in the towne of Gylbert Mathewes and his bretherne; they wyll retourne; and they were enemyes to my mayster, Johan Leon: gladly I wolde never se theym, nor the parentes of sir Gylbert Brute, nor of sir Symon Bette, who were by me slayne; wherfore in this case I can nat be sure of my lyfe. And as for you, Fraunces Atreman, wyll you abyde amonge suche a sort of treatours, who have so falsely broken their othe and promyse to the kynge of

CAP. XX

Howe sir Johan Dell came to Gaunt to the markette place.

Englande? I swere to you truely ye wyll repente it, for it wyll coste you youre lyfe. I can nat saye, quod Fraunces; but I truste so well in this peace, and in the duke and duchesses promyse, that I wyll jeoparde to abyde.

Than Peter de Boyse made a request to the aldermen and counsayle of the towne, sayeng, Fayre lordes, to my power I have truely served the towne of Gaunt, and have ben in many an harde adventure in that behalfe; and for all the good servyce that I have done, in the name of rewarde, I aske none other thynge, but that I maye be savely conducted with sir Johan Bourchier, whome ye sende into Englande: this is all that I demaunde. And they all aunswered, it shulde be done: and as for sir Roger Emeryne and Jaques Dardenbourcke, by whome this treatie was firste moved, they were ryght gladde of his departure, and so were dyvers other notable persones in Gaunt, suche as loved the peace. So thus Peter de Boyse departed frome Gaunte, in the company of sir Johan Bourchier, and toke with hym all the substaunce that he hadde; he was well furnysshed of golde, sylver, and jeowelles: and sir Johan Delle dyde conducte them under the dukes salve conducte to the towne of Calais, and than the Gauntoise retourned. Sir Johan Bourchier and Peter de Boyse, as soone as they might, they wente into Englande, and came to the kyng and to his uncles, and shewed them the dedes of theym of Gaunte. The kynge made Peter de Boyse good chere, and so dyde the duke of Lancastre and his bretherne, and gave hym great thanke in that he was come to them, and had abandoned theym of Gaunte to come into Englande. The kyng incontynent retaygned hym, and gave hym an hundred marke sterlynge, yerely to be payed out of the staple of the wolles in London. Thus Peter de Boyse abode styll in Englande, and the good towne of Gaunt in peace. And sir Roger Emeryn was made chefe alderman of the flete of Gaunte, whiche was a good offyce and of great profyte, whan the shyppes myght have their course with marchaundyse; and sir Jaques Dardenbourc was made chefe ruler of all the meane craftes in the towne of Gaunte, whiche also was a great and a profytable offyce.

CAP. XXI

Howe sir Johan Froyssart, auctour of this cronycle, departed out of Fraunce, and wente to the erle of Foiz, and the maner of his voyage.

IT is longe now sith I made any mencion of the busynesses of farre countreis, for the busynesses nerer home hath ben so fresshe, that I lafte all other maters to write therof; howebeit, all this season valyant men, desyring to avaunce themselfe in the realme of Castell and Portyngale, in Gascoyne, in Rouergue, in Quercy, in Lymosyn, and in Bygore, every day they ymagined by what subteltie they coulde gette one of another by dedes of armes, or by stealyng of townes, castels, and fortresses. And therfore I, John Froyssart, who have taken on me to cronycle this present hystorie, at the request of the highe renomed prince sir Guy of Chatellon, erle of Bloyse, lorde of Davesnes, Beauvoys, Destonhon,[1] and of la Guede,[2] my soverayne mayster and good lorde, consydring in myselfe howe there was no great dedes of armes likely towarde in the parties of Picardy or Flaunders, seyng the peace was made bytwene the duke and them of Gaunt, and it greatly anoyed me to be ydell, for I knewe well that after my deth this noble and highe hystorie shulde have his course, wherin dyvers noble men shulde have great pleasure and delyte; and as yet I thanke God I have understandyng and remembraunce of all thynges passed, and my wyt quicke and sharpe ynough to conceyve all thinges shewed unto me, touchyng my princypall mater, and my body as yet able to endure and to suffre payne: all thynges consydred, I thought I wolde nat lette to pursue my sayde first purpose; and to thentent to knowe the trouthe of dedes done in farre countries, I founde occasion to go to the highe and mighty prince Gascone, erle of Foiz and of Byerne. For I knewe well, that if I might have that grace to come into his house, and to be there at leysar, I coude nat be so well enformed to my purpose in none other place of the worlde; for thyder resorted all maner of knightes and strange squyers, for the great noblenes of the sayd erle. And

[1] *Schoonhove.*
[2] *Goude.*

CAP. XXI

Howe sir Johan Froyssart departed out of Fraunce.

as I ymagined, so I dyd, and shewed to my redoubted lorde the erle of Bloyes myne entent; and he gave me letters of recommendacions to therle of Foiz. And so long I rode without parell or domage, that I came to his house called Ortaise, in the countre of Berne, on saynt Katheryns day, the yere of grace M. thre hundred fourscore and eight. And the sayd erle, as soone as he sawe me, he made me good chere, and smylyng sayd howe he knewe me, and yet he never sawe me before, but he had often herde spekyng of me; and so he reteyned me in his house to my great ease, with the helpe of the letters of credence that I brought unto hym, so that I might tary there at my pleasure. And there I was enfourmed of the busynesse of the realmes of Castyle, Portyngale, Navar, and Aragon; yea, and of the realme of Englande, and countre of Burbonoyse and Gascoyne. And the erle himselfe, if I dyd demaunde any thyng of him, he dyde shewe me all that he knewe, sayenge to me howe thystorie that I had begon shulde hereafter be more praysed than any other, and the reason he sayd why, was this: howe that l. yere passed there had been done more marveylous dedes of armes in the worlde than in thre hundred yere before that. Thus was I in the court of the erle of Foiz, well cherysshed and at my pleasure; it was the thyng that I moost desyred to knowe newes, as touchyng my mater; and I had at my wyll lordes, knightes, and squiers, ever to enforme me, and also the gentle erle hymself. I shall nowe declare in fayre langage all that I was enfourmed of, to encrease therby my mater, and to gyve ensample to them, that lyste to avaunce themselfe. Here before I have recounted great dedes of armes, takynge and sautynge townes and castelles, and batayles and harde encountrynges, and yet hereafter ye shall here of many mo, the whiche by the grace of God I shall make just narracion.

Ye have herde here before, that whan the lorde Edmonde, sonne to the kynge of Englande, erle of Cambridge, was departed fro the realme of Portingale, and had take shypping at Lusenbourke,[1] and howe he had made covynant that Johan, . . .* to recover our herytage. So thus we be come

[1] *Lisbon.*

* Pynson's text is here defective. What is wanting may be supplied as follows:—'That John his son, whom he had of the lady Isabel of Spain,

CAP. XXI
Howe sir Johan Froyssart departed out of Fraunce.

hyder, paradventure nat so many as ye wrote for; but suche as I have here be of suche good wylles, that they dare well abyde the adventure of batayle agaynst all those that be nowe present with the erle of Trystmare, and surely we shall nat be content with you, without we have batayle. Suche wordes or lyke the erle of Cambridge shewed to the kyng of Portingale or he departed, the whiche kyng herde them well; howebeit, he never durste gyve batayle on the playne of Salvence,[1] whane he was before the Spaynierdes, nor they of the countre wolde nat gyve hym counsayle therto, but sayde to hym, Sir, the puyssaunce of the kyng of Castell is as nowe so great, and that by fortune or misadventure that ye lese the felde, ye lese than youre realme for ever; wherfore it were better ye suffred, than to do a thyng wherby ye shulde have domage and parell. And whan the erle of Cambridge sawe it wolde be none otherwyse, he retourned to Lusenborne, and aparelled his shyppes, and toke leave of the kyng of Portyngale, and so toke the see with his company, and wolde nat leave Johan his sonne in Portingale with the kyng, nor with the lady that he shulde mary withall: the chylde was but yonge: and so thus the erle retourned into Englande. Thus was the dealyng as than of the journey in Portyngale.

[1] *Olivenza.*

The erle of Cambridge retourned into Englande on the maner as ye have herde before, and shewed his brother the duke of Lancastre all the dealynge of kynge Ferant of Portyngale. The duke was sorie therof, for he sawe therby that his conquest of Castell was farre of, and also kyng

daughter to king Dampeter, should marry the lady Beatrice, daughter of king Ferrant of Portugal: the earl was ill content with king Ferrant because he had been in the field fifteen days against king John of Castile, and had not fought with him, but had made agreement with king John against the earl's will, whereof it greatly displeased him. He said to king Ferrant, when the treaty was shaping, "Sir king, regard well what you do, for we are not come here to eat and drink, to range and rob, but to make war upon the son of the bastard, the earl of Trastamar, that wrote himself king of Castile, and to reconquer our right heritage which John of Trastamar holds and possesses. And you know that my brother and I we have in marriage the right heiresses of the kingdom of Castile, and daughters to the good king Dampeter, who was your cousin-german; and to aid us in reconquering it, as every good lord should favour justice and not wrong, you wrote and sent to us in England by your knight here present that we should bring hither the number of two thousand lances and four thousand archers, and with the aid that you would afford us you had good hope to recover our heritage."'

CAP. XXI

Howe sir Johan Froyssart departed out of Fraunce.

Richarde of Englande had about him counsayle that were nat after his apetyte, and specially therle of Oxenforde, who was chefe in the kynges favour. This erle dyd set as great trouble bytwene the kyng and his uncles as he might, and said oftentymes to the kyng: Sir, if ye wyll folowe the myndes of your uncles, the duke of Lancastre, and the erle of Cambridge, it shall well cost all the treasure in Englande, about their warre in Spayne, and yet they shall conquere nothyng. It were better for you to kepe your owne people and your money, than to spende it abrode where as ye can gette no profyte, and kepe and defende your owne herytage, wherin ye have warre on all sydes, as well by Fraunce, as by Scotlande, rather than to enploy your tyme in other countreis. The yonge kynge enclyned lightely to his wordes, for he loved him with all his hart, bicause they had been norisshed up toguyder. And this erle had great alyaunces with dyvers lordes and knightes of Englande, for he dyde all his maters by the counsayle of sir Symon Burle, sir Robert Trevelyen, sir Nicholas Brambre, sir Johan Beauchampe, sir Johan Salisbury, and sir Mychaell de la Pole. And also sir Thomas Tryvet, and sir Wylliam Helmon, were named to be of the same parte: so that by the dyfferens and discorde bitwene the kynge and his uncles, and the nobles and commons of the realme, many yvels came therby in Englande, as ye shall here hereafter in this hystorie.

It was nat longe after that the erle of Cambridge departed out of Portyngale, but that the kynge Feraunt felle sicke, and so contynued a hole yere and dyed, and than he had no mo chyldren but the quene of Spayne. Than kynge Johan of Castell was enformed of his deth, and howe that the realm of Portyngale was fallen into his handes, and howe that he was ryghtfull heyre therunto, by reason of the dethe of the kynge. So ther was dyvers counsayls kept on that mater, and some sayd, howe that the Portingales were so harde harted people that they wolde nat be had without it were by conquest. And indede whan the Portyngales sawe howe they were without a kyng, than they determyned by counsayle to sende to a bastarde brother of the kynges, a sage and a valyant man, called Denyse,[1] but he was a man of

John, Master of Avis.

CAP. XXI

Howe sir Johan Froyssart departed out of Fraunce.

relygion, and was mayster of the hospytals in all the realme: they sayd they had rather be under the rule of this maister Denyse, than under the rule of the kynge of Castell, for they reputed hym no bastarde, that hath good corage to do well. Whan this mayster Denyce understode the commens wyll of foure chiefe cyties of Portyngale, for they hadde great affectyon to crowne hym kyng, wherof he had great joye, and so wrote secretely to his frendes and came to Luxbone, whiche is the kay of the realme; the people of the towne receyved hym with great joye, and demaunded of hym if they crowned him kyng, wheder he wolde be good to them or nat, and kepe the lande in their fraunchese; and he aunswered and sayd, he wolde be to them as they desyred, and that they had never a better kynge than he wolde be. Than they of Luxbone wrote to Conimbres,[1] to Pount[2] de Portugale, and to them of Dourke,[3] these were the kayes of the realme, and so they determyned to crowne to their kyng this mayster Denyse, who was a sage and a valyant man, and of good governaunce, and was brother to kyng Ferant; for they sawe well the realme coude nat be longe without a kyng, as well for feare of the Spayniardes, as of the myscreantes of Granado, and of Bougie, who marched on them. So these sayde townes, and certayne of the lordes of the lande, enclined to him, but some of the lordes sayd that it was nat mete a bastarde to be crowned kyng. And the people of the good townes said that it shulde be so, for of necessyte they must so do, sithe they had none other, and seyng that he was a valyant and a sage man, bothe in wytte and in dedes of armes; and they toke ensample by kynge Henry, who was crowned kyng of Castell by electyon of the countrey, and for the common profyte, and that was done kynge Peter beynge alyve. So thus the electyon abode on this maister Denyse, and solempnely he was crowned in the cathedrall churche of Conimbres, by the accorde and puyssaunce of the commons of the realme. And there he sware to kepe justyce, and to do ryght to his people, and to kepe and maynteyne their fraunchese, and to lyve and dye with them, wherof they hadde great joye.

Whan these tidynges came to the hearyng of don Johan, kyng of Castell, he was sore displeased therwith, and for two

[1] *Coimbra. Connubres* P.
[2] *Porto.*
[3] *Evora.*

causes; the one was, bycause his wyfe was enheryter there, and the other bycause the people by election hadde crowned maister Denyse kynge there. Wherfore this kyng Johan toke tytell to make warr, and to demaunde of them of Luxbone the somme of two hundred thousande florens, whiche Ferant promysed hym whan he toke his doughter to his wyfe. So than he sende the erle of Terme, therle of Ribydea, and the bysshoppe of Burges,[1] into Portyngale, as his ambassadours to them of Luxbone. And whan they were at Saynt Yrayne,[2] the laste towne of Castell towarde Luxbone, than they sent an haraulde to the kyng, and to them of Luxbone, to have a save conducte to go and come, and to furnysshe their voyage, whiche was graunted lightly. And so they came to Luxbone, and so the towne assembled their counsayle toguyder: and the ambassadours shewed why they were come thyder, and finally sayde, Ye sirs of Luxbone, ye ought justely nat to marveyle, if the kyng our soverayne lorde demaundeth of you the somme of money that ye are bounde for, and is nat content that ye have gyven the noble crowne of Portyngale to a clerke, a man of relygion, and a bastarde; it is a thynge nat to be suffred, for by rightfull election there is non nerer to the crowne than he; and also ye have done this without the assent of the nobles of the realme, wherfore the kyng our maister saythe that ye have done yvell, and without that ye shortely do remedy the mater, he wyll make you sharpe warr. To the whiche wordes don Feraunt Gallopes de Vylefois, a notable burgesse of the cyte, answered and sayd, Sirs, ye reproche us greatly for our electyon, but your owne election is as moche reprovable; for ye crowned in Spaygne a bastarde, sonne to a Jewe. And it is clerely knowen, that to the ryghtfull election your kynge hath no right to the realme of Portyngale: for the right resteth in the doughters of kyng Peter, who be in Englande maryed, bothe Constaunce and Isabell, maryed to the duke of Lancastre, and to therle of Cambridge. Wherfore sirs, ye may departe whan ye wyll, and retourne to them that sent you hyder, and say that our electyon is good, whiche we wyll kepe, and other kyng we wyll have none, as longe as he lyste to be our kyng; and as for the somme of money that ye demaunde of us, we say we are

Howe sir Johan Froyssart departed out of Fraunce.

[1] *Burgos.*

[2] *Santarem.*

CAP. XXI

Howe sir Johan Froyssart departed out of Fraunce.

nothyng bounde therto: take it of them that were bounde therfore, and of suche as had the profyte therof. At this answere the kynge of Portyngall was nat present; howbeit, he knewe well what shulde be sayd. And whan these ambassadours sawe they coude have non other answere, they toke their leave and departed, and retourned to Cyvell, where they lafte the kyng and his counsayle, to whom they shewed all the said answere. Than the kyng of Spayne toke counsayle what was best to do in this mater. Than it was determyned that the kyng of Portyngale shulde be defied, and howe that the kyng of Spayne had a good quarell to move the warre for dyvers reasons: so than kyng Denyse was defyed, and all his helpers in Portyngale. Than the kyng of Spayne made a gret sommons of men of warr, to lay siege to the cytie of Luxbone, and the kyng sayd he wolde never departe thens tyll he had it, for they had answered hym so proudely, that they shulde derely repent it, if he might overcome them. Thus the king of Castell, with all his puissaunce, came to Saynt Yrayne. At that season there was a knight chased out of his court, who was called sir Navret; for if the kyng myght have gette hym, it shulde have cost hym his heed; the knight had knowledge therof, for he hadde many good frendes; so he avoyded the realme of Castell, and came to Luxbone, to the kyng of Portyngale, who had great joye of his comynge, and retayned hym, and made hym a great capitayne, and he dyde after moche hurte to the Spayniardes. The kynge of Castell departed fro Saynt Yrayne, and came and layde siege before the cytie of Luxbone, and enclosed therin the kynge of Portyngale. The siege endured more than a hole yere; and constable of the host was the erle of Longuevyll, and marshall of the hoost was sir Raynolde Lymosyn; he was a knight of Limosyn, who long before came into Spaygne with sir Bertram of Clesquy, in the firste warres that he made in Spaygne. This sir Raynolde was a valiant knight, and well proved, and the kynge had well maryed hym to a fayre lady, and to a fayre herytage. And by her he had two sonnes, Raynolde and Henry, and he was greatly praysed in the realme of Castell for his prowes. And with the kynge of Castell there was Dagheynes Mandake,[1] sir Dygo Persement,[2] don Peter

[1] *Diego Gomez Manrique.*

[2] *Sarmiento.*

CAP. XXI

Howe sir Johan Froyssart departed out of Fraunce.

Roseament,[1] don Maryche de Versaulx, Portugaleys, who were turned Spaynisshe, and the great mayster of Calestrave, and his brother, a yong knyght, called don Dighemeres, Pier Goussart of Selme,[2] Johan Radigo de Hoyes, and the great mayster of saint Jaques. The kyng had well with hym a thyrtie thousande men. There were dyvers assautes and scrimysshes, and many feates of armes done, on the one parte and on the other. The Spaygnierdes knewe well that the kynge of Portyngale shulde have none ayde of the nobles of his realme, for the commons had made hym kyng agaynst their wylles. So the kyng of Castell had intensyon to conquere Luxbone, and all the countre, or he retourned, for he sawe well they shulde have none ayde, without it were out of Englande, wherof he had moost doute. And yet whan he had well ymagined, he sawe well the Englysshemen were farre of, and he had herde howe the kynge of Englande, and his uncles, were nat all of the best acorde, wherfore he thought hymselfe the more of suretie at his siege, whiche siege was right plentyfull of all thynges; there was in no market in Castell more plentie than was ther. And the kyng of Portyngale lay styll in the cytie of Luxbone at his ease, for they coude nat take the see fro hym, and he determyned to sende into Englande to the kyng, and to the duke of Lancastre, trustie ambassadours, to renewe the aliances made before, bytwene the kyng, and kyng Ferant, his brother. And also the ambassadours had in charge to shewe the duke of Lancastre, that in maryage he wolde gladly have his doughter Philyppe, and to make her quene of Portyngale, and to swere and seale a perpetuall peace and alyance bytwene them, and also promysynge hym, that if he wolde come thyder with two or thre thousande men of warre, and as many archers, to helpe and ayde hym to conquere his enherytaunce of Castell. On this message was apoynted two knightes, sir Johan Radegoe, and sir John Tetedore, and an archedeaken of Luxbone, called Marche de la Fugyre. So they made them redy and toke the see, and had good wynde, and so sayled towarde the fronters of Englande. On the other parte the kyng of Castell laye a siege, and he was counsayled to write into Fraunce, and into Gascoyne, for some ayde of knightes and squyers. For the Spaynierdes

[1] *Pedro Ruiz Sarmiento.*
[2] *Seville.*

CAP. XXI
Howe sir Johan Froyssart departed out of Fraunce.

supposed well that the kynge of Portyngale had sende for socoure into Englande to reyse their siege, and they thought they wolde nat be so taken, but that their puissaunce might be stronge ynoughe to resyst the Englysshmen and Portugaleyse. And as he was counsayled, so he dyde, and sende letters and messangers into Fraunce, to dyvers knyghtes and squyers, suche as desyred dedes of armes, and specially in the countrey of Byerne, in the countie of Foiz, for there were plentie of good knightes desyring dedes of armes, for though they had ben brought up with the erle of Foiz, as than there was good peace bitwene hym and therle of Armynake. So these messages of these two kynges were nat sone brought about; howebeit, the warres in other places ceased nevertheless, as in Auvergne, in Tholousyn, in Rouergue, and in the lande of Bygore.

Nowe lette us leave to speke of the busynesse of Portyngale a lytell, and speke of other maters.

CAP. XXII

Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe, and of the request that the countesse of Armynake made to the Prince and Princesse: and howe the countre of Gascoyne was newly agayne in warre.

BITWENE the countie of Foiz, and the countre of Bierne, lyeth the countie of Bigore, whiche countie parteyned to Fraunce, and marchesed on the countre of Tholousin, on the one parte, and on the countie of Comminges, and of Bierne, on the other parte. And in the countie of Bygore lyeth the strong castell of Lourde, whiche was Englysshe ever sythe that the countie of Bigore was yelded to the kyng of England, and to the Prince, for the redempcion of kynge Johan of Fraunce, by the treatie and peace made at Bertigny, before Charters, and after confyrmed at Calais, as it hath ben shewed before in the other hystorie. Whan the prince of Wales was come out of Englande, and that the kyng his father had gyven

CAP. XXII

Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

hym in herytage all the lande and duchy of Acquitayne, wherin there were two archebisshoppes, and xxii. other bysshoppes, and that he was come to Burdeaux, on the ryver of Gyrone, and had taken the possessyons of all these landes, and lyen there a yere, than he and the Princesse were desyred by the erle Johan of Armynake, that they wolde come into the countre of Bigore, into the cytie of Tarbe, to se that countre, whiche as than he had nat sene before. And the erle of Armynake thought that if the Prince and Princesse were in Bygore, that the erle of Foiz wolde come and se them, and wher as he dyd owe hym for his raunsome two hundred and fyftie thousande frankes, he thought he wolde desyre the Prince and Princesse to requyre the erle of Foiz to forgyve hym the same somme or parte therof. So moche dyd the erle of Armynake that at his instance the Prince and Princes came to the cytie of Tarbe. This towne is fayre and standeth in a playne countre, amonge the fayre vynes, and it is a towne, cytie, and castell, closed with gates and walles, and seperated eche fro other. Fro the mountayns of Byerne and Catheloyne cometh the fayre ryver of Lysse, whiche ronneth throughe Tarbe, and is as clere as a fountayne. And a fyve leages thens is the towne of Morlance, parteyninge to the erle of Foiz, at the entre of the countie of Bierne; and under the mountayne, a sixe leages fro Tarbe, is the towne of Panne,[1] whiche also parteyneth to the sayd erle. The same tyme that the Prince and Princes was at Tarbe, therle of Foiz was at Panne: he was there bylding of a fayre castell, joyninge to the towne, without on the ryver of Grane.[2] Assone as he knewe the comynge of the Prince and Princesse beyng at Tarbe, he ordayned to go and se theym in great estate, with mo than sixe hundred horses, and threscore knightes in his company. And of his comynge to Tarbe, was the Prince and Princesse right joyouse, and made hym good chere: and there was the erle of Armynake and the lorde Dalbret, and they desyred the Prince to requyre the erle of Foiz to forgyve therle of Armynake all, or els parte of the somme of florens that he ought to have. And the Prince, who was wyse and sage, consyderynge all thynges thought that he might nat do so, and sayde, Sir erle of Armynake, ye were taken by armes in

[1] *Pau.*

[2] *Gave.*

CAP. XXII
Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

the journey of batayle, and ye dyde putte my cosyn the erle of Foiz in adventure agaynste you: and thoughe fortune were favourable to hym and agaynst you, his valure ought nat than to be made lesse; by lyke dedes, my lorde my father nor I wolde nat be contente that we shulde be desyred to leave that we have wonne by good adventure, at the batayle of Poicters, wherof we thanke God. Whane the erle of Armynake herde that he was abasshed, for he fayled of his entente; howebeit, yet he lefte nat of so, but than he required the Princesse, who with a good hert desyred therle of Foiz to gyve her a gyfte. Madame, quod therle, I am but a meane man, therfore I can gyve no great gyftes: but madame, if the thyng that ye desyre passe nat the valure of threscore thousande frankes, I wyll gyve it you with a gladde chere. Yet the Princesse assayed agayne, if she coude cause hym to graunt her full desyre. But the erle was sage and subtell, and thought verily that her desyre was to have hym to forgyve clerely the erle of Armynake all his dette; and than he sayde agayne, Madame, for a poore knight as I am, who buyldeth townes and castelles, the gyfte that I have graunted you ought to suffyce. The Princesse coude bringe hym no farther, and whan she sawe that, she said, Gentyll erle of Foiz, the request that I desyre of you is to forgyve clerely the erle of Armynake. Madame, quod the erle, to your request I ought well to condiscende: I have sayd to you, that if your desyre passe nat the valure of threscore thousande frankes, that I wolde graunt it you; but, madame, the erle of Armynake oweth me two hundred and fyftie thousande frankes, and, at your request, I forgive hym therof threscore thousande frankes. Thus the mater stode in that case; and the erle of Armynake, at the request of the Princes, wan the forgyveng of threscore thousande frankes; and anone after the erle of Foiz returned to his owne countre.

I, sir Johan Froissarde, make narracion of this busynesse, bycause whan I was in the countie of Foyz and of Bierne, I passed by the countie of Bygore, and I demaunded and enquered of the newes of that countrey, suche as I knewe nat before. And it was shewed me, howe the prince of Wales and of Aquitayne, whyle he was at Tarbe, he had

great wyll to go se the castell of Lourde, whiche was a thre leages of, nere to the entre of the mountayne. And whan he was there, and had well advysed the towne, the castell, and the countre, he praysed it greatly, as well for the strength of the castell, as bycause it stode on the fronter of dyvers countreis: for the garysone there might ronne well into the realme of Arragon, into Catellon, and to Barselon. Than the Prince called to hym a knyght of his housholde, in whom he had great truste, and loved hym entierly, and he had served hym truely, and was called sir Pyer Ernalde, of the countre of Bierne, an experte man of armes, and cosyn to the erle of Foiz; than the Prince sayde to hym, Sir Ernalde, I instytute and make you chateleyn and capitayne of Lourde, and governour of the countre of Bygore: loke that ye kepe this castell, se well that ye make a good accompte therof to the kyng my father and to me. Sir, quod the knyght, I thanke you, and I shall observe your commaundement: there he dyde homage to the Prince, and the Prince put hym in possession. It is to be knowen, that whan the warre began to renewe bytwene Englande and Fraunce, as it hath ben shewed before, the erle Guy of saynt Poule, and sir Hugh of Chatellon, mayster of the crosbowes in Fraunce in that tyme, beseged the towne of Abvyle, and wan it, with all the countre of Poitou.[1] The same tyme two great barons of Bigore, thone called sir Marnalte Barbesan, and the lorde Danchyn,[2] tourned Frenche, and toke the towne, cytie, and castell of Tarbe, whiche was but easely kept for the kynge of Englande. But styll the castell of Lourde was in the handes of sir Pier Ernalt, of Bierne,[3] who wolde in no wyse yelde up the castell, but made ever great warre agaynst the realme of Fraunce, and sent for great company of adventurers into Bierne and Gascoyne, to helpe and to ayde hym to make warre, so that he had togyder many good men of armes. And he had with hym sixe capitayns, and every man fyftie speares under hym.

CAP. XXII

Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

[1] *Ponthieu.*

[2] *Antin.*

[3] *Pierre Arnaud de Béarn.*

The first was his brother Johan of Bierne, a right expert squyer, and Pier Danchyne,[2] of Bygore, brother germayne to the lorde Danchyne, he wolde never tourne Frenche, Naudon of saynt Colombe, Ernalton of Mount Ague,[4] of saynt

[4] *Ernaudon de Rostan.*

CAP. XXII
Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

Basyll,[1] and the Bourge of Carnela.[2] These capitayns made dyvers journeys into Bygore, into Tholousyn, into Carcassene, and into Albygoise, for ever assone as they were out of Lourde, they were in the lande of their enemyes: and somtyme they wolde adventure thyrtie leages of fro their holde. And in their goynge they wolde take nothyng, but in their retourne there was nothynge coulde scape them; somtyme they brought home so great plentie of beestes and prisoners, that they wyst nat howe to kepe them. Thus they raunsomed all the countrey, excepte the erle of Foiz landes, for in his landes they durste nat take a chekyn, withoute they payed truely therfore, for if they had displeased the erle, they coulde nat longe have endured; these companyons of Lourde ranne over all the countre at their pleasure, and I rode nat farre fro theym. Thus the cytie of Tarbe was in great doute, so that they were fayne to make covynaunt with them: and bytwene Tarbe and Lourde, there was a great vyllage, and a good abbey, called Gynors,[3] who in lykewise were fayne to agre with them. Also on the other parte on the ryver of Lysse, there was a great towne, called Bagneres; they of that towne had a harde season, for they were so haryed by the garyson of Malvoysen, standynge on a hylle, and the ryver of Lysse rynnyng underneth, unto a walled towne, called Turney, into the whiche towne they of Lourde and of Malvoysen hadde ever their recourse, to the whiche towne they dyde no hurte, bycause they had their resorte thyder; and they of the towne had ever a good market of their pyllage, and so dissymuled ever with them, whiche they were fayne to do, or elles they coulde nat have lyved, for they had no ayde nor socoure of any persone. The capitayne of Malvoysen was a Gascoyne, and his name was Remonet de Lespe, an experte man of armes; he and his company, and they of Lourde, raunsomed as well the marchauntes of Aragon and Catheloyne, as of Fraunce, without they agreed with them.

In the season that I enterprised to go se the erle of Foiz, and to se the dyversities of the countreys, where as I had never ben before, whan I departed fro Carcassene, I lefte the waye to Tholous, and wente to Monterorall, and so to Fonges,[4] than to Bell,[5] and than to the first towne of therle

[1] *Le Mongat de Sainte-Basille.*
[2] *Cardeillac.*
[3] *Geyres.*
[4] *Fanjeaux.*
[5] *Belpech.*

of Foiz, and than to Masieres, and so to the castell of Savredyn. And than I came to the good cytie of Paumyers,[1] parteyning to the erle of Foiz, and there I taryed, abydinge for some company goyng into the countre of Byerne, where the erle was; and whan I had taryed there a thre dayes in great pleasure, for the cytie was delectable, standyng among the fayre vynes, and envyroned with a fayre ryver large and clere, called Liege, and on a day it so fortuned, that thyder came a knyght of the erle of Foiz, fro Avignon warde, called sir Espaenge de Lion, a valyant and an experte man of armes, about the age of l. yeres. And so I gate me into his company, and he was greatly desyrous to here of the maters of Fraunce; and so we were a sixe dayes in our journey, or we came to Ortayse: and this knyght every day after he had sayd his prayers, moost parte all the day after he toke his pastyme with me, in demaundyng of tidynges, and also whan I demaunded any thyng of hym, he wolde answere me to my purpose. And whan we departed fro Paumyers, we past by the mount of Cesse, whiche was an yvell passage, and so we came to the towne and castell of Ortayse,[2] whiche was Frenche, but we passed by it, and so came to dyner to a castell of therle of Foiz, halfe a leage thens, called Carlat, standynge highe on a mountayne. And after dyner the knight sayd to me, Sir, let us ryde toguyder fayre and easely, we have but two leages to ryde to our lodgyng: and so I was content to do. Than the knight said, We have this day passed by the castell of Ortayse, which dothe moche domage in this countre. Peter Danchyn kepeth it, and hath taken and stollen out of the realme of Fraunce more than threscore thousande frankes. Than I demaunded how that might be. I shall shewe you, quod the knight. On Our Lady day in August, there is ever a great fayre, and all the countre resorteth thyder, for there is moche marchandise; that day Pier Danchyn and his companions of Lourde had taken their advyse, and were determyned to get this towne and castell. And so they sent two simple varlettes, by semyng, to the sayd towne in the moneth of Maye, to get themselfe some servyce in the towne. And so they dyde, and were reteyned with two maisters, and they dyde right dilygent servyce to their maysters, and so went in and

CAP. XXII

Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

[1] *Pauyers* P. *passim.*

[2] *Artigat.*

CAP. XXII

Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

out on their maisters busynesse, without any suspeciousnes of them. And so on Our Lady day in August, ther were many marchantes strangers, of Foiz, of Bierne, and of Fraunce. And as ye knowe well, whan marchantes do mete that sawe nat togyder long before, they wyll make good chere togyder; and so in the same houses where as these two varlettes were in service, were many marchantes drinkyng and makyng good chere, and their ostes with them. And by apoyntment, about midnight, Pier Danchin and his company came to Ortaise, and enbusshed themselfe in a wode whiche we[1] passed throughe, and so they sent sixe varlettes to the towne with ii. ladders, and they passed the dykes and came to the walles and reared up their ladders, and the other ii. varlettes that were in service in the towne dyd ayde them, while their maysters sat makyng good chere. So these sayd varlettes dyde put themselfe in adventure, and one of the said two varlettes brought the other sixe to the gate within, wher there was two men kepyng the keys. Than this varlet said to the other sixe, Sirs, kepe yourselfe here privy and close, and styrre nat tyll ye here me whistle: I trust to make the porters to open the gate of their warde, they have the keyes of the great gate. And therfore assone as they have opyned their warde, I wyll whystle; than steppe forthe and slee the porters, I knowe well ynoughe the keyes of the gate, for I have oft tymes helped to kepe the gate with my maister. And as they devysed so they dyd; and so the varlet went to the gate, and sawe and herde howe the porters were drinkyng within their warde; than he called them by their names, and said, Sirs, open your dore, I have brought you of the best wyne that ever you dranke, which my maister hath sent you, to the entent you shulde kepe your watche the better. And they who knewe right well the varlet, beleved that he had said trouthe, and opyned the dore; and than he whistled, and thother sixe stept forthe and entred in at the dore, and there they slewe the porters so prively, that none knewe therof. Than they toke the keyes and went and opyned the gate, and let downe the bridge easely that none knewe therof; than they blewe a blast in a horne, so that they that were enbusshed mounted on their horses, and came on

[1] *we* om. P.

CAP. XXII

Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

the spurres, and entred on the bridge, and come into the towne, and so toke all the men of the towne syttyng drinkyng, or els in their beddes. Thus was Ortayse taken by Pier Danchin of Bigore, and by his companyons of Lourde. Than I demaunded of the knight howe they gat the castell. I shall shewe you, quoth he. The same tyme that Ortaise was thus taken, the capiten of the castell by his yvell adventure was in the towne, and supped with certayne marchauntes of Carcassen, and was there taken among other; and in the next mornyng Pier Danchyn brought him before the castell, wher as his wyfe and chyldren were, and made them beleve that he wolde strike of his heed, without his wife wolde delyver up the castell. And if she wolde so do, he promised to delyver her husbande quyte, and to suffre hym and all his to departe with bagge and baggage, without any hurt. And the lady who sawe herselfe in a harde case, and sawe she was nat able to make ware herselfe, and for savyng of her husbandes lyfe she yelded up the castell; and so her husbande and she and all theirs departed, and went to Paumiers. Thus had Pier Danchin the towne and castell of Ortayse. And the same tyme that they entred, he and his company wan above xxx. M. frankes, what in marchandise and prisoners of France: but all suche as were of the countie of Foiz, or of Bierne, were clene delyvered without any domage. And this Pier Danchyn kept Ortaise after the space of v. yere, and he and his company oftymes wolde ron to the gates of Carcassone, whiche was a sixe leages thens, and dyde great domage to the countre, as well by raunsomynge of the townes, as by pyllage over all the countrey.

In the meane season that Pier Danchin was in the garison of Ortaise, on a night certayne of his company went out and came to a castel called Paielier,[1] a good leage thens, wherof a Frenche knight, called Raymon du Pailier, was owner. They had ben ther often before and fayled of their purpose, but as than their happe was suche that they scaled the castell and toke it, and the knight and the lady in their beddes, and let the lady and her children go fre, but they kept styll the knight in his owne castell the space of foure monethes, and at last he payed a M. frankes for his raunsome.

[1] *Pailhès.*

CAP. XXII Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

And finally, whan they had sore overryden the countre, they solde these two castels, Ortaise and Paielier, to them of the countre for viii. M. frankes, and than they went to Lourde their principall garyson. So thus in this adventure knightes dyd put themselfe dayly. Also the same tyme ther was an expert man of armes in the castell of Lourde, a Gascone borne, he was called Le Mengeant[1] of saynt Basyll. On a tyme he and xxx. with him departed fro Lourde, and rode at all adventures into Tholousyn, and had thought to have gote the castell of Penne, in Albigois,[2] but he myst of his entent. And whan he sawe that he fayled of his purpose, he came to the gate and made a great scrymisshe. And the same proper hour the seneshall of Tholous rode forthe, and with hym sir Hughe de Froidwyll, and a lx. speares, and came by adventure to Pan, while the sayd scrimysshe was in doyng. Than incontynent they sette fote to the erthe and came to the barryers, and so than the Mengeant was over matched, but ther he fought valiantly hande to hande, and wounded the other knight in two or thre places; howebeit, finally he was taken by force, and his men outher taken or slayne, ther were but a fewe that scaped. So this Mengeant was ledde to Tholous, and than the commons of the towne wolde have slayne hym bitwene the handes of the seneshall, he had moche payne to save his lyfe, and so brought hym into the castell, for he was ryght yvell beloved in Tholous. Yet after it happed so well for hym, that the duke of Berry came thider; and this knyght had suche frendes that he was delyvered, and the seneshall had a thousande frankes for his raunsome; and whan he was delyvered he retourned to Lourde, and began agayne to make newe enterprises. And so on a tyme he departed fro Lourde, and fyve with hym, without any armoure, and he dyde on the abbyt of a monke, and lyke other thre monkes with hym, and they had all shaven crownes, so that every man that sawe them wende surely that they had ben monkes, the abbit and gesture became them so well. And in this maner he came to Mountpellyer, and toke up his lodgynge at the signe of the Egle, and said howe he was an abbot of high Gascon, and was goyng to Parys on certayne busynesse parteyning to his house. And so he gate famylier aquayntaunce with a ryche

[1] *Mongat.*

[2] *Allugois* P.

CAP. XXII

Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

man of the towne, called Barenger, who had also to do at Paris for certayne busynesse. Than this abbot said howe he wolde pay for his costes if he lyst to go in his company; wherof the good man was right joyouse in that he shulde have his charges borne, and so he and one varlet with hym went forthe with this monke. And whan they had ryden a thre leages, this counterfet monke, sir Mengeant, toke hym prisoner, and ledde him secrete wayes to his garison of Lourde, and after dyd raunsome hym at v. M. frankes. Than I said, Ah, Saint Mary, was this Mengeant suche an expert man of armes? Ye truely, sir, quoth he, and in war he dyed, in a place wher as we shall passe within this thre dayes, in a countre called the Layre, in Bigore, by a towne called Lachmache.[1] Well sir, quod I, and I shall remembre you therof, whan we come ther: and so we rode tyll we came to Montesqueu, a good towne closed, parteyning to therle of Foiz, whiche the Armynagois, and the Labrisyence,[2] toke by stelthe on a season, but they kept it nat but thre dayes. And in the mornyng we departed fro Montesqueu, and rode to the towne of Palamuche,[3] a good towne closed on the ryver of Garon, parteyning to therle of Foiz; and whan we were almost ther we had thought to have passed the bridge of Garon, to have entred into the towne, but we coulde nat; for the day before it had so sore rayned fro the mountayns of Chataloyne and Aragon, wherby another ryver was so encreased, whiche was called Saluz, and ran so fast, that it reysed up the ryver of Garon in suche wise, that it brake one of the arches of the bridge, whiche was of tymbre: wherfore we returned agayne to Montestqueu, and taryed there all the day. Than the next day the knight had counsayle to passe the ryver by botes by the towne of Casseres: so we rode thider, and dyd so moche that we past the ryver of Garon with great payne and parell, for the bote that we were in was nat very great; it coude nat take at one tyme but two horses and their kepars, and they that ruled the bote; and so whan we were over we rode to Casseres, and abode there all that daye. And in the meane tyme that our supper was a dressyng, this knight said to me, Sir Johan, let us go and se the towne. And so we passed along through the towne, and came to the gate towarde

[1] *Cieutat.*

[2] *Labrissiens*, i.e. *the partisans of the Sire de Labreth (d'Albret).*

[3] *Palaminich.*

CAP. XXII
Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

Palamuche, and went out therat and came to the dykes. Than the knyght shewed me a pane of the wall, and said, Sir, se you yonder parte of the wall whiche is newer than all the remnant. Yea sir, quod I. Well, quod he, I shall shewe you why it is so; it is a ten yere past sithe it fortuned. Ye have herde or this of the warre that was bytwene the erle of Armynake and therle of Foiz, howebeit, nowe they are in peace; but the Armynagoise and Labrisience wan but lytell by that warre. For on a saynt Nycholas evyn, the yere of our Lorde a thousande thre hundred threscore and two, therle of Foiz toke in batayle therle of Armynake, and the lorde Dalbret his nephue, and all the noble men that were with them, and so ledde them as prisoners to Ortaise, wherby the erle of Foiz hath receyved ten tymes a hundred thousande frankes. And it fortuned after that the father of the erle of Armynake nowe lyveng, called sir Johan of Armynake, made a journey and toke this towne of Casseres, and they had with them a ii. hundred men of armes, and so thought to kepe the towne by strength. These tidynges whan they came to the knowledge of the erle of Foiz, beynge as thane at Panne, he lyke a sage and a valyant knight, called to hym two bastard bretherne of his, called sir Arnalt Guyllam and sir Pier de Bierne, and sayd to them, Sirs, I wyll ye ryde incontynent to Casseres: I shall sende you men on every syde, and within thre dayes I shal be with you myselfe; and let none come out of the towne, but that ye fight with them, for ye shal be stronge ynoughe; and whan ye come there, cause the men of the countre to bring thyder great plentie of wode, busshes, and fagottes, and choke the gates therwith, and than without that, make stronge barryers, for I wyll that they that be within be so enclosed that they issue nat out of the gates; I shall cause them to take another way. These two knightes dyd his commaundement, and so wente to Palamuche, and all men of warre of Bierne folowed them, and so they came before this towne of Casseres. They that were within sette lytell by them, but they were nat ware howe they were enclosed within the towne, so that they coulde nat issue oute at any gate. And the thirde day the erle of Foiz came thider with fyve hundred men of armes, and as sone as he came he caused

barryers to be made rounde about the towne, and also barriers rounde about his host, bycause they shulde nat be troubled in the night tyme. So in this case they laye longe without any assaut, in so moche that vitayle began to fayle them within, for thoughe they had wyne great plentie, they had nothyng to eate, nor they coulde nat flye awaye by the ryver, for it was as thane to depe. Than they thought it were better to yelde themselfe as prisoners, than to dye so shamefully for famyne, and so fell in treaty; therle of Foiz agreed to their treatie, so that they shulde nat issue out at no gate, but to make a hole in the wall, and go out therat, to come one by one without armoure, and so to yelde them as prisoners. It behoved them to take this waye, and so made a hole in the wall and issued oute, one by one; and there was the erle redy and all his people in order of batayle to receyve them as prisoners. And ever as they came out the erle sent them to dyvers castelles as prisoners: and his cosyn sir John of Armynake, sir Bernarde Dalbret, and sir Manalt of Barlabason,[1] sir Raymonde de Benache, sir Benedicke de la Corneyle, and a twentie of the beste personages, he ledde with hym to Ortaise; and or they departed, he had of them two hundred thousande frankes. And thus was this hole in the wall made. And than we wente to our supper. And the nexte day we rode alonge by the ryver of Garon, and passed by Palamuche, and than we entred into the lande of the erle of Comynges and Armynake, and on the other syde was the ryver of Garon, and the lande of therle of Foiz. And as we rode, this knight shewed me a stronge towne, called Marteras[2] the Toussac, parteyninge to therle of Comynges, and on the other syde of the ryver on the mountayne he shewed me two castelles parteyninge to the erle of Foiz, the one called Mountarall,[3] and the other Mountclare. And as we rode bytwene these townes and castelles alonge by the ryver of Garon, in a fayre medowe, this knight sayd to me, Sir Johan, I have sene here many fayre scrimysshes and encountrynges bytwene the Foizois and Armynakes, for as than there was no towne nor castell but that was well furnysshed with men of warre, and so they warred eche upon other. The Armynakes agaynst yonder two castelles made a bastyde, and kept it with men of

CAP. XXII

Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

[1] *Barbazan.*

[2] *Martres.*

[3] *Montmirail.*

CAP. XXII
Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

warre, and dyde moche hurt in the erle of Foiz lande: but I shall shewe you howe it fortuned. The erle of Foiz on a night sent his brother Peter de Bierne, with two hundred speres, and with them a four hundred villayns of the countre, charged with fagottes, moche wode and busshes, and brought it to the bastide, and than sette fyre theron, and so brent the bastyde, and all them that were within without mercy, and sithe it was never made agayne. So in suche devyses we rode all that day alonge by the ryver of Garon, and what on the one syde and on the other, we sawe many fayre castelles and fortresses; all that were on our lyfte hande parteyned to therle of Foiz, and the other syde parteyned to therle of Armynake. And so thus we passed by Montpesac, a fayre castell and a stronge, standyng on an highe rocke, and underneth was the towne and the highe way, and without the towne a lytell, there was a place called A la Garde,[1] and a towre bitwene the rocke and the ryver, whiche towre had a gate and a portcolyse of yron; sixe men might well kepe this passage agaynst all the worlde, for there coulde no man passe but two on a front, what for the towre on the one syde, and the ryver on the other syde. Than I sayd to the knyght, Sir, here is a stronge passage, and a myghtie countre. It is true, quod the knight; and though thentre be stronge, yet the erle of Foiz dyde conquere it ones, and he and all his passed the same waye, with the helpe of the archers of Englande, that he had as than in his company, and the great desyre that they had to passe into the countre. Come ryde nere me sir, quod he, and I shall shewe you howe it was. And so I rode juste by hym: and than he sayd, Sir, on a tyme, the erle of Armynake, and the lorde Dalbret, with a fyve hundred men of warre, came into the countre of Foiz, and to the marches of Paumyers, and this was in the begynnynge of August, whan men dyd gather in their cornes, and the grapes were rype, at whiche tyme there was great habundaunce in the countre. Than sir Johan of Armynake and his company lodged before the towne Savredun, a lytell leage fro the cytie of Paumyers, and he sente to them of Paumyers, that without they wolde bye their cornes and wynes, and pay for them, they said els they wolde brinne and distroy all togyder. Than they of

[1] *gardea* P.

CAP. XXII

Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

Paumiers were in great feare, for the erle their lorde was farre of fro them, for he was as than in Byerne; and so they were fayne to bye their owne cornes, and payed for them fyve thousande frankes; but they desyred fyftene dayes of respyte, whiche was graunted them. Than the erle of Foiz was enformed of all this busynesse, and he hasted hym as moche as he might, and assembled toguyder his men, and came sodaynly into the cytie of Paumyers, with xii. hundred speares, and so had fought with sir Johan of Armynake, if he had taryed, but he departed and wente into the countie of Comynges. So he had no money of them of Paumyers, for they had no leysar to tarye therfore; but than therle of Foiz claymed the same somme, for he sayd he was come, and saved their money and corne, and had put awaye all their ennemyes. And so he had it to paye his men of warre therewith, and there he taryed tyll they had inned all their corne and vyntage. And so we passed than foreby a castell called Bretytte,[1] and also by another castell called Bacelles, all parteyninge to the erle of Comynges. And as we rode along by the ryver, I sawe a fayre castell, and a great towne, and I demaunded of the knight what the castell was called. And he said it was named Montesplayne,[2] parteyninge to a cosyn of the erle of Foiz, called sir Roger Despaygne, a great barone in the countre and in Tholousyn, and as than was seneshall of Carcassoney. Than I demaunded of this knight if he were a kynne to sir Charles of Spayne, who was constable of Fraunce. And he answered and sayde, No, he is nat of that blode; for sir Loyes of Spaygne, and this sir Charles that ye speke of, came bothe out of the realme of Spayne, and were lynially extraught of Spayne and of Fraunce, by their mothers syde, and were cosyn germayns to kynge Alphons of Spaygne; and I served in my youthe sir Loyes of Spaygne in the warres of Bretaygne, for he was alwayes on the partie of sir Charles of Bloyes, agaynst the erle Mountforde. And so we lefte spekynge of that matter, and rode to saynte Goussens, a good towne of the erle of Foiz. And the next day we dyned at Monreyle,[3] a good stronge towne of the Frenche kynges, and sir Roger de Spaygne kepte it. And after dyner we rode the waye towardes Lourde, and so rode throughe a great launde,

[1] *Bretice.*

[2] *Montespan.*

[3] *Montrejeau.*

CAP. XXII

Howe the prince of Wales and the Princes came to Tarbe.

endurynge a fyftene leages, called the laundes Lanne de Vous,[1] wherin were many daungerous passages, for theves and yvell doers. And in this launde stode the castell of Mesere,[2] parteyninge to the erle of Foiz, a good leage fro the towne of Tourney, the whiche castell the knyght shewed me, and sayd, Sir, beholde yonder is Malvoysen: but, sir, have ye herde here before howe the duke of Anjou, whan he was in this countrey and wente to Lourde, what he dyde in this countre, and howe he layde siege to Lourde, and wanne it; and also the castell of Gryngalet,[3] on the ryver side that ye se yonder before us, parteyneth to the lorde de la Barte? Than I remembred myselfe, and said, Sir, I trowe I never herde therof as yet, therfore I praye you shewe me the mater; but, sir, I praye you shewe me where is the ryver of Garon become, for I can se it no more. Ye say trouthe, quod the knight, it departeth here, in thentryng of these mountayns, and it groweth and cometh out of a fountayne a thre leages hens, the way to Chatelomy,[4] by a castell called saynt Beart, the fronter of the realme of Fraunce towarde Aragon. And there is as nowe a squyer called Ermalton, otherwyse called Bourge de Spaygne, he is lorde therof, and chatelayne of all the countrey, and he is cosyn germayne to sir Roger de Spayne; if we se hym I shall shewe you him. He is a goodly persone and a good man of armes, and he hath done more domage to theym of Lourde than any other knyght or squyer of all the countre, and the erle of Foiz loveth him ryght well, for he is his companyon in armes. I wyll leave to speke of hym, for I thynke at this feest of Christmas ye shall se him in the erle of Foiz house; but nowe I shall shewe you of the duke of Anjou, howe he came into this countre, and what he dyde. Than we rode forthe fayre and easely, and he began to saye as foloweth.

1 *Lande de Bauc.*

2 *Lamesen.*

3 *Trigalet.*

4 *Catalonia.*

CAP. XXIII

Of the warres that the duke of Anjou made agaynst the Englysshmen, and howe he recovered the castell of Malvoysen, in Bigore, whiche was afterwarde gyven to therle of Foiz.

AFTER the begynnynge of the warres, whane they began to wynne on the Englysshemen that they helde in Acquitayne, and that sir Olyver Clesquyn[1] was become Frenche, he ledde the duke of Anjou into Bretaygne, on the landes of sir Robert Canoll,[2] who was at the sege before Dyrivall,[3] as ye have herde before as I thynke, and of the treatie that sir Hughe Brice his cosyn made to the duke of Anjou, as to rendre the castell and delyver good hostages, so that the duke of Anjou shulde nat come to reyse the siege; but whan sir Robert Canoll was within the castell of Dyrivall, than he wolde holde no tretie. All this is true, sir, quod I. Well, quod he, but have you herde of the scrimysshe that was before the castell, where as sir Olyver de Clesquyn was wounded? Sir, I can nat tell you, quod I; I can nat remembre all. Wherfore sir I praye you shewe me of the scrimysshe, and of the siege, what came therof, for paradventure ye knowe it some other wayes than I do, and ye shall retourne agayne well ynoughe to your purpose of them of Lourde, and of Malvoysen. It is true, quod the knyght; it was so that sir Garses of the Castell, a right valyaunt knight of the countre and good Frenche, wente to the duke of Anjou to cause hym to come before Mauvosyn;[4] the duke had made his sommons to holde his journey before Dyrivall, and made this sir Garses, for his valyantnesse, marshall of his host. And true it is, as I herde say, that whan he sawe that sir Robert Canoll wolde nat kepe the treatie that was made before, nor wolde nat delyver the castell of Dyrivall, than he came to the duke and sayd, Sir, what shall we do with these hostages? It is no faulte in them that the castell is nat gyven up; and it were great pytie that they shulde dye, for they be gentylmen and have deserved no dethe. Than the duke said, Were it good than to

[1] *Clisson.*
[2] *Knolles.*
[3] *Derval.*
[4] *Beauvosyn* P.

CAP. XXIII Of the warres that the duke of Anjou made agaynst the Englysshmen.

delyver them? Yea, truely sir, quod the knyght, it were great pytie otherwyse. Well, quod the duke, do therin as ye lyste. Than this sir Garses went to delyver them; and as he wente, sir Olyver Clesquyn[1] mette him, and demaunded wheder he went and fro whens he came. I come fro my lorde the duke of Anjou, and am goynge to delyver the hostages. To delyver them, quod sir Olyver; abyde a lytell, and retourne agayne with me to the duke. And so they came to the duke, who was in his lodgynge in a great study. Sir Olyver saluted hym, and said, Sir, what is your entent? Shall nat these hostages suffre dethe? By my faythe they shall, in the dispyte of sir Robert Canoll and sir Byrre, who hath falsed their faithe. Wherfore, sir, I wyll ye knowe, without they dye, I shall weare no armure this hole yere after in none of your warres: if they shulde scape thus, it were good chepe: the siege hath coste you threscore M. frankes, and nowe you wyll shewe grace to your enemies, who kepeth with you nother faythe nor trouthe. With those wordes the duke began to chafe, and sayd, Sir Olyver, do therin as ye thynke best. Than, quod sir Olyver, I wyll that they lese their lyves; there is good cause why, sithe they kepe nat their promyse. Than sir Olyver departed fro the duke, and came to a place before the castell; and sir Garses durst nat speke one worde for them, for if he had, he shulde have lost his labour, sith sir Olyver had taken on hym the enterprise. Than he called the hangman, and made hym stryke of the heedes of two knyghtes and two squyers, whiche was great pytie, and there were mo than two hundred in the hoost that wepte for them. And incontynent sir Robert Canoll opyned a posterne gate, and on the brimme of the dykes, in dispyte of the Frenchemen, he caused to stryke of the heedes of all the prisoners that he had, without any respyte, and incontynent opyned the castell gate and lette downe the bridge, and issued out and came to the barryers, and scrymysshed with the Frenchemen. And as sir Garses shewed me, ther was a sore scrimysshe, and there sir Olyver Clesquyn was hurt, and so returned to his lodgyng. There were thre good[2] men of armes, two squyers of the countrey of Bierne, Bertram de Baruge[3] and Enalton de Payne,[4] and they were bothe sore hurt. And the next day the duke dislodged and

[1] *Clisson.*

[2] *tres bons.*

[3] *Barèges.*

[4] *Puy.*

went fro Dyryvall to Tholous, to the entente to distroye Lourde, for they of Tholous complayned greatly of the garyson of Lourde.

CAP. XXIII
Of the warres that the duke of Anjou made agaynst the Englysshmen.

So than the duke went first and layd siege to Malvoysen, whiche we maye se yonder before us; and the duke had in his company an viii. thousande men of warre, besyde the Genevoys and the commons of the good townes. Capitayne as than of Malvoysen was a squyer of Gascoyne, called Raymonde de Lespe, an experte man of armes. Every day at the barriers there was scrimysshes and goodly feates of armes done; and the duke laye in yonder fayre medowes, bytwene the towne of Turney and the castell by the ryver syde of Lysse. This siege enduryng, sir Garses, marshall of thoost, went with fyve hundred men of armes and two hundred archers and crosbowes, and a two thousande of other commons, and layd siege to the castell of Trygalet, whiche we have lefte here behynde us, whiche castell a squyer of Gascoyne kepte for the lorde de la Barde; for he was his cosyn, and was called the Bastot of Manlyon;[1] and he had within the castell a xl. companyons, and they dyd in that countre suche maystries, that none coude go that waye but they were taken prisoners, without it were the pylgrimes that wente to saynt James, with the ayde of another fortresse called Nemeluz.[2] In these two garysons all the robbers and pyllers of the countre assembled; and ever they were agaynst the erle of Foiz, and also agaynst the erle of Armynake; wherfore they cared nat, though the duke of Anjou came into that countre. And whan sir Garses was come before the castell of Trygalet, he coulde nat approche on the one parte for the ryver, and so gave a great assaute, and many men hurte bothe within and without with shot; and fyve dayes togyder this sir Garses made assautes, so that at laste the artillary within began to fayle them, and the Frenchemen parceyved it very well. Than by gentylnesse sir Garses caused the capitayne to come and speke with him under saveconducte, and sayd to hym, Bastot, I knowe well what case ye be in; ye have no artillary within, nor nothyng to defende you fro the saute but speares. Knowe for trouthe, that if ye be taken by force, I can nat save your lyfe nor none of youre company, for the

[1] *Le Bascot de Mauléon.*

[2] *Lutillous.*

CAP. XXIII Of the warres that the duke of Anjou made agaynst the Englysshmen.

commons of the countre wyll slee you all, which I wolde be lothe to se, for ye are my cosyn. Therfore I counsayle you to yelde up the fortresse; and sythe that I desyre you so to do, ye can beare no blame in your so doyng, and departe hens wheder as ye lyste, for ye have kepte this castell long ynough. Sir, quod the squyer, I wolde gladly folowe your counsayle, if it were out of dedes of armes, for in dede I am your cosyn; but, sir, I can nat yelde up this fortresse all alone, for suche as be within have as good parte therof as I have, though they holde me for their capitayne. Sir, I shall go to them and shewe them as ye have said; if they accorde to rendre it up, I shall nat say nay; and if they wyll kepe it styll, whatsoever adventure fall, I shall take suche parte as they do. It is well said, quod sir Garses; departe whan ye wyll, I knowe your entent. Than the Bastot of Manlyon retourned to the castell of Trygalet, and called all his company toguyder, and ther shewed them all the sayeng of sir Garses, and so demaunded of them what they thought was best to do. And so they counsayled toguyder a longe space; some wolde abyde the adventure, and sayd howe they were stronge ynough; and some wolde departe, and said, howe it was a good tyme so to do, seynge that they had no more artillary, and sawe well howe the duke of Anjou was cruell, and the commons of Thoulous, of Carcassoney, and of other townes thereabout sore displeased with them, for the great domages that they had done to them. So all thynges consydred, they concluded to yelde up the castell, so that they might be safely conducted and all theirs to the castell Tulyer, the whiche was kepte by some of their companyons on the fronter of Tholousin. So thus the capitayne retourned agayne to the host to speke with sir Garses, and he agreed to their desyres, for he sawe well the castell wolde nat lightely be wonne by assaute, without losse of moche people. So than they prepared to departe, and trussed all their baggage, for they had moche pyllage; they toke with them the best, and lefte the resydue; and sir Garses conveyed them to Tulyer without daunger. Thus the Frenchemen at that tyme gate this castell Trygalette. Than sir Garses dyd gyve the castell to the commens of the countre, and they dyd rase it downe, as ye se, so that there was never

CAP. XXIII
Of the warres that the duke of Anjou made agaynst the Englysshmen.

none sithe that wolde reedify it agayne. And so fro thens sir Garses wente towarde the castell Nantylleux,[1] standyng on these laundes nere to the castell Lameu.[2] And as he wente thyderwarde, one shewed hym that the castell Nantylleux was voyde, and they departed that kepte it. Thane sir Garses taryed in the felde, and devysed what was best than to do. Than the seneshall of Nobesen[3] sayd, Sir, this castell of Nantylleux is in my bayliwyke, and it ought to parteyne to the erle of Foiz. I praye you let me have it, and I shall make it to be so kepte, on my proper coste and charge, that no man that wyll any hurte to the contrarye shall never entre therin. Sir, quod they of Tholous, he sayeth well, and he is a valyant man; it were better he had it than another. Well, quod sir Garses, I am content. Thus the castell of Nantylleux was delyvered to the seneschall of Nobesen, who incontynent rode thyder, and founde it clene voyde: than he newly fortifyed that was broken, and he set therin a capitayne, a squyer of the countre called Fortefey saynt Poule; and than he retourned to the siege of Malvoysen, where the duke was. And also thyder was come sir Garses and all his company, and shewed the duke all that he had done. This siege endured about a vi. wekes, and nighe every day there was scrimysshinge at the barryers. At laste they withoute stopped their water, so that their sesterns began to drie, and in sixe wekes their fell nat a droppe of rayne, the season was so drie and hote; and they without had ease ynoughe by reason of the fayre ryver. Whan they within sawe what case they were in, they were sore abasshed, for they sawe well they coude nat long endure. Wyne they hadde plentie, but fresshe water fayled them. Thane they advysed to fall in treatie with the duke, and so they dyde; and Raymonde de Lespee purchased a saveconduct to go into the hoost to speke with the duke, and so he dyd, and sayd, Sir, if ye wyll be courtesse to me and to my company, I shall render into youre handes the castell of Malvoysen. What curtesy wolde ye, quod the duke, that I shulde shewe you? Departe your waye, you and all yours into your owne countreis, and entre nat into no forteresse that holdeth agaynst us; for if ye do, and if I get you or any of you, I shall delyver you to Joselyn, that

[1] *Lutillous.*
[2] *Lamesen.*
[3] *Nebouzan.*

CAP. XXIII Of the warres that the duke of Anjou made agaynst the Englysshmen.

shall make your beerdes without any rasoure. Sir, quod Raymonde, if we shall departe, shall we have with us all our bagges and baggages for that we have wonne it by armes, and in great adventure? Than the duke studyed a lytell, and sayd, I am content that ye bere with you as moche as ye may beare in males and somers, and none otherwise; and if ye have any prisoners, that ye delyver them to us. I am content, quoth Raymonde. Thus all they within departed, and yelded up the castell to the duke of Anjowe: but Raymonde de Lespe tourned and became Frenche, and served the duke of Anjowe longe tyme after, and went with him into Italy, and there dyed in a scrimysshe before Naples, whan the duke of Anjou and the duke of Savoy made their voyage.

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted by the great dilygence that the erle of Foiz made.

THUS, quod the knight, the duke of Anjou gatte the castell of Malvoysen, wherof be great joye, and made it to be kepte by a knyght of Bygore, called sir Cyquart of Luperier, and after he gave it to the erle of Foiz, who kepeth it yet, and wyll do as longe as he lyveth. And he hath made capitayne there a knyght of Bygore, one of his owne lynage, called sir Raymon de Lane. And whan the duke of Anjou had the possessyon of Malvoysen, and had delyvered his countrey fro the Englysshmen, and fro the pyllers of the countre, than he wente and layd seige before the castell of Lourde. Than therle of Foiz douted greatly the duke of Anjou, bycause he cam so nere hym, and wyste nat what he entended. Than therle of Foiz assembled togyder knightes and squyers, and sent them aboute to dyvers garysons, and sette his brother, sir Arnolde Guyllame, in the towne of Morlens with two hundred speares,[1] in the towne of Panne, and sir Peter of Cabeston into the cite of Lestrade with other two hundred speares, and sir Monaut of Nouvalles went into the towne of Hartlet[2] with a hundred

[1] *et son autre frère messire Piètre de Berne à tout deux cens lances en la ville de Pau.*

[2] *Arthez.*

speares, and Arnolde Geherell[1] into the towne of Montgeberell with a hundred speares, sir Foulquant Dorcery into the towne of Savetere with a hundred speares, and I, Espaygne of Lyon, was sente to the Mount Marson with two hundred speares. There was no castell in all Bierne but that was well provyded with men of warre, and the erle himselfe laye styll at his castell of Ortayse by his florens. Why, sir, quod I, hath he so great plentie of florens? Sir, quod he, at this houre I thynke he hath well to the nombre of xxx. tymes a hundred thousande: there is no lorde lyvenge as now, that is so large and lyberall in gyveng of gyftes as he is. Than I demaunded of hym to what maner of people he was so lyberall? He answered and said, To straungers, to knightes and squyers comyng through his countre, and to heraldes and mynstrels, and to every man that speketh with hym; there is none departeth fro him without some rewarde; for if any refuse his gyfte, he is nat content. A Saynt Mary, sir, quod I, to what entent kepeth he so moche money, and wher dothe he get it? Is his revenues so great, to gader toguyder suche treasure? Sir, I wolde gladly knowe this, if it pleased you. Well, sir, quod the knight, ye shall know it; but ye have demaunded of me two thynges: first ye have demaunded of me, to what entent he kepeth suche treasure; I shall shewe you. Therle of Foiz alway douteth of the warre that he had with therle of Arminake, and also for the busynesse of his neighbours, the Frenche kyng and the kynge of Englande, whom he wolde nat wyllingly displease; for he hath alwayes dissymuled bytwene them duryng all the warr season unto this present tyme, for he never armed hymselfe for any of their parties; he hath alwayes been ever in good case with bothe parties. I saye to you, and so ye shall saye youreselfe whane ye have ones knowlege of hym and herde him speke, and ones knowe the order and state of his house, ye shall se that he is at this daye the moost sage prince in the worlde; and there is none so great a lorde, nother the Frenche kyng nor the kyng of Englande, that wyll wyllingly have his yvell wyll. As for his other neighbours, as the kyng of Arragon or the kyng of Naver, he estemeth them but lytell, for he wyll fynde mo men of armes, by reason of suche frendes as he

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

[1] *Barberiel.*

CAP. XXIIII hath gote with his giftes and money that he hath in treasure, than bothe those kynges can do. For I have herde hym saye, that whan the kyng of Cyper was in his countre of Byerne, and moved him to have gone to the voiage of the Holy Sepulture, he hadde thought the same tyme to have made suche a journey, that if the Frenche kyng or the kyng of Englande had taken that enterprise, howe ther shulde have ben no lorde shulde have brought suche a company as he wolde have done; and as yet he is of the same mynde; and in parte, that is one of the causes that he gadereth suche treasure. The prince of Wales, the season that he raigned in the countre of Acquitayne, beyng at Burdeux on the ryver of Geronde, thought to have made hym warre. The Prince manassyde him for the countre of Bierne, and wolde have had hym to have holde his countre of hym; and the erle sayd he wolde nat, and sayd, howe his countre of Bierne was so free a lande, that it ought to do homage to no man of the worlde. And the Prince, who at that tyme was great and sore feared, said howe he wolde compell hym perforce; for therle of Armynake and the lorde Dalbret, who loved nat therle of Foiz, bycause of suche victories as he hadde won on them before, they tytled the Prince ever in his eare, and entysed hym to have made warre agaynst the erle of Foiz: but the voiage that the Prince made into Spayne brake his purpose. Also sir John Chandos, who was chefe of counsayle with the Prince, was agaynst it, that the Prince shulde make any warre to the erle. The erle of Foiz loved right well sir Johan Chandos, and he hym; but the erle douted the Prince, bycause he was fierse and coragious; and therfore he gadered togyder as moche treasure as he coude gette, to thentent therwith to defende hym if nede were. And so he set great tayles and taxes in all his countre and in every towne, whiche as yet endureth, and shall do as long as he lyveth. He had of every fyre every yere two frankes, and the ryche to beare out the poore; therby he gadered and yet dothe, great riches, and the people payeth it with a marveylous good wyll. For by reason therof, there is nother Englysshe nor Frenche, nor robbers nor reyvers, that dothe them any hurte to the value of one penny. And so his countre is in savegarde and

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

justice truely kepte; for in doyng of justyce he is right cruell; he is the moost rightfull lorde that is nowe lyveng. And so with these wordes we came to the towne of Turney, where as we shulde rest all night. So than the knight seased of his talkyng, and I remembred well where we lefte agaynst the next day, and we were lodged at the signe of the Starre, and toke our ease. And at supper tyme, the capitayne of Malvoysin, called sir Raymonde of Lane, came to se us, and supped with us, and brought with hym four flaggons of the best wyne that I dranke of in all my journey: those two knightes talked long togider, and whan it was late the knight departed and retourned to the castell of Malvoysin. And the next mornyng we mounted on our horses, and departed fro Tourney, and passed by a gyde the ryver of Lysse, and rode towarde the cytie of Tarbe, and entred into Bigore; and we lefte the waye to Lourde, to Bagneres, and to the castell of Mountgaylliard on the lyfte hande. And we rode towarde a vyllage called Teracimytat,[1] and dyd coost it, and came to a wode in the lande of the lorde of Barbasan, and we came nere to a castell called Matheras,[2] at the entre of the countre of Layre. Than the knight said to me, Sir Johan, beholde here the place of Layre; and beholde it well and advyse the countre,[3] which semed to me right strange. I thought myselfe but as lost ther, if I had nat ben in the company with that knight: than I remembred the wordes that this knight had shewed me ii. or thre dayes before of that countre of Layre and of the Mengeant of Lourde. Than I sayd to hym, Sir, ye shewed me the last daye, that whan we shulde be in the countre of Layre, that ye wolde shewe me the maner of the Mengeant of Lourde, and howe he dyed. It is true, sir, quoth the knyght; come on and ryde by me, and I shall shewe you. Than I rode nere hym to here his wordes, and than he sayde, Sir, in the season that Peter Danchyne[4] helde the castell and castell of Ortyngas, as I have shewed you before this tyme, they of the garison of Lourde somtyme rode forthe at adventure farre fro their garyson; howebeit, they had nat alwayes the advauntage, for ye maye beholde here the castell of Barbason and the castell of Martheras, wherin there was alwayes many men of warre there, and in

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

[1] *La Cieutat.*

[2] *Masceras.*

[3] *Adont advisay-je et regarday le pays.*

[4] *d'Antin.*

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

other garysons, as Bagneres, Tourney, Mountgalyarde, Salenges, Benache, Gorre, and Tarbe, all Frenche townes and garysons. And whan these garysons knewe that they of Lourde rode outher towardes Tholous or Carcassone, than they wolde laye busshementes for them, and somtyme take fro them of Lourde their praye and pyllage, and somtyme they scaped without any rencounter. And on a tyme it fortuned that Ernaulton of saynt Colombe and the Mengeant of saynte Cornyle,[1] and to the nombre of sixscore speares of good men of warre departed fro Lourde about the mountayns bytwene these two ryvers Lysse and Lesse, and so rode nere to Tholous. And at their retournyng they founde in the medowes a great nombre of beestes, oxen and keen, hogges, mottons, and lambes; and also they toke dyvers of the good men of the countre prisoners, and so drove all their pray before them. Than it was shewed to the capitayne of Tarbe, a squyer of Gascoyne, called Ernalton Bysette, an experte man of armes, howe they of the garyson of Lourde were abrode, and were comyng homeward with a great praye: than he sente to the lorde of Benache and to Enguerose, eldest sonne to sir Raymonde, and also to the lorde of Barbason, certifyeng them howe he wolde ryde out agaynst theym of Lourde. The knyghtes and squyers of the countrey of Bigore agreed to ryde forthe, and assembled toguyder at Tourney; and with them ther was the Bourcke of Spaygne, who came fro his garyson of saynt Bearte: so they were to the nombre of two hundred speares, and they had their spyes abrode in the countrey, to knowe what they of Lourde dyde. On the other syde, they of Lourd had abrode their spies, to knowe if any men of warre were abrode to lette them of their enterprise: and so moche dyde these, that eyther partie knewe what other dyde. Whane they of Lourde knewe howe they of the Frenche garysons were abrode and taryed for them at Tourney, than they were in doute, and toke counsayle what they might best do to save their pray. Than they determyned to departe their company in two; the one company to drive before them their praye with all their varlettes, and to go covertly by the Lane of Bourge, and so to passe the waye by the bridge of Tourney, and to passe the ryver of

[1] *Le Mongat de Saint Corneille.*

Lesse, bytwene Tourney and Lymosyn; and the other company to ryde in batayle by the mountayns, and to make shewe to go agayne into the countre of Layre, by Martheras, and so to fall in bytwene Barbason and Mountgalyarde, and sayd, that if they mete toguyder about Mountgaylliarde, than they shulde be in savegarde, for than we shall be soone at Lourde. Thus as they ordayned, so they dyde. And the bastarde of Carnyllacke, Guyllonet of Harmyes, and Perot Burcyer, John Callemyn of Basile, the Reed Squier, and fourtie speares, with all their varlettes, with all their pray, toke the waye by the Lane of Burge, and so to passe the ryver at the bridge bitwene Tourney and Malvoysin, thynkynge to mete all togyder bytwene Cyuitat and Mountgayllarde; and so they departed. And the other company, as Ernalton of Restue, Ernalton of saint Colombe, and the Mengeant of saynt Cornyle, with fourscore men of armes, there was nat x. varlettes among them, so they made themself redy, and rode close toguyder, ever lokyng for their enemyes, for they knewe well they were abrode to watche for them. In lyke maner as they of Lourde had taken their advise and counsayle howe to retourne, in lykewise the Frenchemen tooke counsayle howe they might encounter their enemyes; and sir Monan of Barbasan and Ernalton Bysset sayd to their companye, Sirs, we knowe well howe they of Lourde are abrode in the feldes, and driveth before them great praye and many prisoners: it shulde be a great dyspleasure to us if they shulde scape; therfore lette us put ourselfe into two busshementes; we are company ynoughe so to do. Than it was ordayned that Ernalton and the Bourge of Spayne, sir Raymonde of Benache, and Anguer of Lane, with a hundred speares, shulde kepe the passage at Tourney; for they knewe well that they of Lourd, with their praye, must nedes passe the ryver of Lysse: and it was ordayned, that the lorde of Barbasone and Ernalton Byset, with a hundred speares, shulde ryde at adventures. So thus they departed, and the lorde of Benache and the Bourge of Spaygne put themselfe in a busshment, bytwene Malvoysin and Turney; and the other company rode and toke the same waye that we be nowe in, which is called the Layre, and here they mette with them

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

of Lourde. And whan eche of them sawe other, they alyghted, and made them redy to fyght, and so came eche agaynst other, cryeng their cryes, Saynt George Lourd, and the other Our Lady of Bygore. And so there eche came to other with hande strokes, foyninge with their speares eche at other a great space; and as I herde reported of them that were ther, at the first brunt there was none overthrowen. And so whan eche of them had a great space foyned eche at other, they caste downe their speares, and toke their axes, and gave therwith eche to other great and horrible strokes, every man with his matche, and in that maner they fought toguyder more than two houres. And whan any of them had fought so long that they lacked brethe, than they wolde fayre and easely departe, and go sytte downe by a dyke syde that was full of water, and put of their bassenettes and refresshe themselfe; and whan they were well refresshed, they putte on their bassenetes and retourned agayne to fight. I beleve there was nat suche a busynesse nor a batayle so well fought, sithe the batayle that was in Bretayne of xxx. agaynst as many, as this was here at Martheras in Bigore. Thus they fought hande to hande, and Ernalton of saynt Colombe was at the poynt to have ben disconfyted by a squyer of the countre called Guyllonet of Salynges. This Ernalton of saint Colombe had a varlet, who stode by and sawe the batayle and fought nat, for ther was none that sayd any thyng to hym: and whan he sawe his maister almost at uttraunce, he was sorie, and so came to his maister and tooke his axe out of his handes, and sayd, Ernalton, go your waye and rest you, ye can no lengar fight; and than he with the axe wente to the squyer and gave him suche a stroke on the heed, that he was astonied, and had nere hande fallen to the erthe. Whane Guyllonet felte hymselfe stryken, he was sore displeased, and came agaynst the varlet to have stryken hym, but the varlet stepte under the stroke and enbrased the squyer, who was sore traveyled with so long fightyng, and so the varlet overthrewe hym wrestlyng under hym. Than the varlet sayde, I shall slee the, without thou wylte yelde thyselfe to my maister. Who is thy mayster? quod the squyer. Ernalton of saynt Colombe, quod the varlette, with whome thou haste fought

all this season. The squyer sawe that he had nat the vauntage, but that he was under the varlette, who had a daggar redy to stryke hym; so he yelded hym to rendre his body prisoner at Lourde within fyftene dayes after, rescues or no rescues. This servyce dyd this varlet to his maister: and, sir John, I assure you, ther were many feates of armes done, and many overthrowen and taken prisoners; some to yelde themselfe in a certayne space at Tarbe, and some to come to Lourde. They fought this day hande to hande; Ernalton Byset with the Mengeant of saynt Basyll; they dyde many a feate of armes bytwene them, and they fought so long till they were so wery that they coude ayde themselfe no lengar: and ther was slayne on the place two capitayns, the Mengeant of Lourde, and on the other parte Ernalton Bysset. Than ceased the batayle by agrement of bothe parties, for they were so wery that they coude scante holde their axes in their handes. Some unarmed them, to refresshe themselfe, and lefte their armure in the place. They of Lourde bare awaye with them the Mengeant slayne, and the Frenchemen bare Ernalton Bysset to Tarbe. And to thentent that this batayle shulde be had in remembraunce, wher as the two squyers fought, there was set a crosse of stone; beholde yonder is the crosse. And with those wordes we came to the crosse, and there we sayd for their soules a Pater noster and an Ave Maria. By my faythe, sir, quod I, I am gladde I have herde this, for this was a sharpe busynesse of so lytell people. But, sir, what became of them that wente with the praye? I shall shewe you, quod he. They came to the parte of Tourney besyde Malvoysin, to have passed there, as they had ordayned, and ther they founde the busshment of the Bourge of Spaygne, who brake out of their busshment, and they of Lourde coude nat recule backe; they had no remedy, but to adventure theirselfe. And I tell you trouthe, there was as sore a fight, and as long endured or lengar than that at Martheras, and there Ernalton of Spayne dyde marveylous in armes; he had an axe in his hande; whosoever he strake therwith went to the erth, for he was bygge and well made, and nat over charged with moche flesshe. He toke ther with his owne handes the two capitayns, the Burge of Cornyle[1] and Perot Palatyne of

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

[1] *Cardeillac.*

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

Bierne; and there was slayne a squier of Navar, called Ferando of Myrando, who was an expert man of armes. Some that were at the busynesse sayd, that the Bourge of Spaygne slewe hym, and some sayd he was overcome for heat in his harnesse. Finally the praye was rescewed, and all taken or slayne that wente therwith; ther were but thre saved themselfe, and they were varlettes, who departed and wente over the ryver of Lysse. Thus became of this adventure. They of Lourde never loste before so moche as they dyde than: they were courtesly raunsomed, and dyvers delyvered by exchaunge one for another, for dyvers of them that fought here at the place of Layre were taken by them of Lourd; therfore every parte were courteyse one to another in raunsomyng of their companyons. Ah, Saynt Mary, sir, quod I, is the Bourge of Spaygne so bygge a man as ye speke of? Yea, sir, truely, quod he; for in all Gascoyne there is none lyke hym in strength of body; therfore the erle of Foiz hath hym ever in his company. It paste nat a thre yere that he dyde in a sporte a great dede, as I shall shewe you.

So it was on a Christmas day the erle of Foiz helde a great feest and a plentifull of knightes and squyers, as it is his usage; and it was a colde day, and the erle dyned in the hall, and with hym great company of lordes. And after dyner he departed out of the hall, and wente up into a galarye of xxiiii. stayres of heyght, in whiche galarye ther was a great chymney, wherin they made fyre whan therle was ther. And at that tyme there was but a small fyre, for the erle loved no great fyre; howbeit, he hadde woode ynoughe there about, and in Bierne is wode ynoughe. The same daye it was a great frost and very colde: and whan the erle was in the galarye, and sawe the fyre so lytell, he sayde to the knightes and squiers about hym, Sirs, this is but a small fyre, and the day so colde. Than Ernalton of Spayne went downe the stayres, and beneth in the courte he sawe a great meny of asses, laden with woode to serve the house. Than he wente and toke one of the grettest asses, with all the woode, and layde hym on his backe, and went up all the stayres into the galary, and dyde cast downe the asse with all the woode into the chymney, and the asses fete

upwarde; wherof the erle of Foiz had great joye, and so hadde all they that were there, and had marveyle of his strength, howe he alone came up all the stayres with the asse and the woode in his necke. CAP. XXIIII Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

I toke great pleasure in this tale, and in other that this knyght sir Espaygne de Leon shewed me, wherby I thought my journey moche the shorter. And in shewyng of these maters, we passed the pase of Layre and the castell of Martheras, where as the batayle was, and so we rode nere to the castell of Barbason, whiche is stronge and fayre, and is within a leage of Tarbe, whiche we sawe before us, and a fayre waye costyng the ryver of Lysse comyng fro the mountayns. Than we rode fayre and easely at our leysar to refresshe our horses, and there he shewed me the ryver, the castell, and the towne of Mountgalyarde, and the waye that laye to Lourde. Thane it came to my remembraunce to demaunde the knight, howe the duke of Anjou, whan he was in the countrey, and that the castell of Malvoysin was yelded to him, came before Lourde, and what he dyd there. And with right a good wyll he shewed me and said, Whanne the duke of Anjowe departed from Malvoysin with all his host, he passed over the ryver of Lysse at the bridge of Tourney, and wente and lodged at Bagniers, where as is a good ryver goynge to Tarbe, for this ryver of Tourney cometh nat thyder, but falleth into the ryver of Garon besyde Mountunllyon:[1] and so the duke went and layd siege to Lourde. Sir Peter Ernalton of Bierne, and Johan his brother, Peter Danchyn, Ernalton of Restue,[2] Ernalton of saynt Colombe, and the Mengeant, who as than was lyveng, and Ferando of Myrando, with Olyver Barbe,[3] the Burge of Cornyllacke,[4] and the Burge Canuse,[5] and certayne other companions beyng within Lourde, whan they were well enfourmed of the dukes comynge thyder, they fortifyed them and their garyson agaynst hym, and helde the towne of Lourde for all the sautes that the duke made, whiche fyftene dayes contynually endured, and there were many feates of armes done. The duke ordayned many instrumentes of warre for the saute, so that finally the towne was wonne, but they loste neyther man, woman, nor good, for they were all withdrawen into the castell, for they knewe

[1] *Mont-au-Lion, Monluc.*
[2] *Rostan.*
[3] *Barbe Noire.*
[4] *Cardeillac.*
[5] *Camus.*

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

well at length the towne wolde nat holde, for it was closed but with dykes and pales. Whan the towne of Lourde was won, the Frenchemen had great joye, and so lodged in the towne rounde about the castell, whiche was nat prignable without it were with long siege. There the duke taryed more than sixe wekes, and lost more than he wanne; for they without coulde do no hurte to them within, for the castell standeth on a rounde rocke, made in suche maner that no man coude aproche it by scalynge nor otherwyse, but by one entre. And there at the barryers were many scrimysshes and many feates of armes done, and dyvers knightes and squyers of Fraunce were hurte, suche as wolde prese to nere. Whan the duke sawe howe he coude nat have his entent to gette the castell of Lourde, than he fell in treatie with the capitayne within, and offred him moche money to gyve up the garyson. The knight, who was of great valyantnesse, excused hymselfe, and said howe the garyson was nat his, but it parteyned to the herytage of the kynge of Englande; and sayd howe he coude nat sell it, nor gyve it, nor putte it awaye, without he shulde be a traytour, whiche in no wyse he wolde be, but trewe to his naturall lorde durynge his lyfe; and moreover sayd that whan the castell was delyvered hym, it was on a condycion, whiche he sware solempnely by his faythe in the prince of Wales hande, that he shulde kepe the castell of Lourde agaynst all men durynge his lyfe, excepte it were agaynst the kyng of Englande. The duke coude never have other answere of hym, for gyfte nor promyse that he coulde make. And whan the duke of Anjou and his counsaile sawe howe they coude have nothynge els, and sawe that they loste their payne, they dislodged, and at their departynge they clene brent the towne. Than the duke of Anjowe drewe backe in coostynge Bierne, and rode towarde the Mount Marsen, and had knowledge howe the erle of Foiz had fortifyed all his garysons with men of warre, wherof he was nothyng dyscontent, but he was displeased in that the knyghtes and squyers of Bierne helde Lourde agaynst hym. The erle of Foyz, as I have shewed you here before, doughted greatly the duke of Anjowe, thoughe the duke dyde hym no hurte.

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

But the erle of Arminake and the lorde Dalbret wolde have had the duke to have made hym warre, but the duke had no wyll thereto. But whyle he lodged bytwene Mounte Marsen and the Boce Dalbret, he sent to the erle, to Ortaise, sir Peter of Beule, whom the erle receyved honorably, and lodged hym in the castell of Ortaise, and made hym as good chere as he coude, and gave hym mulettes and coursers, and to his men great gyftes. And he sente by hym to the duke of Anjowe foure coursers and two allans of Spaygne, fayre and good. And there were secrete treaties bytwene the erle and this sir Peter of Beule, of whiche treaties no man knewe the entent therof of a good space after; but after, by suche evydent tokens as appered, we supposed somewhat, and the mater I shall shewe you, and by that tyme we shall come to Tarbe.

Anone after that the duke of Anjou had made his voyage, and that he was at Tholous, than the erle of Foiz sende by his letters certayne messangers to Lourde, to his cosyn sir Peter Ernalton of Bierne, desyring hym to come and speke with hym at Ortayse. And whan the knyght had reed therles letters, and sawe his notable message, he had dyvers ymaginacions, and wyst nat wheder he might go or abyde. All thynges consydred, he sayd he wolde go, bycause in no wyse he wolde displease the erle. And whan he departed fro Lourde, he sayd to Johan of Bierne his brother, in the presens of all the companyons of the garyson: Brother Johan, the erle of Foyz hath sente for me, I can nat tell you why; but sythe it is his pleasure to speke with me, I wyll go to hym. I feare me greatly that I shal be requyred to gyve up this fortresse of Lourde; for the duke of Anjou, whan he was in the countrey, he costed Bierne, and entred nat therin. And the erle of Foyz hath longe entended to have the castell of Malvoysin, to the entent to be lorde of the Lane de Bourge, and of the fronters of Comynges and of Bigore. I knowe nat what treatie ther is made bytwene hym and the duke of Anjou; but one thynge I saye playnly: as longe as I lyve I shall never yelde up the garyson but to myne owne naturall lorde the kyng of Englande. Wherfore, brother Johan, in case that I stablysshe you in myne absence to be capitayne here, that ye shall swere to me by the faythe

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

of your gentylnesse, that ye shall kepe this castell, in lyke maner and fourme as I do, and that for lyfe or dethe ye fayle nat. And Johan of Byerne sware to fulfyll his desyre. Than sir Peter Ernalton wente to Ortayse, and alyghted at the signe of the Moone, and whan he thought it was tyme, he wente to the castell of Ortayse to therle, who with great joye receyved hym, and made hym syt at his borde, and shewed him as great semblant of love as he coude. And after dyner he said, Cosyn Peter, I have to speke with you of dyvers thynges, wherfore I wyll that ye departe nat without my leave. The knight answered and sayd, Sir, I shall nat departe tyll it be your pleasur. Than the thirde day after the erle of Foiz said unto hym, in the presens of the vycount of Gousserant, his brother,[1] and before the lorde Danchyn[2] of Bigore and dyvers other knightes and squyers, the erle sayd aloude, that every man might here hym, Peter, I sende for you, and ye be come: I wyll ye knowe, the duke of Anjou wolde me moche yvell bycause of the garison of Lourde whiche ye kepe, for the whiche cause my lande was nere hande overron and good frendes had nat been; and it is his opynion and dyvers other of his company, that he hateth h me, bicause as they say howe I maynteyne and sustayne Anjou, bycause ye be of Byerne; and it is nat mete for me to my dy[illegible]e the yvell wyll of so great a prince as the duke of to me, [illegible]we is; wherfore I commaunde you, as ye wyll eschewe handes. [illegible]leasure, and by the faythe and lignage that ye owe abasshed, an[illegible]at ye yelde up the garyson of Lourde into my he might ma[illegible]Whan the knyght herde these wordes he was sore faithe. Howe[illegible]d studyed a lytell, remembringe what aunswere it is, I owne to[illegible]ke, for he sawe well the erle spake in good knyght of your b[illegible]eit, all thynges consydred, he sayd, Sir, true castell of Lourde, I[illegible] you faythe and homage, for I am a poore for me, to do with m[illegible]ode and of your countrey; but as for the Englande; he sette m[illegible] wyll nat delyver it to you; ye have sent I delyver it. Whan t[illegible]e as ye lyst; I holde it of the kyng of his blode chafed for yre, [illegible]he erle of Foyz herde that answere, A treatour, sayest thou [illegible]o, and sayd, drawyng out his daggar, sayd that for nought. An[illegible]nay? By my heed thou hast nat [illegible]d so therwith strake the knight,

[1] *présens le visconte de Brunquiel et le visconte de Gousserrant* [*Conserans*] *son frère.*

[2] *Antin.*

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and discondyted.

that he wounded hym in fyve places, and there was no knyght nor barone that durst steppe bytwene them. Than the knyght sayd, Ah sir, ye do me no gentylnesse to sende for me and slee me. And yet, for all the strokes that he had with the daggar, therle commaunded to cast him in prison downe into a depe dyke; and so he was, and ther dyed, for his woundes were but yvell loked unto. Ah, Saynt Mary, quod I to the knyght, was nat this a great crueltie? Whatsoever it was, quoth the knyght, thus it was. Lette one advyse hym well, or he displease him; for and he be angry, there is no pardon. He helde ones his cosyn germayne, the vicount of Chateau Bein,[1] who is his heryter, eight monethes in the towre of Ortaise in prison, and after raunsomed him at fourtie thousande frankes. Why, sir, quod I, hath the erle of Foyz no chyldren? No, truely, sir, quod he, by any wyfe; but he hath two yonge knightes that be his bastardes, whom ye shall se, and he loveth them as well as hymselfe: they be called sir Johan[2] and sir Gracyen. Than I demaunded yf ever he were maryed. Yea, truely, quod he, and is yet, but his wyfe is nat with hym. Why, sir, wher is she? Sir, quod he, she is in Naver, for the kyng there is her cosyn; she was doughter to kynge Loyes of Navar. Yet than I demaunded if ever the erle had any chyldren. Yes, sir, quod he, he had a fayre sonne, who had the fathers harte, and all the countrey loved hym, for by hym all the countre of Biern was in rest and peace, where as it hath ben sith in debate and stryfe, for he had maryed the suster of therle of Armynake. Sir, quod I, what became of that sonne, and it maye be knowen? Sir, quod he, I shall shewe you, but nat as nowe, for the mater is over longe, and we are nere the towne, as ye se. Therwith I left the knight in peace, and so we came to Tarbe, and toke oure lodgynge at the Starre, and there taryed all that day, for it was a towne of great easement, bothe for man and horse, with good hay and otes and a fayre ryver.

[1] *Castelbon.*

[2] *Messire Yeuvain.*

The nexte day after masse we mounted a horsbacke, and departed fro Tarbe, and came to a towne called Iorre, whiche valyantlye alwayes helde agaynst them of Lourde; and so we passed by the towne withoute, and than entred into the countrey of Bierne. Than the knight stode styll and sayd,

CAP. XXIIII

Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

Sir, beholde here is Bierne: and we stode in a crosse waye. The knight advysed hym whiche waye to take, outher to Morlens or to Panne;[1] at laste we toke the waye to Morlens, ridynge over the laundes of Bierne, whiche were right playne. Thane I demaunded of hym, if the towne of Panne were nere us. And he sayde, Yes; and so he shewed me the steple. Howebeit, the distaunce was farther of than it semed, for it was an yvel way to ryde, bycause of the myres, to them that knewe nat the countre. And nat farre thens was the castell of Lourde; and I demaunded who was as than capitayne there. He sayd, that as than the seneschall of Bigore was capitayne there, admytted by the kynge of Englande, brother to sir Peter of Bierne, as ye have herde before. That is trewe, sir, quod I; but dyde he never after go to se the erle of Foiz? He answered and sayd, Sithe the dethe of his brother he never came there, but other of his company hath ben often with the erle, as Peter Danchyn, Ernalton of Restue, Ernalton of saynt Colome, and other. Sir, quod I, hath the erle of Foiz made any amendes for the dethe of that knight, or sorie for his dethe? Yes, truely, sir, quod he, he was right sorie for his dethe; but as for amendes, I knowe of none, without it be by secrete penaunce, masses, or prayers: he hathe with hym the same knightes sonne, called Johan of Byerne, a gracyous squyer, and the erle loveth hym right well. Ah, sir, quod I, the duke of Anjowe, who that wolde so fayne have the castell of Lourde, ought to be well content with the erle of Foyz, whan he slewe suche a knight, his owne cosyn, for to accomplysshe his desyre. By my faythe, sir, quod he, so he was; for anone after that the duke came to the Frenche kyng, the kynge sent into this countre sir Roger of Spaygne, and a presydent of the parlyament chambre of Parys, and letters sealed, makyng mencion howe the kynge dyde gyve to the erle of Foiz the countie of Bygore duryng his lyfe, to holde the same of the crowne of Fraunce. The erle thanked greatly the kyng, for the great love that he shewed him, and for that great gyfte, without any request makynge: but for all that the sayd sir Roger of Spaygne coude do, saye or shewe, the erle in no wyse wolde take the gyfte; but he toke the castell of Malvoysin, bycause it was a fre lande, for that castell and the purteynaunce holdeth of

[1] *Pau.*

no man, but of God, and also auncyently it parteyneth to his enherytaunce. The Frenche kyng, by the meanes of the duke of Anjowe, dyd gyve it hym, and the erle sware and promysed to take it on a condycion, that he shulde never sette man there that shulde do any yvell to the realme of Fraunce. And so he dyde, for suche as were ther feared as moche thenglisshemen as any other Frenche garysons in Gascoyne, but the Bernoyse durst nat ronne into the countre of Foyz.[1]

CAP. XXIIII Howe the garison and castell of Lourde was cast downe and disconfyted.

[1] *les Bernois (v. l. Anglois) ne oseroient de riens courrouchier la conte de Fois.*

CAP. XXV

Howe the peace was made bitwene the duke of Berry and therle of Foiz, and of the begynninge of the warre that was bitwene therle of Foiz and the erle of Armynake.

ALL these maters that sir Espayne de Leon shewed me right well contented me; and every nyght, assoone as we were at our lodgynges, I wrote ever all that I herde in the day, the better therby to have them in remembraunce, for writyng is the best remembraunce that may be. And so we rode the sayd mornyng to Morlens; but are we came there, I said, Sir, I have forgot to demaunde of you, whan ye shewed me the adventures of Foiz, [and of Armynake, how the erle of Foiz] dyde dissymule with the duke of Berrey, who had to wyves, the doughter and suster[2] of therle of Armynake, and wheder that the duke of Berry made him any warre, and howe he dyd? Howe he dyd, quod the knight, I shall shewe you. In tyme past the duke of Berrey wolde him as moche yvell as he coude ymagyn, but as nowe, by meanes whiche ye shall here of whan ye come to Ortaise, they be accorded. Why, sir, quod I, was there any cause why the duke shulde be displeased with hym? As helpe me God, quod the knight, non; but I shal shewe you the cause. Whan Charles the Frenche kyng, father to kyng Charles that nowe is, was dyssessed, the realme of Fraunce was devyded in two partes, as in the governyng therof; for the duke of Anjou, who entended to go into Italy, as he dyd, he gave up[3] the rule, and than his two bretherne, the duke of Berry and

[2] *qui eut à femme la fille de la sueur au conte d'Armeignach.*

[3] [3] *vs* P.

CAP. XXV

Howe the peace was made bitwene the duke of Berry and therle of Foiz.

the duke of Burgoyne had the rule. The duke of Berry had the governynge of Languedocke, and the duke of Burgoyne ruled Languedoyle and Picardy. Whan they of Languedocke understode that the duke of Berry had the governyng over them, they were sore abasshed, and specially they of Tholous, for they knewe well that the duke was a sore taker of golde and sylver, and a sore oppressar of the people. Also ther was in Carcassone and in Rouergue, Bretons and Tholousins, whiche the duke of Anjou had left in the countre, and they robbed and pylled; and the brute ran, that the duke of Berry maynteyned them, to thentent to overmaister the good townes. But in this season that I speke of, the duke of Berrey was nat in the countre there; he was with the kyng in Flaunders. They of Tholous, who be great and puissant, parceyved howe the Frenche kyng was yonge, and was greatly busyed in Flaunders, for the ayde of his uncle the duke of Burgoyn: and they sawe well howe they were dayly robbed and pilled by the Britons and other, so that they wyste nat what to do. Than they sent and treated with the erle of Foiz, desyring hym, for a certayne somme of money that they offred hym, every moneth to be payed, that he wolde take on him the governynge of Tholous, and of the countre of Tholousin; and also he was desyred of other townes in lykewise. They desyred hym, bycause they knewe hym for a juste man and a rightwyse in justyce, redouted of his enemyes, and fortunate in all his businesse; and also they of Tholous loved hym, for he had been ever to them a good neyghbour. Thus he toke on him the charge and the governynge, and sware to maynteyne and kepe the countre in their ryght agaynst all men that wolde do any wrong therto, reservyng all onely the Frenche kynges persone. Than he sette men of warr to watche the wayes and passages, wher as these robbers and pyllars used to passe, and on a daye he toke, slewe, and drowned of them, at Robeston[1] in Tholousin, mo than four hundred, wherby he gate great grace and honoure of them of Tholous and of Carcassone, of Besyers, and Mountpellyer, and of other good townes there about. So that the renome ran in Fraunce howe they of Languedoke were tourned, and had taken to their lorde the erle of Foyz. And the duke of Berry, who was soverayne

[1] *Rabastens.*

there, toke therat great displeasure, and had therle of Foiz in great hate, bycause he medled so farre in the busynesse of Fraunce, and wherby he maynteyned them of Tholous styll in their rebellyon agaynst him. Than he sente men of warre into the countre, but they were fiersly driven backe agayne by the erles men, so that wheder they wolde or no, they were fayne to drawe backe, or els they had loste more than they shulde have wonne. With this the duke of Berrey was sore displeased with the erle of Foiz, and he sayd howe therle of Foiz was the most presumptuous and proudest knighte of all the worlde: the duke as than coude suffre no good to be spoken of hym; howebeit, he made hym no warre, for the erle of Foiz had alwayes his townes and castelles so well provyded for, that none durste entre into his lande. But whan the duke of Berry came into Languedocke, than he left his rule, for he wolde than no lengar exercyse agaynste the duke, but the displeasure rested styll after a certayne space. But nowe shall I shewe you by what meanes the peace was norisshed bytwene them.

CAP. XXV
Howe the peace was made bitwene the duke of Berry and therle of Foiz.

It was a ten yere paste that the lady Ellyanour of Comynges, as nowe countesse of Bouloyne, and nere cosyn to therle of Foiz, and right enherytour to the countie of Comynges, thoughe that the erle of Armynake hadde it in possession, she came to Ortaise to therle of Foiz, and brought with her a yonge doughter of thre yere of age. Therle her cosyn made her good chere, and he demaunded her of her busynesse, and wheder she was goynge. Sir, quod she, I am goynge into Arragon to myne uncle and aunte, the erle of Urgell, and there I purpose to abyde. For I have great displeasure to abyde with my husbande, sir Johan of Boloyne, for I thought he wolde have recovered myne enherytaunce of Comynges fro the erle of Armynake, who kepeth it fro me, and he hath my suster in prisone, and he wyll do nothyng in the mater; he is so softe a knight, that he wyll do nothynge, but take his ease and eate and drinke, and to spende that he hath folysshelye; and I thynke, whan he is erle he wyll take his pleasure more. Therfore I wyll no lengar abyde with hym, and I have brought with me my doughter, whom I wyll delyver into your handes, prayenge you to kepe and to norisshe her up, for I trust, by reason

CAP. XXV
Howe the peace was made bitwene the duke of Berry and therle of Foiz.

of her lygnage, ye wyll nat fayle thus to do, for I have hoope in you, that ye wyll kepe her. I had moche payne to gette her awaye out of the countrey, and out of the handes of my husbande her father. But bycause I take them of Armynake myne adversaries and yours, who wolde gladly steale my doughter awaye, bycause she is enherytour of Comynges, therfore I have brought her unto you. Wherfore, sir, I requyre you fayle me nat at this busynesse; and I am sure her father my husbande, whan he knoweth that I have lefte her with you, he wyll be right joyfull; for he hath sayd often tymes to me, that this his doughter shulde put hym to great doute. And whan the erle had well herde the wordes of the lady Elyanour his cosyn, he was right joyfull, and ymagined in himselfe howe that childe after shulde do hym some pleasure, as by the meanes of her mother, to have a ferme peace with his enemyes, or els to marry her in so highe a place, that his ennemyes shulde doute hym therby. Than he answered the lady and said, Madame and cosyn, all that ye desyre I shall do it with right a good wyll, for I am bounde therto by lynage; and as for your doughter, my cosyn, I shall kepe her as well as though she were myne owne proper chylde. Sir, quod she, I thanke you. Thus the yong doughter of Bouloyne abode with the erle of Foiz at Ortaise, and she never departed thens sithe, and the lady her mother went to Arragon. She hath been sithe ones or twyse to se her doughter, but she never desyred to have her agayne, for therle kepte her as well as if she were his owne chylde. And to the purpose as to the meane of the peace that I shewed you, the erle ymagined to gette by her the love agayne of the duke of Berry; and as nowe at this present tyme the duke of Berry hath gret desyre to be marryed, and I thynke by that I herde at Avygnon by the Pope, who is cosyn germayne to the ladyes father, he shewed me howe the duke of Berrey desyreth to have her in maryage. Ah, saynt Mary, sir, quod I, howe your wordes be to me right agreable, for it hath done me great pleasure, all that ever ye have shewed me, whiche shall nat be loste, for it shall be putte in remembraunce and cronycled, if God wyll sende me the grace to retourne to the towne of Valencennes, where as I was borne. But, sir, I am sore displeased of one thynge. What is that?

CAP. XXV

Howe the peace was made bitwene the duke of Berry and therle of Foiz.

quod he. I shall shewe you: by my faithe, that so hyghe and valyant a prince as the erle of Foiz is, shulde be without laufull issue. Sir, quod the knight, if he had one, as ones he had, he shulde be the most joyouse prince of the worlde, and so wolde be all the countre. Why, sir, than quod I, is his lande than withoute an heyre? Nay, sir, quod he, the vycount of the Castell Bone, his cosyn germayne, is his heyre. Is he a valyant man in armes? quod I. Nay, be my faythe, sir, quod he; and therfore the erle loveth hym nat, and thynketh to make his two bastarde sonnes, who be right valyant, his heyres, and thynketh to marry them in an highe lygnage, for he hath golde and sylver ynough, wherby he thynketh to gette theym wyves, suche as shall ayde and conforte them. Sir, quod I, it maye well be; howebeit, the thyng is nat reasonable, that bastardes shulde be made herytours of landes. Wherfore nat, sir, quod he, if there lacke good heyres? Se you nat howe the Spaynierdes have crowned Henry a bastarde to be kyng, and also they of Portyngale crowned a bastarde to their kynge? It hath been sene in the worlde in dyvers realmes, that bastardes by force hathe reygned. Was nat Wyllyam Conquerour bastarde sonne to a duke of Normandy, who conquered all Englande, and was kynge there, so that all the kynges syth are discended fro hym? Sir, quod I, all this might well be; ther is nothyng but that may fall; but they of Armynake are right stronge, and so therby this countrey shal be ever in warre and stryfe. But, sir, I pray you shewe me the just cause why the warre first moved bytwene them of Foiz and Armynake. I wyll shewe you, quod the knight: I ensure you it is a marveylous warre, for as they saye, eche of them have cause. Sir, aunciently, about a hundred yere past, there was a lorde in Bierne called Gascone,[1] a ryght valyant man in armes, and is buryed in the freres right solempnely at Ortaise, and there ye may se what persone he was of stature and of body; for in his lyfe tyme his pycture was made in latyn, the whiche is yet there. This Gascone lorde of Bierne had two doughters; the eldest was maryed to the erle of Armynake that was thane, and the yongest to the erle of Foiz, who as than was nephue to the kyng of Aragon, and as yet therle of Foiz beareth his armes, for he discended out of Aragon; his armes

[1] *Gaston.*

CAP. XXV
Howe the peace was made bitwene the duke of Berry and therle of Foiz.

are palle golde and goules. And so it fortuned, that this lorde of Biern had a gret warre agaynst the kynge of Spayne that was than, who came through all Bisquay with a gret nombre of men of warre to entre into Bierne. The lorde Gascone of Bierne, whan he was enformed of his comyng, he assembled people on all sydes, where he might get men of warre, and wrote letters to his two sonnes in lawe, therle of Armynake and therle of Foiz, that they shulde come to serve and ayde hym to defende his herytage. These letters sene, the erle of Foiz, as sone as he myght, assembled his people, and prayed all his frendes so moche, that he had a fyve hundred knightes and squiers armed, and two thousande varlettes with speares, dartes, and pavesses, all afote; and so he came into the countre of Bierne to serve his father, who had of hym great joye. And so all they passed the bridge at Ortaise over the ryver, and lodged bytwene Sanetere[1] and thospytall. And the kyng of Spayne, who had xx. M. men, was lodged nat far thens; and ther the lorde Gascon of Bierne, and therle of Foiz, taryed for therle of Armynac, and thought ever that he wolde come, and so taried for him thre dayes. And on the iiii. day therle of Armynac sent his letters by an haraulde to the lorde Gascoine of Bierne, and sente hym worde howe he myght nat come, nor howe he hadde nothyng to do to beare armes for the countre of Bierne. Whan the lorde Gascoyne herde those tidynges of excusacions, and sawe howe he shulde have none ayde nor conforte of the erle of Armynake, he was sore abasshed, and demaunded counsayle of the erle of Foiz, and of the other barones of Bierne, howe they shulde maynteyne themselfe. Sir, quod the erle of Foiz, sithe we be here assembled, let us go and fight with our enemyes. This counsayle was taken: than they ordayned their people, they were a twelfe hundred men of armes and sixe thousande men afote. The erle of Foiz tooke the first batayle, and so came on the kyng of Spaygne and sette on his lodgynges: and ther was a great batayle, and a fierse, and slayne mo than ten thousande Spayniardes; and there therle of Foiz toke prisoners the kynge of Spaygnes sonne and his brother, and sent them to his father in lawe, the lorde Gascoyne of Bierne, who was in the areregarde. And there the Spaynyerdes were so discon-

[1] *Sauveterre.*

CAP. XXV

Howe the peace was made bitwene the duke of Berry and therle of Foiz.

fyted, that the erle of Foiz chased them to the porte saynt Adrian in Bisquay; and the kynge of Spayne toke the abbey, and dyde on the vesture of a monke, or els he had ben taken. Than the erle of Foiz retourned to the lorde Gascone of Bierne, who made hym good chere, as it was reason, for he had saved his honour and kepte his countre of Bierne, the whiche els was lykely to have ben loste, bycause of this batayle and disconfyture that the erle of Foiz made on the Spaygnierdes, and for the takyng of the kynges sonne and brother; and the lorde of Bierne hadde peace with the Spaygnierdes at his owne wyll. And whan the lorde Gascoyne was retourned to Ortaise, there before all the barones of Foiz and Bierne that were there present, he sayd to his sonne of Foiz: Fayre sonne, ye are my true and faithfull sonne; ye have saved myne honour and my countrey. The erle of Armynake, who hath maryed myne eldest doughter, hath excused hymselfe fro this busynesse, and wolde nat come to defende myne herytage wherin he shulde have part; wherfore I saye, that suche parte as he shulde have by reason of my doughter, he hath forfait and lost it, and here clerely I enheryte you, my sonne of Foiz, after my dyscease, of all the hoole lande, and to your heyres for ever; and I desyre, wyll, and commaunde all my subjectes, to seale, accorde, and agre to the same. And all answered, howe they were well contente so to do. Thus, by this meanes as I have shewed you, aunciently the erles of Foiz were lordes of the countre of Bierne, and bare the crye, armes, and name, and had the profyte therof. Howebeit, for all this they of Arminake had nat their clayme quyte. This is the cause of the warre bytwene Foiz and Armynake. By my faythe, sir, than quod I, ye have well declared the mater; I never herde it before, and nowe that I knowe it, I shall put it in perpetuall memorie, if God gyve me grace to retourne into my countrey. But, sir, if I durste, I wolde fayne demaunde of you one thynge; by what insydent the erle of Foiz sonne dyed? Thane the knyght studyed a lytell and sayd, Sir, the maner of his dethe is right pytuous, I wyll nat speke therof; whan ye come to Ortaise, ye shall fynde them that wyll shewe you if ye demaunde it. And than I helde my peace, and we rode tyll we came to Morlens.

CAP. XXVI

Of the great vertuousnesse and largesse that was in therle of Foiz, and the maner of the pytuouse dethe of Gascone, the erles sonne.

THE next day we departed and roode to dyner to Mountgarbell, and so to Ercye, and there we dranke, and by sonne setting we came to Ortaise. The knight alighted at his owne lodgynge, and I alyghted at the Mone, wher dwelte a squier of the erles, Ernalton de Pyne, who well receyved me, bycause I was of Fraunce. Sir Spayne of Leon wente to the castell to therle, and founde hym in his galarye, for he had but dyned a lytell before; for the erles usage was alwayes, that it was hyghe noone or he arose out of his bedde, and supped ever at mydnight. The knight shewed hym howe I was come thider, and incontynent I was sente for to my lodgynge, for he was the lorde of all the worlde that moost desyred to speke with straungers, to here tidynges. Whan the erle sawe me, he made me good chere, and reteyned me as of his house, wher I was more than xii. wekes, and my horse well entreated. The acquayntaunce of hym and of me was, bycause I had brought with me a boke, whiche I made at the contemplacion[1] of Winslance[2] of Boesme, duke of Luzenbourge and of Brabant, whiche boke was called the Melyader, conteyninge all the songes, baladdes, rundeaux and vyrelayes whiche the gentyll duke had made in his tyme, whiche by imagynacyon I had gadered toguyder, whiche boke the erle of Foiz was gladde to se. And every night after supper I reed theron to hym, and whyle I reed there was none durst speke any worde, bycause he wolde I shulde be well understande, wherin he tooke great solace. And whan it came to any mater of questyon, than he wolde speke to me, nat in Gascoyne, but in good and fayre Frenche. And of his estate and house I shall somewhat recorde, for I taryed there so long, that I might well parceyve and knowe moche. This erle Gascone of Foiz, with whom I was, at that tyme he was of a fyftie yere of age and nyne: and I say I have in my tyme sene many knightes, kynges, princes, and

[1] *à la requeste et contemplation.*
[2] *Vmslance* P.

other, but I never sawe none lyke hym of personage, nor of so fayre forme, nor so well made. His vysage fayre, sanguyne, and smylyng, his eyen gray and amorous, wher as he lyst to set his regarde: in every thyng he was so parfite that he can nat be praised to moche. He loved that ought to be beloved, and hated that ought to be hated; he was a wyse knyght, of highe enterprise and of good counsayle; he never had myscreant with hym; he sayd many orisons every daye: a nocturne of the psalter, matyns of Our Lady, of the Holy Goost, and of the crosse, and Dirige every day; he gave fyve florens in small money at his gate to poore folkes, for the love of God; he was large and courtesse in gyftes; he coulde ryght well take where it parteyned to hym, and to delyver agayne wher as he ought; he loved houndes of all beestes wynter and somer; he loved huntyng; he never loved folly outrage nor foly larges; every moneth he wolde knowe what he spended. He tooke in his countre to receyve his revenewes, and to serve him, notable persons, that is to saye, xii. receyvours, and ever fro ii. monethes to two monethes, two of them shulde serve for his receyte: for at the two monethes ende he wolde change and put other two into that offyce. And one that he trusted best shulde be his comptroller, and to hym all other shulde accompt; and the comptroller shulde accompt to hym by rolles and bokes written, and thaccomptes to remayne styll with therle. He had certeyne cofers in his chambre, out of the whiche ofte tymes he wolde take money to gyve to lordes, knyghtes, and squyers, suche as came to hym, for none shulde departe fro him without some gift, and yet dayly multiplyed his treasure, to resyst the adventures and fortunes that he douted. He was of good and easy acquayntance with every man, and amorously wolde speke to them. He was shorte in counsayle and answers. He had four secretaries, and at his risyng they must ever be redy at his hande without any callynge. And whan any letter were delyvered him, and that he had reed it, than he wolde calle them to write agayne, or els for some other thynge. In this estate therle of Foiz lyved. And at mydnight, whan he came out of his chambre into the hall to supper, he had ever before hym xii. torches brennyng, borne by xii. varlettes standyng before his table all supper; they

CAP. XXVI
Of the great vertuousnesse and largesse that was in therle of Foiz.

CAP. XXVI

Of the great vertuousnesse and largesse that was in therle of Foiz.

gave a gret light, and the hall ever full of knightes and squyers, and many other tables dressed to suppe who wolde. Ther was none shulde speke to hym at his table, but if he were called. His meate was lightlye wylde foule, the legges and wynges alonely, and in the day he dyd but lytell eate and drinke. He had great pleasure in armony of instrumentes; he coude do it right well hymselfe; he wolde have songes song before him. He wolde gladlye se conseytes and fantesies at his table, and whan he had sene it, than he wolde sende it to the other tables. Brevely, all this I consydred and advised. And or I came to his court I had ben in many courtes of kynges, dukes, princes, erles, and great ladyes, but I was never in none that so well liked me; nor ther was none more rejoysed [in] dedes of armes, than the erle dyde. There was sene in his hall, chambre and court, knightes and squyers of honour goyng up and downe, and talkyng of armes and of amours; all honour ther was founde, all maner of tidynges of every realme and countre ther might be herde, for out of every countre there was resort, for the valyantnesse of this erle. Ther I was enfourmed of the moost parte of the dedes of armes that was done in Spayne, in Portyngale, in Aragon, in Navar, in Englande, and in Scotlande, and in the fronters and lymitacions of Languedocke. For I sawe come thyder to therle while I was there, knightes and squyers of all nacyons; and so I was enformed by them, and by the erle himselfe, of all thynges that I demaunded. Ther I enquired howe Gascon therles son died, for sir Espayn of Leon wolde nat shewe me any thing therof. And so moch I enquired, that an auncient squyer and a notable man shewed the mater to me, and began thus: True it is, quod he, that the erle of Foiz and my lady of Foiz his wife agreeth nat well toguyder, nor have nat done of a long season. And the discorde bytwene them first moved by the kyng of Navar, who was brother to the lady: for the kyng of Navar pledged himselfe for the lorde Dalbret, whom the erle of Foiz had in prisone, for the somme of fyftie thousande frankes. And the erle of Foiz, who knewe that the kyng of Navarr was craftie and malycious, in the beginnyng wolde nat trust hym, wherwith the countesse of Foiz had great displeasur and indignacyon agaynst the erle her

husbande, and sayd to hym, Sir, ye repute but small honour in the kyng of Navar, my brother, whan ye wyll nat trust hym for fyftie M. frankes. Thoughe ye have no more of the Armynakes, nor of the Labrisyence, than ye have, it ought to suffyce; and also, sir, ye knowe well ye shulde assigne out my dower, whiche mounteth to fyftie thousande frankes, whiche ye shulde put into the handes of my brother, the kyng of Navarr; wherfore, sir, ye can nat be yvell payed. Dame, quod he, ye saye trouthe, but if I thought that the kyng of Navarr wolde stoppe the payment for that cause, the lorde Dalbret shulde never have gone oute of Ortayse, and so I shulde have ben payed to the last penny; and sithe ye desyre it, I wyll do it, nat for the love of you, but for the love of my sonne. So by these wordes, and by the kyng of Navars oblygacion, who became dettoure to the erle of Foiz, the lorde Dalbret was delyvered quyte, and became Frenche, and was maryed, in Fraunce, to the suster of the duke of Burbone; and payed at his ease to the king of Navar the somme of fyftie thousande frankes for his raunsome, for the whiche somme the kyng was bounde to therle of Foiz, but he wolde nat sende it to the erle. Than the erle of Foiz sayd to his wyfe, Dame, ye must go into Navarre to the kynge youre brother, and shewe hym howe I am nat well content with hym, that he wyll nat sende me that he hath receyved of myne. The lady answered, howe she was redy to go at his commaundement. And so she departed and rode to Panpylone, to the kynge her brother, who receyved her with moche joye: the lady dyd her message fro poynt to poynt. Than the kyng answered, Fayre suster, the somme of money is yours, therle shulde gyve it for your dowre; it shall never go out of the realme of Navarr, sithe I have it in possessyon. Ah, sir, quod the lady, by this ye shall sette great hate bytwene therle my husbande and you; and if ye holde your purpose, I dare nat retourne agayne into the countie of Foiz, for my husbande wyll slee me; he wyll saye I have disceyved him. I can nat tell, quod the kyng, what ye wyll do; outher tarye or departe; but as for the money, I wyll nat departe fro it; it parteyneth to me to kepe it for you, but it shal never go out of Naver. The countesse coude have none other answere

CAP. XXVI
Of the great vertuousnesse and largesse that was in therle of Foiz.

CAP. XXVI
Of the great vertuousnesse and largesse that was in therle of Foiz.

of the kyng her brother, and so she taryed styll in Navar, and durst nat retourne agayne. The erle of Foiz, whan he sawe the dealynge of the kynge of Navar, he began to hate his wyfe, and was yvell content with her; howebeit, she was in no faute, but that she returned nat agayne whan she hadde done her message; but she durst nat, for she knewe well therle her husbande was cruell where he toke displeasure: thus the mater standeth. The erles sonne, called Gascone, grewe and waxed goodly, and was maryed to the doughter of therle of Armynake, a fayre lady, suster to therle that nowe is, the lorde Bertrande of Armynake. And by the conjunctyon of that maryage, ther shulde have ben peace bytwene Foiz and Armynake: the chylde was a fyftene or sixtene yere of age, and resembled right well to his father. On a tyme he desyred to go into Navar to se his mother, and his uncle the kynge of Navarr, whiche was in an yvell hour for hym, and for all this countre. Whan he was come into Navarre, he had there good chere, and taryed with his mother a certayne space, and than toke his leave; but for all that he coude do, he coude nat gette his mother out of Naver, to have gone with hym into Foiz. For she demaunded if the erle had commaunded hym so to do or no; and he answered, that whan he departed, therle spake nothyng therof. Therfore the lady durst nat go thider, but so taryed styll. Than the chylde wente to Panpylone, to take his leave of the kyng his uncle; the kyng made hym great chere, and taryed hym there a ten dayes, and gave to him great giftes, and to his men: also the last gyfte that the kyng gave hym was his dethe; I shall shewe you howe.

Whan this gentylman shulde departe, the kyng drewe hym aparte into his chambre, and gave hym a lytell purse full of poudre, whiche poudre was suche, that if any creature lyveng dyd ete therof, he shulde incontynent dye without remedye. Than the kynge sayd, Gascone, fayre nephue, ye shall do as I shall shewe to you; ye se howe the erle of Foiz, your father, wrongfully hath your mother, my suster, in gret hate, wherof I am sore displeased, and so ought ye to be. Howebeit, to performe all the mater, and that your father shulde love agayne your mother, to that entent ye shall take a lytell of this powder, and put it on some meate that your

father maye eate it; but beware that no man se you. And as soone as he hath eaten it, he shall entende to nothynge but to have agayne his wyfe, and so to love her ever after, whiche ye ought greatly to desyre. And of this that I shewe you let no man knowe, but kepe it secrete, or els ye lese all the dede. The chylde, who thought all that the kyng sayd to hym had ben true, sayde, Sir, it shal be done as ye have devysed; and so departed fro Panpylone, and retourned to Ortayse. The erle his father made hym good chere, and demaunded tidynges of the kyng of Navar, and what gyftes he had gyven hym; and the chylde shewed hym howe he had gyven hym dyvers, and shewed hym all excepte the purse with the pouder. Ofte tymes this yong Gascone, and Yvan his bastarde brother, laye toguyder, for they loved toguyder lyke bretherne and were lyke arrayed and apparelled, for they were nere of a greatnesse and of one age. And it happened on a tyme as their clothes laye toguyder on their beddes, Yvan sawe a purse at Gascons cote, and sayd, What thyng is this that ye beare ever about you? Wherof Gascoyne had no joye, and sayd, Yvan, gyve me my cote, ye have nothyng to do therwith; and all that day after Gascone was pensyve. And it fortuned a thre dayes after, as God wolde that the erle shulde be saved, Gascone and his brother Yvan fell out toguyder, playeng at tennes, and Gascone gave hym a blowe, and the chylde wente into his fathers chambre and wepte, and the erle as than hadde herde masse; and whan the erle sawe him wepe, he said, Sonne Yvan, what aylest thou? Sir, quod he, Gascone hath beaten me, but he were more worthy to be beaten than I. Why so, quod therle, and incontynent suspected some thyng. By my faithe sir, quod he, sithe he retourned out of Navar, he beareth prively at his brest a purse full of pouder, I wote nat what it is, nor what he wyll do therwith; but he hath sayde to me ones or twyse, that my lady his mother shulde shortely be agayne in your grace, and better beloved than ever she was. Peace, quod the erle, and speke no more, and shewe this to no man lyvenge. Sir, quod he, no more I shall. Than the erle entred into ymaginacyon, and so came to the houre of his dyner, and wasshed and sat downe at his table in the hall. Gascone,

CAP. XXVI
Of the great vertuousnesse and largesse that was in therle of Foiz.

CAP. XXVI
Of the great vertuousnesse and largesse that was in therle of Foiz.

his son, was used to sette downe all his servyce, and to gyve the sayes. And whan he had sette downe the first course, the erle cast his eyen on hym, and sawe the strynges of the purse hangyng at his bosome. Than his blode chaunged, and said, Gascone, come hyder, I wyll speke with the in thyne eare. The chylde came to him, and the erle toke hym by the bosome and founde out the purse, and with his knyfe cut it fro his bosome. The chylde was abasshed and stode styll and spake no worde, and loked as pale as asshes for feare, and began to trymble. The erle of Foiz opyned the purse and toke of the pouder, and layde it on a trenchour of bredde, and called to hym a dogge and gave it hym to eate; and assoone as the dogge had eaten the first morsell, he tourned his eyen in his heed and dyed incontynent. And whane the erle sawe that he was sore displeased, and also he had good cause, and so rose fro the table, and toke his knife and wolde have stryken his son. Than the knightes and squyers ran bytwene them and said, Sir, for Goddes sake have mercy, and be nat so hastye: be well enformed first of the mater, or ye do any yvell to your chylde. And the first worde that therle said was, A, Gascone, treatour, for to encrease thyne herytage that shulde come to the, I have had warre and hatered of the Frenche kyng, of the kyng of Englande, of the kyng of Spayne, of the kyng of Navar and of the kyng of Arragon, and as yet I have borne all their malesses, and nowe thou woldest murther me; it moveth of an yvell nature; but first thou shalt dye with this stroke; and so stept forthe with his knife, and wolde have slayne him. But than all the knightes and squyers kneled downe before hym wepynge, and sayd, Ah, sir, have mercy for Goddes sake, slee nat Gascone your sonne, remembre ye have no[1] more chyldren; sir, cause hym to be kepte, and take good enformacion of the mater: paradventure he knewe nat what he bare, and paradventure is nothyng gyltie of the dede. Well, quod the erle, incontynent put hym in prisone, and let hym be so kepte that I may have a reconyng of hym. Than the chylde was put into the towre; and the erle toke a great many of them that served his sonne, and some of them departed: and as yet the bysshoppe of Lascalle[2] is at Pan, out of the countre, for he was had in suspect, and so

[1] *do* P.

[2] *Lescar.*

were dyvers other. Therle caused to be put to dethe a fyftene right horribly, and the cause that the erle layde to them was, he sayde it coulde be none otherwyse, but that they knewe of the chyldes secretes, wherfore they ought to have shewed it to hym, and to have said, Sir, Gascone your sonne beareth a purse at his bosome. Bycause they dyde nat thus, they dyed horribly, wherof it was great pytie, for some of them were as fresshe and as joly squyers as were any in all the countre, for ever the erle was served with good men. This thynge touched the erle nere to the herte, and that he well shewed: for on a day he assembled at Ortaise all the nobles and prelates of Foiz, and of Bierne, and all the notable persons of his countrey; and whan they were all assembled, he shewed theym wherfore he sente for them, as howe he had founde his sonne in this defaute, for the whiche he sayd, his entent was to putte hym to dethe, as he had well deserved. Than all the people answered to that case with one voyce, and sayde, Sir, savynge your grace, we wyll nat that Gascoyne shulde dye, he is your heyre, and ye have no mo. And whan the erle herde the people howe they desyred for his sonne, he somwhat refrayned his yre; than he thought to chastyce hym in prisone a moneth or two, and than to sende hym on some voyage for two or thre yere, tyll he might somwhat forget his yvell wyll, and that the chylde might be of greatter age and of more knowledge. Than he gave leave to all the people to depart; but they of Foiz wolde nat departe fro Ortaise, tyll the erle shulde assure them that Gascoyn shulde nat dye, they loved the chylde so well. Than the erle promysed them, but he sayd, he wolde kepe hym in prisone a certayne space to chastice hym: and so upon this promyse every man departed, and Gascone abode styll in prisone. These tidynges spredde abrode into dyvers places; and at that tyme pope Gregorie the xi. was at Avygnon. Than he sente the cardynall of Amyens in legacion into Byerne, to have come to therle of Foiz for that businesse, and by that tyme he came to Besiers, he herde suche tidynges, that he neded nat to go any further for that mater, for there he herde howe Gascon, sonne to the erle of Foyz, was deed. Sythe I have shewed you so moche, nowe shall I shewe you howe he dyed.

CAP. XXVI
Of the great vertuousnesse and largesse that was in therle of Foiz.

CAP. XXVI
Of the great vertuousnesse and largesse that was in therle of Foiz.

¶ The erle of Foyz caused his sonne to be kepte in a darke chambre, in the towre of Ortayse, a tenne dayes; lytell dyde he eate or drinke, yet he had ynoughe brought hym every daye, but whan he sawe it he wolde go therfro, and sette lytell therby. And some sayd, that all the meate that had been brought hym stode hole and entier the day of his dethe, wherfore it was great marveyle that he lyved so longe, for dyvers reasons. The erle caused hym to be kepte in the chambre alone withoute any company, outher to counsayle or conforte hym. And all that season the chylde laye in his clothes as he came in, and he argued in himselfe, and was full of malencoly, and cursed the tyme that ever he was borne and engendred, to come to suche an ende. The same day that he dyed, they that served hym of meate and drinke, whan they came to hym, they sayde, Gascone, here is meate for you. He made no care therof, and sayde, Sette it downe there. He that served hym regarded and sawe in the prison all the meate stande hole as it had been brought hym before, and so departed and closed the chambre dore, and went to the erle, and sayd, Sir, for Goddes sake have mercy on your sonne Gascone, for he is nere famysshed in prisone; there he lyeth, I thynke he never dyde eate any thynge sythe he came into prisone, for I have sene there this daye all that ever I brought hym before, lyeng toguyder in a corner. Of those wordes the erle was sore dyspleased, and withoute any worde spekyng went out of his chambre, and came to the prisone where his sonne was, and in an yvell houre he had the same tyme a lytell knyfe in his hande to pare withall his nayles. He opyned the prisone dore, and came to his sonne, and had the lytell knyfe in his hande, nat an ynche out of his hande, and in great dyspleasure he thruste his hande to his sonnes throte, and the poynt of the knife a lytell entred into his throte into a certayne vayne, and sayd, Ah, treatour, why doest nat thou eate thy meate? And therwith the erle departed without any more doynge or sayeng, and went into his owne chambre. The chylde was abasshed, and afrayed of the comynge of his father, and also was feble of fastynge, and the poynt of the knyfe a lytell entred into a vayne of his throte, and so fell downe sodaynly and dyed. The erle was scante in his chambre, but the kepar of the chylde came to

hym, and sayd, Sir, Gascone your sonne is deed. Deed, quod the erle. Yea, truely sir, quod he. The erle wolde nat beleve it, but sente thyder a squyer that was by him, and he went, and came agayne, and sayd, Sir, surely he is deed. Than the erle was sore displeased, and made great complaynt for his sonne, and sayd, A, Gascone, what a poore adventure is this for the and for me; in an yvell hour thou wentest to Navar to se thy mother; I shall never have the joye that I had before. Than therle caused his barbour to shave hym, and clothed himselfe in blacke, and all his house, and with moche sore wepyng the childe was borne to the Freres, in Ortaise, and there buryed. Thus as I have shewed you, the erle of Foyz slewe Gascoyne his sonne, but the kynge of Navar gave the occasyon of his dethe.

CAP. XXVI
Of the great vertuousnesse and largesse that was in therle of Foiz.

CAP. XXVII

Howe sir Peter of Byerne had a strange dysease; and of the countesse of Bisquay, his wyfe.

WHAN I had herde this tale of the dethe of Gascone, sonne to the erle of Foyz, I hadde great pytie therof, for the love of therle his father, whome I founde a lorde of hyghe recommendacyon, noble, lyberall, and curtesse, and also for love of the countrey, that shulde be in great stryfe for lacke of an heyre. Than I thanked the squyer, and so departed fro hym; but after I sawe him dyvers tymes in the erles house, and talked often tymes with hym. And on a tyme I demaunded of hym of sir Peter of Byerne, bastarde brother to therle of Foyz, bycause he semed to me a knyght of great valure, wheder he were riche, and maryed or no. The squyer aunswered, and sayd, Truely he is maryed, but his wyfe and chyldren be nat in his company. And why, sir? quod I: I shall shewe you, quod the squier.

This sir Peter of Bierne hathe an usage, that in the night tyme whyle he slepeth, he wyll ryse and arme hymselfe, and drawe out his swerde, and fyght all aboute the house, and can nat tell with whome, and than gothe to bedde agayne. And

CAP. XXVII

Howe sir Peter of Byerne had a strange dysease.

whan he is wakynge, his servauntes do shewe hym howe he dyde. And he wolde saye, he knewe nothyng therof, and howe they lyed. Somtyme his servauntes wolde leave non armure nor swerde in his chambre, and whan he wold thus ryse and fynde non armour, he wolde make suche a noyse and rumoure, as though all the devylles of helle had ben in his chambre. Than I demaunded yf he had great landes by his wyfe. Yes, truely sir, quod he, but the lady by whom cometh the lande joyeth of the profytes therof; this sir Peter of Bierne hath but the fourthe parte. Sir, quod I, where is his wyfe? Sir, quod he, she is in Castell, with the kynge her cosyn; her father was erle of Bisquay, and was cosyn germayne to kyng Dampeter, who slewe him, and also he wold have had the lady to have put her in prisone, and he toke the possession of all the lande, and as long as he lyved the lady had nothynge there. And it was sayd to this lady, who was countesse of Bisquay, after the dyssease of her father, Madame, save yourselfe, for kyng Dampeter, if he may gette you, wyll cause you to dye, or els put you in prisone, he is so sore displeased with you, bycause he sayth ye shulde report and beare wytnesse, that he caused the quene his wyfe to dye in her bedde, who was suster to the duke of Burbone, and suster to the Frenche quene: and your wordes, he sayth, are beleved, rather thane another, bycause ye were prevy of her chambre. And for this cause, the lady Florens, countesse of Bisquay, departed out of her countre with a smalle company, as the common usage is, to flye fro dethe as nere as men can: so she went into the countrey of Bascles, and passed throughe it, and so came hyder to Ortayse to the erle, and shewed hym all her adventure. The erle, who had ever pyte of ladyes and damoselles, reteyned her, and so she abode with the lady of Carase,[1] a great lady in his countre. As than this sir Peter of Byerne his brother was but a yonge knyght, and had nat thanne this usage to ryse a nyghtes, as he dothe nowe; the erle loved hym well, and maryed hym to this lady, and recovered her landes: and so this sir Peter had by this lady a sonne and a doughter, but they be with their mother in Castell, who be as yet but yong, therfore the lady wolde nat leave them with their father. Ah, saynt Mary, quod I, howe dyde sir Peter

[1] *Corasse.*

CAP. XXVII

Howe sir Peter of Byerne had a strange dysease.

of Bierne take this fantasy, first, that he dare nat slepe alone in his chambre, and that whan he is aslepe, ryseth thus and maketh all that besynesse; they are thynges to be marveyled at. By my faithe, quod the squyer, he hath ben often demaunded therof, but he saythe he can nat tell wherof it cometh: the first tyme that ever he dyde so, was the night after that he had ben on a day a huntynge in the wodes of Bisquay, and chased a marveylous great beare, and the beare had slayne four of his houndes, and hurt dyvers, so that none durst come nere him. Than this sir Peter toke a swerde of Burdeaux, and came in great yre, for bycause of his houndes, and assayled the beare, and fought longe with hym, and was in great parell, and tooke great payne or he coulde overcome hym. Finally, he slewe the beare, and than retourned to his lodgyng, to the castell of Languedon, in Bisquay, and made the beare to be brought with him: every man had marveyle of the greatnesse of the beest, and of the hardnesse of the knight, howe he durst assayle the beare. And whane the countesse of Bisquay, his wyfe, sawe the beare, she fell in a sowne, and had great dolour, and so she was borne into her chambre; and so all that day, the night after, and the nexte day, she was sore disconforted, and wolde nat shewe what she ayled; on the thirde daye she sayd to her husbande, Sir, I shall nat be hoole tyll I have been a pylgrimage at saynt James: Sir, I praye you gyve me leave to go thyder, and to have with me my sonne, and Adrian my doughter. Her husbande agreed therto. She toke all her golde, jowels, and treasure with her, for she thought never to retourne agayne, wherof her husbande toke no hede. So the lady dyde her pylgrimage, and made an errande to go and se the kynge of Castell, her cosyn, and the quene. They made her good chere, and ther she is yet, and wyll nat retourne agayne, nor sende her chyldren. And so thus the next night that this sir Peter had thus chased the beare and slayne hym, while he slept in his bedde this fantasy toke hym. And it was said, that the countesse his wyfe knewe well, as sone as she sawe the beare, that it was the same that her father dyde ones chase, and in his chasyng, he herde a voyce and sawe nothynge, that sayd to him, Thou chasest me, and I wolde the no hurte; therfore thou shalt dye an yvell dethe. Of

CAP. XXVII this the lady had remembraunce whan she sawe the beare, by that she had herde her father saye before; and she remembred well howe kynge dan Peter strake of her fathers heed, without any cause, and in lykewise she feared her husbande. And yet she saythe and maynteyneth, that he shall dye of an yvell dethe, and that he dothe nothyng as yet to that he shall do herafter.

Howe sir Peter of Byerne had a strange dysease.

Nowe, sir, I have shewed you of sir Peter of Byerne, as ye have demaunded of me, and this is a true tale, for thus it is, and thus it befell: howe thynke you, quod he, therby? And I, who mused on the great marveyle, sayde, Sir, I beleve it well, that it is as ye have sayde. Sir, we fynde in olde writyng, that aunciently suche as were called goddes and goddesses, at their pleasure wolde chaunge and transforme men into beestes and into foules, and in lykewyse women: and it might be so that this bere was before some knight chasyng in the forest of Bisquay, and paradventure displeased in that tyme some god or goddes, wherby he was transformed unto a beare, to do there his penaunce, as aunciently Acteon was chaunged unto a hart. Acteon, quod the squyer, I pray you shewe me that storie; I wolde fayne here it. Sir, quod I, accordyng to the auncyent writynges, we fynde howe Acteon was a jolye and an expert knight, and loved the sporte of huntynge above all games. And on a day he chased in the wodes, and an harte arose before hym, marveylous great and fayre; he hunted hym all the daye, and lost all his company, servauntes and houndes, and he was right desyrous to folowe his pray, and folowed the fewe of the hart tyll he came into a lytell medowe, closed rounde about with wodes and highe trees. And in the medowe there was a fayre fountayne, in the whiche Dyana, goddesse of Chastyte, was bayninge herselfe, and her damoselles about her. The knight came sodaynly on them or he was ware, and he was so farre forwarde, that he coulde nat go backe. And the damoselles were abasshed to se a stranger, and ran to their lady and shewed her, who was ashamed, bycause she was naked. And whan she sawe the knyght, she sayde, Acteon, they that sente the hyder loved the but lytell: I wyll nat that whan thou arte gone hens in other places, that thou shuldest reporte that thou haste sene me naked, and my damoselles; and for

the outrage that thou hast done, thou mayst have penaunce. Therfore I wyll that thou be transformed in the lykenesse of the same harte, that thou haste chased all this daye. And incontynent Acteon was tourned unto an harte, who naturally loveth the water. In lykewise it might be of the beare of Bisquay, and howe that the lady knewe paradventure more than she wolde speke of at that tyme; therfore she ought the better to be excused. The squier answered and sayd, Sir, it maye well be. Than we lefte oure talkynge for that tyme.

CAP. XXVII Howe sir Peter of Byerne had a strange dysease.

CAP. XXVIII

Of the great solempnetie that the erle of Foyz made at the feest of saint Nycholas; and the tale that the Bascot of Maulyon shewed to sir Johan Froyssart.

AMONGE other solempnities that the erle of Foyz kepte on the hyghe feestes of the yere, he kept ever the fest of saynt Nycholas in great solempnytie, he and all his lande, as great as at the fest of Ester. And this was shewed me by a squier of his house the thirde day that I came hyder, and I sawe it myselfe right well apparent, for I was there on the same day. First, all the clergie of the towne of Ortayse, and all the people, men, women, and chyldren, with processyon came to the castell to fetche the erle, who all afote departed fro his castell, and went with the clergy a processyon to the churche of saynt Nycholas, and there the clergy sange a psalme of the psalter, *Benedictus dominus deus meus, qui docet manus meas ad prœlium, et digitos meos ad bellum, etc.* And whan this psalme was songe, than they began to syng as they dyde on Christmas day or Eester daye, in the Popes chapell or in the Frenche kynges, for he had with hym many syngars; the bysshoppe of Paumyers sange the masse; and there I herde as good playeng at organs as ever I herde in any place. To speke brevely and accordyng to reason, the erle of Foiz than was right parfyte in all thynges, and as sage and as parceyving as any hyghe prince in his dayes; there was none coude

CAP. XXVIII

Of the great solempnetie that the erle of Foyz made at the feest of saint Nycholas.

compare with hym in wytte, honour, nor in larges. At the feestes of Christmas, whiche he kepte ever right solempne, came to his house many knightes and squyers of Gascone, and to every man he made good chere. There I sawe the Burge of Spayne, who layde the woode and the asse on the fyre toguyder, of whom sir Espayne de Lion shewed of his force, and I was gladde to se hym; and therle of Foiz made hym good semblant. There I sawe also knightes of Aragon, and of Englande, of the duke of Lancastres house, who as than laye at Burdeux. The erle made them good chere, and gave them great gyftes. I acquaynted myselfe with those knyghtes, and by them I was enformed of many thynges that fell in Castell, in Navar, and in Portyngale, of the whiche I shall speke of, whan tyme requyreth herafter. And on a day I sawe a squyer of Gascone, called the Bascot[1] of Maulyon, a man of a fyftie yere of age, an expert man of armes and a hardy, be semynge: he alighted at my lodgynge in Ortaise, at the signe of the Moone, at Ernalton de Pyns: he brought with hym his somers and caryages, as thoughe he had ben a great barone, and was served bothe he and his servauntes in sylver vessell. And whan I herde his name, and sawe therle of Foiz and every man do hym so moche honour, than I demaunded of sir Espaygne de Lion, and sayd, Sir, is nat this the squyer that departed fro the castell of Trygalet, whan the duke of Anjou laye at siege before Malvoysin? Yes, truely, quod he, it is the same, and he is a good man of armes and a good capitayne. And so than I fell in acquayntaunce with hym, for he was lodged there as I was. And a cosyn of his, called Ernalton, capitayn of Carlate in Auvergne, with whome I was well acquaynted, helped me to be acquainted with him, and in lykewise so dyd the Burge of Compare.[2] And at a tyme, as we were talkyng and devysinge of armes, sytting by the fyre abyding for mydnight, that therle shulde go to supper, than this squiers cosyn began to reken up his life, and of the dedes of armes that he had ben at, sayeng howe he had endured as moche losse as profite. Than he demaunded of me, and sayd, Sir John, have ye in your hystorie any thyng of this maters that I speke of? And I answered and said, I coude nat tell tyll I here them: Shewe forthe your mater, and I

[1] *Bastot* P. *passim.*

[2] *Campagne.*

wyll gladly here you, for paradventure I have herde somwhat, but nat all. That is true, quod the squyer. Than he began to saye thus: The first tyme that I bare armure was under the captall of Beufz,[1] at the batayle of Poyters, and as it was my happe, I had that daye thre prisoners, a knight and two squiers, of whome I had one with another four C. thousande frankes.[2] The next yere after I was in Pruce, with the erle of Foyz and the captall his sonne,[3] under whom I was. And at our retourne, at Meulx in Brye, we founde the duchesse of Normandy that was than, and the duchesse of Orlyance, and a great nombre of ladyes and damoselles, who were closed in and besieged by them of the Jaquery; and if God had nat helped them, they had ben enforsed and defouled, for they were of great puissance, and in nombre mo than ten thousande, and the ladyes were alone. And so we, in the ayde of those ladyes, dyd sette on them, and there were slayne of the Jaquery mo than sixe thousande, and they rebelled never sythe. At that tyme it was truse bytwene Fraunce and Englande, but the kyng of Navar made warre in his own quarell agaynst the Frenche kyng and Regent. The erle of Foiz retourned into his owne countre, but my maister the captall and I and other abode styll with the kyng of Navar for his wages: and than we and other that ayded us made great war in Fraunce, and specially in Picardy, and toke many townes and castelles in the bysshoprike, these of Beauvoise and Amyens; and as than we were lordes of the feldes and ryvers, and conquered great fynance. And whan the truse fayled bytwene Englande and Fraunce, than the kyng of Navarre seased his warre, and toke a peace bytwene the Regent and hym. Than the kyng of Englande, with a great puyssance, passed the see, and came and layde siege to the towne of Remus.[4] Than the kyng of Englande sent for my maister, who was at Cleremont in Beavoysin, and there made warre for the kynge agaynst all the countrey: than we came to the kyng of Englande and to his chyldren. And than, quod the squyer to me, sir Johan, I thynke ye knowe allredy all that mater, and howe the kyng of Englande wedded his wife, and howe he came before Charters, and howe the peace was made there bytwene these two kynges. That is true, sir,

CAP. XXVIII

Of the great solempnetie that the erle of Foyz made at the feest of saint Nycholas.

[1] *Buch.*
[2] *trois mille frans.*
[3] *cousin.*
[4] *Reims.*

CAP. XXVIII

Of the great solempnetie that the erle of Foyz made at the feest of saint Nycholas.

quod I; in writyng I have it, and the contynue of all the treaties. Than the Bascot of Maulyon spake agayne and sayde: Whan this peace was thus made bitwene these two kynges, it was ordayned that all men of warre and companyons shulde avoyde and leave their fortresses and castels that they helde. Than all maner of men of warre and poore companyons drewe toguyder, and the capitayns tooke counsayle what they shulde do; and than they sayde, Thoughe these two kynges have taken peace toguyder, yet we muste lyve. Than they wente into Burgoyne, and there were capitayns of all nacyons, Englysshe, Gascons, Spanyardes, Naveroise, Almayns, Scottes, and of all maner of nacyons, and there I was as a capitayne. And there we founde in Burgoyne and about the ryver of Loyre of our company a xii. thousande of one and other, and in the same company ther were a thre or four thousande of good and chosen men of warre, and as subtell in all dedes of armes as might be, and apte to advise a batayle, and to take their advantage, and as hardy to scale and assayle towne or castell. And that was well sene at the bataile of Brinay, wher as we overthrue the constable of Fraunce and therle of Forestz, and two thousande speares, knightes and squiers. This bataile dyd great profite to the companyons, for before they were but poore, and than they were all riche, by reason of good prisoners, townes and castels that they wan in the bisshoprike of Lion and on the ryver of Rone. And whan they had the Pont Saynt Esprite, they departed their warre, and made warr to the Pope and to the Cardynalles, who coude nat be quyte of them, nor had nat ben, tyll they founde another remedy. The Pope sent into Lombardy for the Marques of Mountferant, a right valyant knight, who had warre with the lorde of Myllayne. Whan he was come to Avignon, the Pope and the Cardynals spake to hym in suche wyse, that he entreted with the capitayns, Englysshe, Gascons and Almayns, for threscore thousande frankes, that the Pope and Cardynals shulde pay to certayne of these capitayns and to their companyes, as sir Johan Hastourde,[1] a valyant Englysshe knyght, sir Robert Briquet, Carsuell,[2] Naudon le Bagerant, the bourge Camus, and dyvers other, and so than went into Lombardy, and gave up the Pount

[1] *Hawkwood.*
[2] *Creswell.*

CAP. XXVIII

Of the great solempnetie that the erle of Foyz made at the feest of saint Nycholas.

Saynt Esprite. And of all their routes, they toke but the vi. parte.[1] But we taried behynde, sir Seguin of Batefoile, sir John Joell,[2] sir James Planchyn, sir John Aymery, the burge of Piergourt, Espiot, Loys Rambalt, Lymosyn, Jaques Tryturell,[3] I, and dyvers other: and we kepte styll, and lay at saynt Clement, at Barell, at Terrare, at Brinay, at the Pont Saynt Denys, at thospitall of Ortifart; for we had mo than xl. fortresses and houses, in the countreis of Forestz, Velay, base Burgoyn, and on the ryver of Loyre. And we raunsomed all the countre, they coude nat be quyte of us, nother for payng well nor otherwise. And in a night we toke the fortresse of Charite, and there we abode a yere and a halfe, and all was ours fro Charite to Puy in Auvergne. Sir Seguyn of Batefoile had lefte his garison of Ause, and helde Bride in Auverne, wherby he had gret profite, what there and in the countre, to the value of a C. M. frankes. And on the ryver of Loyre to Orlians, and the ryver of Dalyer, was all ours. And the Archprest, who was capitayne of Nevars, and was good Frenche, coude nat remedy the countre, but in that he knewe many of the companyons, and so by his desyre somtyme the lesse hurte was done. And the Archprest dyd the same tyme moche good in Nevernoise, for he caused the cite of Nevers to be closed, els it had been overron and robbed divers tymes; for we had in those marches townes and castelles, mo than xxvi. There was neyther knight, nor squyer, nor riche man, without he were agreed with us, that durst loke out of his house. And this warre we made in the tytell of the kyng of Navar.

[1] *bien les six pars.*
[2] *Jewell.*
[3] *Tiquerel.*

CAP. XXIX

Howe dyvers capitayns, Englisshe and other, were disconfited before the towne of Sanxere by the Frenchmen.

IN the same season fell the batayle of Cocherell, where the captall of Beufz was capitayne for the kyng of Navar, and dyvers knightes and squyers of our company went to hym. Sir Jaques Planchyn and sir Johan Joel went to serve hym with two hundred speares. The same season I kept a castell, called the Becke Dalyer,[1] nere to Charyte, goyng towarde Barbanoise, and I had under me a xl. speares, and I made in the countre mylles[2] greatly to my profyte, about saynt Purcyn and saynt Peter de Moustier. And whan I herde howe the captall my mayster was in Constantyne, and assembled men of warre, for the great desyre that I had to se hym, I departed fro my garyson with a xii. speares, and I fell in company with sir Johan Joell and sir Jaques Planchyn, and, without any busynesse or reencounter, we came to the captall. I thynke, sir Johan, ye have allredy the knowlege what became of that busynesse. That is true, quod I, for there was taken the captall of Beufz, and sir Johan Joell slayne and sir Jaques Planchyn. That is true, quod the Batefoyle[3] of Maulyon; there I was also taken; howebeit, I fortuned metely well: ther was a cosyn of myne, who was called Bernard of Terryde, he dyed after in Portyngale, at the batayle of Juberot;[4] and this Bernarde, who was as than under sir Aymenon of Pomyers, he toke me and raunsomed me in the felde at a thousande frankes, and gave me a good saveconducte to retourne to my garyson of Bec Dalyer. Assoone as I came to my castell, I sent a servaunt of myne, with a thousande frankes, to my cosyn to Parys, and had my quytaunce for the same. The same season, sir Johan Aymery, an Englisshe knight, and the greattest capitayne that we had, rode forthe, costyng the ryver of Loyre to come to Charite, and he was encountred by a busshment of the lorde Rugemont and the lorde of Wodnay,[5] and by some of the Archprestes men.

[1] *Bec d'Allier.*

[2] *ou pays en la marche de Moulins.*

[3] *Bascot.*

[4] *Aljubarrota.*

[5] *Voudenay.*

CAP. XXIX

Howe dyvers capitayns were discon-fited before the towne of Sanxere.

They were farre stronger than he, and so there he was taken and overthrowen, and raunsomed to a xxx. thousande frankes, which he payed incontynent. Of his takyng and losse he was sore displeased, and sware that he wolde never entre into his owne garyson tyll he had won agayne as moche as he had lost. Than he assembled togyder a great nombre of companyons, and came to Charyte on Loyre, and desyred the capitayns ther, as Lamyt and Carsuell, and the burge of Piergourt and me, for I was there as than to sporte me: ther he desyred us all to ryde forthe with hym. We demaunded of hym wheder he wolde ryde. By my faythe, quod he, we wyll passe the ryver of Loyre at saint Thybalte, and lette us scale and assayle the towne and castell of Sanxere. For, quod he, I have sworne and avowed, that I wyll nat entre into no fortresse that I have, tyll I have sene the chyldren of Sanxere; and if we maye gette that garyson, and the erles chyldren within, John, Loys, and Robert, than we shall be well revenged, and therby we shal be lordes of the countre; and I thynke we shall lightly come to oure entent, for they take no hede of us, and this lyeng styll here dothe us no maner of profyte. That is true, sir, quod we; and so all we promysed to ryde with hym, and incontynent we made us redy. And so it fortuned that all oure purpose was knowen in the towne of Sanxere. The same tyme ther was there a capitayn, a valyant squyer of Burgoyne, of the lowe marchesse, called Guyssharte Albygon, who toke great hede to kepe well the towne and castell of Sanxer, and the chyldren within. This sir Guysshart had a monke to his brother, of the abbey of saynt Thybalt, whiche is nere to Sanxere. This monke was sent to Charyte on the ryver of Loyre for his brother, to beare a certayn raunsome thider that the townes owed by covynant. So we toke no hede to him, and he knewe all our ententes, howe I can nat tell, and all our names that were capitaynes there, and what nombre we were of, and what houre we shulde departe, and howe we were determyned to passe the ryver at the porte of saynt Thybalte: and so he retourned and went to Sanxere, and shewed his brother all oure myndes. Than therle there and his bretherne provyded for remedy, and they sente for knightes and squyers of Berry and Bur-

CAP. XXIX

Howe dyvers capitayns were discon-fited before the towne of Sanxere.

bonoyse, and to the capitayns and garysons therabout, so that they were a foure hundred speares of good men of warre, and made a busshment of two hundred speares without the towne of Sanxere, in a wode. And we knewe nothyng of all this. And at the sonne goynge downe, we departed fro Charyte, and rode a good pase tyll we came to Peuly, and at the porte there, we hadde redy bootes and barges, to passe us over and oure horses: and so we paste over the ryver of Loyre, as we had ordayned, and we were over by mydnight; and bycause the daye came on, we ordayned a hundred speares to abyde there to kepe oure horses and bootes, and the remynaunt of us passed forthe foreby the Frenche busshment. Whan we were paste a quarter of a myle, than they brake out of their busshment, and rode to them that we had lefte behynde us at the ryver syde. And anone they had disconfyted them and all slayne or taken, and our horses wonne, and the botes arested. And than they mounted on our horses, and came after us on the spurres, and were as soone in the towne as we: they cryed, Our Lady of Sanxere; for the erle was there hymselfe with his men; and his bretherne, sir Loyes and sir Robert, had made the busshement. So thus we were inclosed on all partes; for they a horsbacke, assoone as they came to us, they alighted afote and assayled us fiersly. And the thynge that moost greved us was, we coude nat enlarge ourselfe to fight, we were in suche a narowe waye, closed on bothe sides with hay hedges[1] and vyngardes; and also some of our enemyes, suche as knewe the countre, were rydden about and gette into the vyngardes, and dyd hurt us sore with castyng of stones; and we coude nat go backe, and moche payne to gette to the towne, it stode so hygh on a mountayne. So we were sore traveyled, and sir John Aymery was hurt, our soverayne capitayn, by the handes of sir Guysshart Albygon, who toke hym prisoner, and had moche ado to save his lyfe; he put hym into a house in the towne, and made hym to be layde on a bedde, and sayd to the owner of the house, Kepe well this prisoner, and se his woundes staunched, for if he lyve, he shall paye me xx. thousande frankes. And so sir Guysshart lefte his prisoner, and retourned to the batayle, and quytte hymselfe lyke a

[1] *haultes hayes.*

CAP. XXIX

Howe dyvers capitayns were discon-fited before the towne of Sanxere.

good man of armes. And there was with the chyldren of Sanxere, come thider to their ayde and to the countreis, sir Guysshart Dalphyn, the lorde Marney,[1] sir Gerarde and sir Wylliam Burbone, the lorde of Cousant, the lorde de la Pier, the lorde de la Palys, the lorde of Neutry,[2] the lorde de la Coise,[3] and the lorde of Syette,[4] and dyvers other. I say, sir, to you, this was a batayle right fell and cruell: we defended ourself as long as we might, so that on bothe partes there were slayne dyvers persones, and many hurte, for by that they shewed they had rather have taken us alyve than to slee us. And finally we were all taken, Carsayle, Lamit, Naudon, le bourge de Pyergourt, Espyot, the burge of Lespare, Augerot le Mountgyse, Philyppê of Roe, Peter of Corthue,[5] the Pesat of Palyviers,[6] the bourge of Darusen,[7] and all our capitayns, and I myselfe, and we were brought to the castell of Sanxere. Never before in the realme of Fraunce the companyons lost so moche as they dyde at that journey; howebeit, Guysshart Albygon loste his prisoner by neglygence: he bledde so sore, that he dyed for defaute of lokyng unto. Thus ended Johan Aymery, by this journey that was thus done besyde Sanxere. Charyte was delyvered, and all the garysons therabout, by composycion, that we shulde be quyte out of prison; and so we had saveconducte to departe out of the countre whider we lyst. And it fortuned as than for us, that the same season sir Bertram of Clesquy, the lorde of Beayne,[8] sir Arnolde Daudrehen, and the erle of Marche, they toke their voiage to go into Spaygne, to ayde the kyng Dampeter. But first I was in Bretayne, at the bataile of Alroy, under sir Hughe Caurell;[9] and there I recovered my losse, for the journey was ours, and I had to my parte good prisoners, by whom I had two M. frankes. Than I went with ten speares, with sir Hugh Caurell, into Spayne, and there helped to put kyng Dampeter out of his realme. And than whan the alyances were made bytwene the kyng Dampeter and the prince of Wales, and that he wolde abyde in Castell, I was there in the company of sir Hugh Caurell, and I retourned with hym into Acquitayne. Than the warre renewed bytwene the Frenche kyng and the Prince: than we had moche ado, for we had sore warre, and many capitayns, Englysshe and Gascoyns, were slayne, and

[1] *Mornay.*
[2] *Meney.*
[3] *Croise.*
[4] *Fayette.*
[5] *Courton.*
[6] *Paumières.*
[7] *Ermesen.*
[8] *Beaujeu.*
[9] *Calverley.*

CAP. XXIX

Howe dyvers capitayns were disconfited before the towne of Sanxere.

yet, I thanke God, I am alyve. Ther dyed sir Robert Briquet, bytwene the lande of the duke of Orliance and the countre of Bloyse, in a place called Olivet, and there he and all his company were overthrowen by a squyer of Heynalt, a valyant man of armes and a good capitayne, called Alars Donstienes, surnamed Barbason, for he was of that lynage; he was as than governoure of Bloys, and kepar of all the countre, sette there by the lordes therof, as Loys, John, and Guy. So it was his fortune to encountre with sir Robert Briquet and sir Robert Cheney; and they and all their company were slayne, for ther were non taken to raunsome. And at the batayle of Nyorthe in Xayntain, Carsuell was slayne by sir Bertram of Clesquy, and a sevyn C. Englysshmen were slayne there. And at saint Severe were slayne other Englysshe capitayns, as Rychard Elys[1] and Richarde Helyn.[2] I knewe but fewe except myselfe but that were slayne. I have holde fronter and made warre for the kyng of Englande, for myne herytage lyeth in Burdelois. Somtyme I have been so overthrowen and pulled downe, that I had nat wherwith to lepe a horsbacke; and another tyme I have been riche ynough, whan good fortunes came. And in a season I and Raymonet de la Pee[3] were companions togyder, and we had in Tholousyn, on the fronters of Bygore, the castell of Malvoysin, the castell of Trygalet, and the castell of Vanteulx,[4] whiche as than dyde us great profyte. Thane the duke of Anjou toke them fro us, by force of puyssaunce; but than Raymonet de Pee tourned Frenche, and I abyde styll good Englisshe, and shall do whyle I lyve. True it was, whan I had loste the castell of Trygalet, and was conducted to the castell Cuyllet, and that the duke was gone backe agayne into Fraunce, I determyned to do somwhat, outher to gette some profyte, or els to lose all, or to dye in the payne. I caused by spyall the towne and castell of Thury in Albygois to be well aviewed, whiche castell after aveyled to me, what by good fortunes and patesfyeng of the countrey a hundred thousande frankes. I shall shewe you howe I wanne it.

[1] *Gilles.*

[2] *Holme.*

[3] *Lespes.*

[4] *Nentilleux,* i.e. *Lutillous.*

Without the towne there is a fayre fountayne, and of usage every mornynge the women of the towne wolde come thyder with pottes and other vesselles on their heedes, to

fetche of the clere water ther. Than I toke fyftie companyons of the garyson of Cuillet, and we rode all a daye throughe wodes and busshes, and the nexte night about mydnight I sette a busshment nere to Thury, and I and a sixe other, all onely, dyde on us womens aray, and with pottes in our handes, and so we came to a medowe right nere to the towne, and hydde ourselfe behynde great cockes of hay that were there standyng, for it was about the feest of saint Johan, whan they make hay. And whan the hour came that the gate was opyned to lette the women go out for water, we sevyn toke our pottes, and fylled them at the fountayne, and wente towarde the towne, oure faces wrapped in kerchers, so that we coude nat be knowen. The women that we mette goyng for water said to us, Ah, saynt Mary, gosseppes, ye were up be tymes. We aunswered in their language with a faynt voyce, That is true, and so paste by them and came to the gate, and we founde nobody there but a souter, dressynge forthe of his baggage. Than one of us blewe a horne, to drawe thyder our company out of the busshment. The souter toke no hede; but whan he harde the horne blowe, he demaunded of them, What is this? Who was that blewe the horne? One answered and sayd, It was a preest wente into the feldes. Ah, that is true, quod the souter; it was sir Fraunces, our preest; gladly he gothe a mornynges to seke for an hare. Than our company came, and we entred into the towne, where we founde no man to drawe his swerde to make any defence. Thus I toke the towne and castell of Thury, wherby I have had great profite yerely, more than the castell of Trygalet with the appurtenaunce is worthe. But as nowe I wote nat what to do, for I am in a treatie with therle of Armynake and with the dolphyn of Auvergne, who hath expresse authorite by the Frenche kyng to bye all townes and fortresses of the companyons, such as they holde in their handes whersoever they be, outher in Auvergne, Rouergue, Lymosyn, Quercy, Pyergourt, Albegois, Agen, and of all suche as hath or dothe make any warre in the kyng of Englandes tytell. And many are departed and have rendred their fortresses: I cannat tell if I wyll rendre myne or nat. With that worde, sayd the Burge of Compayne, Cosyn, it is true; for

CAP. XXIX

Howe dyvers capitayns were discomfited before the towne of Sanxere.

CAP. XXIX

Howe dyvers capitayns were discon-fited before the towne of Sanxere.

of Carlat, whiche I holde in Auvergne, I am come hyder to here some tidynges; for sir Loys of Sanxere, marshall of France, wyll be here shortely; he is as nowe at Tarbe, as I have herde of suche as come thens. With these wordes they called for wyne, and dranke. Than the Bascot sayd to me, Sir Johan, are ye well enformed of my lyfe? Yet I have had other adventures, whiche I have nat shewed, nor wyll nat speke of all. Sir, quod I, I have well herde you.

CAP. XXX

Howe a squyer, called Limosin, turned Frenche; and howe he caused Loys Rambalt, his companyon in armes, to be taken.

[1] *Robaut.*

THAN agayn I demaunded of hym where Rambalt,[1] an expert squier and a great capitayne of men of warr, was become; bycause I sawe him ones in Avignon in great aray. I shall shewe you, quod the Bascot of Maulyon. In tyme past, whan sir Seguyn of Batefoyle helde Bride in Velay, a ten myle fro Puy in Auvergne, and that he had made warre in the countre, and conquered moche, than he retourned into Gascon, and gave to Loyes Rambalt, and to another companyon of his, called Lymosin, Bride and Anse, on the water of Somme. The countre as than was so desolate and full of companyons in every corner, that none durst go out of their houses. And bitwene Bride in Auverne and Anse is more than xxvi. myle, a countre full of mountayns. And whan Loyes Rambalt wolde ryde for his pleasure fro Bride to Anse, he rode without doute or feare, for he helde dyvers fortresses in the countie of Forestes and therabout, wher he refresshed hym; for as than the gentylmen of Auvergne, of Forestes, of Velaye, and the fronters, were sore traveyled and over layde with the warre: they were so taken and raunsomed, that they doughted the warre. For there was none of the great lordes of Fraunce that sente any men of warre into the countre, for the Frenche kynge was yonge, and had moche ado in dyvers partes of the realme, for in every parte the companyons and companyes rode and

dyd moche hurte, so that the realme coude nat be quyte of them. And also dyvers of the lordes of Fraunce were in Englande in hostage, and in the meane season their countreys and men were pylled and robbed, and had no remedy, for the men of the countre were without corage to defende themselfe. And so it was that Rambalte and Lymosin, who were companyons in armes, fell out: I shall shewe you howe.

CAP. XXX

Howe a squyer, called Limosin, turned Frenche.

Loyes Rambalte had at Bride a fayre woman to his lover, whome he loved parfitely; and whan he rode fro Bride to Anse, he commaunded Lymosin to take good hede to her. And Lymosin, who was his companyon in armes, and in whome he moost trusted, he toke so good hede to the damosell, that he had his pleasure of her whan he lyste, so that Loyes Rambalte was enfourmed therof, and he coude suffre it no lengar. So that he toke suche a hate agaynst his companyon, that he caused hym to be taken by his servauntes, and made hym to be driven all naked, save a breche, about the towne, and beaten with scourges, and trumpettes to be blowen before him, and at certayne places his dede to be openly cryed, and than banisshed the towne lyke a treatour, and in a symple cote putte out. This dispyte dyd Loyes Rambalte to Lymosin, whiche dispyte Lymosin toke grevously, and sayd howe he wolde be revenged if ever it laye in his power, as he was anone after. And this Lymosin, whyle he was in prosperite, in ridyng bytwene Bride and Anse, he ever forbare the landes of the lorde of Voult, dwellyng on the ryver of Rone, for he had served him in his youthe. Than he thought to go to hym, and to crye hym mercy, and to desyre hym to make his peace in Fraunce. And so in his cote afote, he went to Voulte, for he knewe ryght well the way, and so went into a house. And whan he sawe his tyme, he wente to the castell, and the porter wolde nat suffre hym to entre, but at last he spake so fayre, that the porter dyde lette him in, and commaunded hym to go no farther in without he were commaunded, and he obeyed. Whan the lorde was up, he went downe into the court to sporte hym, and so came to the gate: than Lymosin felle downe on his knees, and sayde, Sir, do ye nat knowe me? By my faythe, quod the lorde, no; he thought lytell it shulde have been Lymosin. And

CAP. XXX

Howe a squyer, called Limosin, turned Frenche.

whan he had well advysed hym, he sayd, Thou resemblest well Lymosin, who was ones my servaunt. Sir, quod he, Lymosin I am, and your servaunt: than he cryed him mercy for all thynges paste before, and shewed hym fro poynt to poynt all his busynesse, and howe Loyes Rambalte had dalte with hym at the ende. Than the lorde sayd, Lymosin, is it as thou sayest, and that thou wylte become good Frenche, I shall make thy peace. By my faith, sir, quod he, I never dyde so moche hurte to the realme of Fraunce, but I shall do agayne more profyte therto. That wolde I se gladly, quod the lorde of Voult. The lorde kept him in his house tyll he had made his peace in every place. And whan Lymosin myght in suretie ryde, than the lorde of Voult armed hym, and brought hym to the seneshall of Velay, and acquaynted hym there; and ther he was examyned of the state of Bride and of Loyes Rambalte, and whan he rydeth, what waye he taketh. And than he sayd, Whan Loyes rydeth, he hath nat with him past a xxx. or a xl. speares, and the wayes that he kepeth I knowe them by harte, for with hym and without hym I have rydden them ofte tymes; and, sir, if ye wyll sende forthe a company of men of armes, on jeopardy of my heed, ye shall have him within fyftene dayes. The capitayns ther toke hede to his sayeng, and sent out spyes, and Rambaulte was spyed as he was rydinge fro Bride to Anse besyde Lion, on the ryver of Rone. Whan Lymosin knewe it, he shewed it to the lorde of Voult, and sayd, Sir, Loyes Rambalte is nowe at Anse, and at his retournyng I shall bring you to a streight, wher as he must nedes passe by. Than the lorde of Voult made an assemble, and was capitayne hymselfe, and sente for the bayly of Velay, the lorde of Mountclau, sir Gerarde of Salyers and his sonne, sir Plauseart of Vernet, the lorde of Newcastell,[1] and for other men of armes therabout, so that he was a thre C. speares. And they all assembled at Nonnay, and, by the counsaile of Lymosin, they made two busshmentes: the vicount of Polygnac and the lorde of Chalencon had the rule of the one, and the lorde Voulte and the lorde of Mount Clau had the guydynge of the other busshment, and with them sir Loyes of Tornon and the lorde of Salyers; and they hadde equally devyded their company. The firste

[1] *Villeneuve.*

company kepte the pase nere to saynt Rambart in Forestes, wher as Loyes Rambalte shulde passe the ryver of Loyre, or els he muste have gone by Guyde or Pynne.[1] And whan Loyes Rambalt had done that he came for to Anse, he departed with a xl. speares, and thought nat to have any rencounter, and douted nothynge of Lymosin; it was the leest thought he had. And lightely ever the way that he rode outwarde he wolde nat come homewarde. And as he came outwarde, he came by saynt Rambalte, and at his retourne he toke another waye, and toke the mountayns above Lyon and above Vyenne, and under the Burge Darlentall, and rode streyght towarde the Mounastier, a thre lytell myle fro Puye. And he hadde passed bytwene the castell of Monestrole and Mountfaucon, and so came aboute the countre, towarde a vyllage called Batery,[2] bytwene Nonnay and saynt Julyane; and in the wode there was a streyght passage, whiche he muste nedes passe, or els to go by Nonnay, at whiche streight laye the lorde of Voult with two hundred speares. And Loyes Rambalt toke no hede tyll he was among them. Than the lorde of Voulte, who was redy to do his enterprise, layde the speare in the rest, and came cryinge, La Voulte, and dasshed in among the companyons, who rode abrode withoute good araye. And so at the first metyng many of them were overthrowen to the erthe, and Loyes Rambaulte was stryken fro his horse by a squyer of Auvergne, called Amblardon, and so he toke hym prisoner, and all other taken or slayne, none scaped. And ther they founde in boiettes a thre M. frankes, whiche Loyes Rambalte had receyved at Anse, for trybute of certayne vyllages therabout, wherof they were gladde, for every man had his parte. And whan Lymosin sawe Rambalt thus trapped, he came before hym, and sayd in reproche, Loyes, Loyes, here fauteth company: remembre ye of the blame and shame that ye dyde put me to at Bride for your maystres? I wolde have thought lytell for a woman ye wolde have put me to that ye dyd. For if ye had done as moche to me, I wolde nat have been so angry; for two suche companyons in armes as we were, myght have past our tyme well ynoughe with one woman. With those wordes the lordes laughed; but Loyes Rambalt had no sporte therat. By the takyng

CAP. XXX

Howe a squyer, called Limosin, turned Frenche.

[1] *à gué dessoubs le Pin.*

[2] *Vaucance.*

CAP. XXX

Howe a squyer, called Limosin, turned Frenche.

thus of this Loyes Rambalte, Bride was delyvered to the seneshall of Auvergne; for after they had lost their capitayne and the chefe men they had, they wolde kepe it no lengar. And in lykewise so dyde they of Anse, and other fortresses in Velay and Forestes, that was on their parte; for they within any of these fortresses were right joyouse to yelde up their holdes, to save their lyves. Than Loyes Rambalte was brought to Nonnay, and there set in prisone, and the Frenche kyng had great joye of his takyng, and, as I herde reported, he was beheeded at Newcastell besyde Avygnon. Thus Loys Rambalt dyed; God have mercy on him. Thus, sir, quod the Bascot of Maulyon, I have holde you with talkyng, to passe awaye the night; howbeit, sir, all that I have said is true. Sir, quod I, with all my herte I thanke you; Sir, I trust your sayenges shall nat be loste; for, sir, and God suffre me to retourne into myne owne countre, all that I have herde you saye, and all that I have sene and founde in my voyage, I shall put it in remembraunce in the noble cronycle that the erle of Bloys hath set me awarke on; for I shall write it and cronycle it by the grace of God, to the entent it shal be in parpetuall remembraunce. Than the Bourge of Compayne, called Ernalton, began to speke, and wolde gladly that I shulde parceyve by hym that he wolde I shulde recorde his lyfe, and of the Bourge Englysshe his brother, and howe they had done in Auvergne and in other places. But as than he had no leysar, for the watche of the castell sowned to assemble all men that were in the towne to come up to the castell, to suppe with the erle of Foiz. Thanne these two squyers made them redy, and lyghted up torches, and so we wente up to the castell, and so dyde all other knightes and squyers that were lodged in the towne.

CAP. XXXI

Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foyz, and howe the towne of Yran rebelled, for the great traveyle, domage, and outrage that was don thereto.

OF the astate and order of the erle of Foiz can nat be to moche spoken nor praysed; for the season that I was at Ortaise, I founde hym suche, and moche more than I can speke of; but whyle I was there, I sawe and herde many thynges that turned me to great pleasure. I sawe on a Christenmas day, sytting at his borde, four bysshoppes of his countre; two Clementynes and two Urbanystes: the bysshoppe of Paumyers and the bysshoppe of Lescalle, Clementynes, they satte highest: than the bysshoppe of Dayre and the bysshop of Roue[1] on the fronters of Burdeloys and Bayon, Urbanestes. Than satte therle of Foiz, and than the vycount of Roquebertyn of Gascone, and the vycount of Brunyquell, the vycount of Josseraunt,[2] and a knight of England of the duke of Lancasters, who as than laye at Narbone, the duke had sent hym thyder; the knight was called sir Wyllyam Wylloughby. And at another table satte fyve abbottes and two knightes of Arragon, called sir Raymonde de Mount Florentyne and sir Marten de Ruane. And at another table satte knightes and squyers of Gascone and of Bigore: first, the lorde of Daychin,[3] than sir Gaylart de la Mote, sir Raymonde of Newcastell, the lorde of Chamont, Gascone, the lorde of Compane,[4] the lorde de la Layne, the lorde of Mountferant, sir Wylliam Bernarde,[5] sir Peter of Corton, the lorde of Valenchyn, and sir Aungalle, named the Basell:[6] and at other tables, knightes of Bierne a great nombre. And the cheife stewardes of the halle were sir Espaygne of Leon, sir Siquart de Boyes Verdune, sir Monnaus of Nouvallys,[7] and sir Peter of Baulx[8] of Bierne. And the two erles bastarde bretherne served at the table, sir Ernalton Guyllame and sir Peter of Byerne: and the erles two sonnes, sir Yvan of Leschell was shewer, and sir Gracyen bare his cuppe. And there were many mynstrelles,

1 *? Lectoure.*
2 *Conserans.*
3 *Antin.*
4 *Caupenne.*
5 *Benac.*
6 *le sire de Valentin et messire Auger son frère, et le Moisne de Bascle.*
7 *Nonnans of Nonnallys* P.
8 *Vaulx* P.

CAP. XXXI
Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foyz.

as well of his owne as of straungers, and eche of them dyde their devoyre in their faculties. The same day therle of Foiz gave to haraulde and mynstrelles the somme of fyve hundred frankes, and gave to the duke of Tourayns mynstrelles gownes of clothe of golde furred with ermyns, valued at two hundred frankes. This dyner endured foure houres. Thus I am gladde to speke of the erle of Foyz, for I was there in his house a xii. wekes, and well entreated in all thynges; and whyle I was there, I might lerne and here tidynges of all countreis. And also the gentyll knyght, sir Espaygne of Leon, in whose company I entred into the countre, he caused me to be acquaynted with knyghtes and squyers, suche as coude declare to me any thyng that I coude demaunde. For I was enformed of the busynesse of Portingale and of Castell, and what maner of warre they had made, and of the batayls and rencounters bytwene those two kynges and their assysters, of whiche busynesses I shall make juste report.

Ye have herde here before howe kynge don Johan of Castell hadde besieged the castell of Luxbone, and the king Johan of Portyngale therin, whom the good townes had crowned to their kyng for his valyantnesse, howebeit in dede he was a bastarde. And also ye have herde how the same kyng sende into Englande to the duke of Lancastre and to the erle of Cambridge, who had in maryage his cosyns, to have socour of them. These messangers were two knyghtes and a clerke, sir Johan Radyngos and sir John Dore, and with them a clerke lycensiate in the lawe, arche deaken of Lysbone. These messangers dyd so moche by the see, that they came to Hampton, and there taryed a daye, and there gate horses, for they had none of their owne, and so rode to London. This was in the moneth of August. And the kyng was in the marches of Wales a huntyng at his pleasure, and his uncles, the duke of Lancastre, therle of Cambridge sir Edmonde, and sir Thomas erle of Buckyngham, were also in their owne countreis a sportynge, wherfore the kyng of Portyngales messangers had more to do. So first they spake with the duke of Lancastre, who was at Hertforde, a twentie myle fro London. The duke receyved them joyously, and opyned the letters that they brought

him, and the duke reed them thre tymes, the better to understande them. And than he sayd, Sirs, ye be right welcome into this countre, but ye be come in the worst tyme of the yere to have spedy delyveraunce of your ambassade, for the kyng and my bretherne are sparcled abrode here and ther, and ye can have no full answere tyll the counsayle come toguyder at London, at the feest of saynt Mighaell. But sythe the great parte of your message toucheth me and my brother, therfore I will write to hym, that he and I shal be shortely at London, or therabout, and than we shall take counsayle toguyder; wherfore as nowe ye shall retourne to London, and whan my brother is come nere, ye shall have tidynges fro us. The ambassadours of Portyngale were content, and so retourned to London, and were well lodged and toke their ease. The duke of Lancastre forgate nat that they had sayd to hym, and so incontynent wrote to his brother therle of Cambridge of that busynesse. And whan therle had reed his brothers letters, he prepared hymself and rode to Hertforde, besyde Ware, wher the duke was, and there they were thre dayes togyder in counsayle, and so ordayned to go to London, as the duke had promysed to the ambassadours; and so they came to London. Than these two lordes, and they of Portyngale, had great counsayls bytwene them, for the erle of Cambridge, who had ben before in Portyngale, was nothyng content with kyng Ferant of Portyngale last deed. For he sayd, he made his warre but slackely; and also agaynst the wyll of hym and all the Englysshmen, he toke peace with the Spanyerdes: wherfore the erle sayd, he had doute that at the counsayle at Myghelmas, the commontie wolde nat agre lightly to make another vyage into Portyngale, for the journey thyder before had cost greatly the realme of Englande, and no profyte therby. The ambassadours conceyved well the erles wordes, and sayde, Sir, than was than, and nowe is nowe; the kyng, whom God pardon, redouted greatly the fortunes of the worlde; but the kyng our mayster that nowe is hath another mynde and ymaginacion: for if he fynde in the felde his enemyes, thoughe he be lesse of power, yet he wyll gyve the settyng on, whatsoever fall therby; and this, sir, we dare faythfully assure you. And my lordes, besyde that, your

CAP. XXXI
Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foyz.

CAP. XXXI
Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foyz.

quarell is clere to overron and to conquere the realme of Castell, for the enherytaunce parteyneth to you and to your wyves, and to your chyldren; and to conquere it, ye cannat have so good an entre into Castell, as by Portyngale, sythe ye have all that realme according therto; therfore sir, and one of you wyll come thyder with suche a suffycient nombre, and by the ayde ye shall have there, ye shal be able to kepe the felde. The duke of Lancastre answered, Sirs, this lyeth nat in us, but in the kyng and in the realme, but we shall do oure good wylles, ye maye be sure therof. Thus they ended their counsayle. And the Portyngalois laye styll at London, abydyng Mighelmas; and the duke of Lancastre, and the erle of Cambridge, returned into their owne countreis on the marches of the Northe. Than came Myghelmas, and the parlyament at Westmynster, and the kynge approched and came to Wyndesore, and so to Chertsey, and the quene with hym, and than to Stanes, and also his chefe of counsayle, the erle of Oxenforde: for by him every thyng was done, and without hym, nothynge. The same season there was in Flaunders, bytwene the duke of Burgoyne and the Gauntoise, great warre. And ther were newly retourned out of Flaunders into Englande, the bysshoppe of Norwiche, sir Hugh Caurell, sir Wylliam Helman, sir Thomas Tryvet, and other, who had in the same somer ben at the siege with the Gauntoise before Ipre; than came the Frenche kyng and closed them in, in Burbonoise, as is rehersed here before in this hystorie. But as than there was truse bytwene Fraunce, Englande, and Flaunders, to endure tyll mydsomer after; but the Scottes had moche to do. Also there was at London the counsayle of Gaunt, and they desyred to have a governour to helpe to sustayne the kepyng of their towne; they desyred one of the kynges uncles, or els the erle of Salisbury. So at this counsayle at London there were many counsayls, as well for the Flemmynges, as for Portyngale, and Scotlande, who made them warre. The duke of Lancastre drewe to that parte that he might have a nombre of men of warre and archers, to go into Portyngale; and he shewed the lordes, prelates, and comons, howe they were all bounde by faythe and othe, to ayde hym and his brother to wynne the herytage in Castell; and that, he sayde, they promysed,

CAP. XXXI
Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foyz.

whan the kyng his nephue was crowned, and it apered by their letters sealed. And moreover, the duke complayned hym howe they of the realme dyd hym and his brother wronge, in that whan his brother therle of Cambridge was in Portyngale, that they kepte but smally the covynaunt that they had promysed; for he sayd, it was promysed to sende to hym thider two thousande speares, and as many archers, and nothyng was done, wherby their quarell of the right of their enherytaunce was greatly hyndred. The dukes wordes were well harde, as it was reason; and the moost notablest persons of the counsayle said, howe he had right to speke as he dyd; howebeit, they sayd, that the busynesses of the realme that touched them nere, must first be preferred. Some wolde that his wyll shulde have ben accomplysshed; and some other said, that it shulde be a great outrage to sende out of the realme two thousande men of warre, and four thousande archers, to so long a journey as into Portugale; for the fortunes of the see be daungerous, and the ayre of Portyngale marveylous hote; sayeng, that if the realme of Englande shulde lese suche a company, it shulde be a domage irrecuparable. Howebeit, all thynges alledged, finally it was ordayned, that the duke of Lancastre shulde passe the see with sevyn hundred speares, and four thousande archers, and every man payed for a quarter of a yere. Howebeit they reserved, that yf any accydent touchynge the realme of Englande, by the meanes of Fraunce or Scotlande, shulde happen to falle before their departure into Portingale, than to tary. The duke agreed therto, sythe he sawe it wolde be none otherwyse. And than, as ye have herde before, whane the duke of Lancastre was redy with all his men at Hampton, to take his voyage into Portyngale, and that the ambassadurs were retourned, and had brought worde into Portyngale, howe the duke of Lancastre was comyng with suche a nombre of men of warre, than the Portyngalois had great joye. So it fortuned than that a lette fell in Englande, whiche taryed the duke of Lancastre for a season, for the admyrall of Fraunce, sir Johan of Vien, with a thousande speares of good men of armes, toke shippyng at Scluse, and sayled into Scotlande, and made warre into Englande, so that all the realme came to resyst them.

CAP. XXXI
Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foyz.

All this is shewed here before in this hystorie, wherfore I nede nat to speke therof agayne, but I wyll speke of the siege of Lisbone, and of the kynge of Spayne, of whome I shall make true relacyon, accordynge as I was enformed.

Kynge don Johan of Castell beyng at siege before Lisbone, tidynges came into his hoost, by marchauntes of his countrey that came fro Flaunders, howe the duke of Lancastre, with a great nombre of men of warre, were comynge thyderwarde to reyse the siege ther. These tidynges were well beleved, for the Spanyardes knewe well howe the duke of Lancastre wolde do his payne and dilygence to make warre on the realme of Castell, bycause he claymed part therof by the ryght of his wyfe. Howebeit, the kyng helde styll his siege, and he had sent messangers and letters to have ayde out of Fraunce, and specially he sent into the countre of Bierne, and into the lande of the erle of Foiz. And out of Byerne there issued in a four dayes respyte, a thre hundred speares of chosen men of armes. And there was come to Ortaise, out of the realme of Fraunce, to go into Castell, to serve the king there, sir Johan of Rue,[1] Burgonyon, and sir Geffray Richon, Breton, and sir Geffray de Partenay, and eche of them had a company by themselfe. Than they of Bierne made them redy, as the lorde of Lynguasshe, a great barone, and companyon to the erle of Foiz, and sir Peter Lyer,[2] sir Johan de Lespres, the lorde of Bordes, sir Bertrande of Baruge, the lorde of Moriage, sir Raymonde Dansac,[3] sir John of Salagre, sir Monan of Saruen,[4] sir Pyer of Robier,[5] sir Stephyn of Valentyne, and sir Raymonde of Rarasse,[6] sir Peter of Havefan, sir Ogert of Domesson, and dyvers other. And sir Espayngnolet of Spaygne, eldest sonne to sir Roger of Spaygne, cosyn of lygnage and armes to the erle of Foiz, he went in the company of them of Bierne. These lordes and knightes of Bierne made their assemble at Ortaise, and therabout: and it was shewed me, by them that sawe them departe fro Ortaise, howe that they were the best armed and apoynted company, that wente out of Byerne many a daye before. And whan the erle of Foiz sawe surely howe they wolde departe to go into Spaygne, thoughe at the begynnynge he somwhat consented therto, and that they shulde receyve

[1] *Rye.*
[2] *Kers.*
[3] *Arzac.*
[4] *Saramen.*
[5] *Salebrière.*
[6] *Coarasse.*

CAP. XXXI
Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foyz.

the kyng of Castelles wages, yet he was angry and soroufull of their departyng, for he sawe well that his countre was sore febled therby. Than he sent sir Espaygne de Leon, and sir Cabestan, to these sayd lordes, knightes, and squyers, desyringe them to come toguyder to his castell of Ortaise, to the entent to gyve theym a dyner to their farewell. The knightes obeyed, as it was reason, and came to Ortaise to se the erle, who receyved them with gladde chere; and after masse caused them all to come to him into his secrete chambre. And than in maner of counsayle he said to them, Sirs, it is than your ententes to departe out of my countre, and to leave in my handes the warre with the erle of Armynake, and ye to go and make warre for the kyng of Spayne; this departure toucheth me right nere. Sir, quod they, we muste nedes go, for to that entent we have receyved the kyng of Castels wages; and sir, the warre bytwene Spayne and Portyngale ones atchyved, than we shall retourne agayne in savegarde. Atchyved, quod therle, nay nat so soone, for as nowe it dothe but begyn, for there is a newe kynge in Portyngale, and he hath sent for ayde into Englande: therfore this warre is likely to endure a long season, and ye to kepe the felde; for ye shall nat be fought with, tyll the duke of Lancastre and his company be come thyder, and so ye shall derely bye the wages ye have receyved. Sir, quod they, sythe we have done so moche we must nedes parforme our voyage. Well, God spede you, quod the erle, let us go to dyner, it is tyme: and than therle with these lordes and knightes went into his hall, and there the tables were. There they had a great dyner at great leaser, and was served with every thyng that to that day parteyned. And after dyner, therle ledde with hym all this company into the galarye; than he entred into comunyng with them, and sayd, Fayre lordes and frendes, it shall greve me to se your departynge out of my countre, nat for that I am dyspleased with your avaunce-mentes and honours, for in all cases I wolde gladly augment and exalte your honours and profyte; but I have great pytie of you, for ye are the chefe flour of chivalry of my countre of Bierne, and ye thus to go into a straunge countre: I wolde counsayle you yet agayne to leave this voyage, and

CAP. XXXI
Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foyz.

to let the kynge of Castell, and the kynge of Portyngale make their warre bytwene theymselfe, for ye are nat bounde none otherwyse. Sir, quod they, savynge your displeasure, we can nat do thus; and sir, ye knowe more than ye speke of; we have taken wages and gyftes of the kyng of Castell, wherfore we must nedes deserve it. Well, quod therle, ye speke well, but I shall shewe you what shall come of this vyage: outher ye shall retourne so poore and so naked, that lyse shall strangle you, or els ye shall be all slayne or taken. The knightes began to laughe, and sayd, Sir, we must abyde the adventure. Than therle fell in other talkyng, and lefte that in rest; and that than he shewed them, in maner of communycasion, all the nature of the Spanyardes, howe they be sluttysshe and lousy, and envyous of other mennes welthe. Wherfore, quod he, I reed you take good counsayle. And than he demaunded for wyne and spyce, and he made every man drinke, and than toke every man by the hande, and badde them farewell, and departed fro them and went into his chambre. And at the fote of the castell the knightes mounted on their horses, and so rode to Savetere, and ther lodged that night. And the nexte day they departed, and entred into the lande of Baseles,[1] and toke the waye to Panpylone, and they passed surely, for they payed truely for all that they tooke. And in the same season, whyle the kyng laye in Lisbone, and had layen there the space of a yere, than they of the towne of Saynt Yrayne[2] rebelled agaynst the kyng of Castell, and closed their gates, and sayde, that nother French nor Spaynisshe shulde entre into their towne, bycause of the domage that they had done to them, and oppressyons. And some sayd, it was in the faute of Geffray Rycons company, and sir Parteney, who had a company of Bretons, who toke ever that they might gette, for they set nothyng by peace. Than the cytezins toke the two castelles, and sayd, how they wolde kepe them and their towne agaynst all persons that wolde do them any hurte. And the same day that they rebelled, they slewe mo than threscore Bretons, and had nere slayne sir Geffray Partenay, but that he saved hymselfe under the walles of the towne that were nere his lodgynge. Than the Frenchmen and Bretons that were there fiersly

[1] *Bascles.*

[2] *Santarem.*

CAP. XXXI
Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foyz.

assauted them of Saynt Yrayne, but they lost more than they wonne, and so dyd nothynge. These tidynges came into the hoost to the kyng of Castell, howe that they of Saynt Yrayn were tourned Portyngalois, and howe they were in mynde to delyver the towne and castelles to the kyng of Portyngale. Of whiche newes the kynge was nat content, and called to hym his marshall, sir Raynolde Lymosin, and said, Take a hundred or two hundred speares, and go to Saint Yrayne, and knowe why the men of the towne do rebell, and what occasion they have to do as they have done. So the marshall rode forthe, and with hym a two hundred speares, and came to Saynt Yrayne: and he sent before hym an haraulde to shewe them of his comyng, and howe he wolde speke with them at the barryers. And so he dyde his message, and it was answered hym by them of the towne, sayeng, Sir haralde, we knowe right well sir Raynolde Lymosin is a gentylman, and a valyant knight, and is marshall with the kyng: he may right well come hyder, if it please hym, unarmed into the towne, or els nat. This was all the message that the haralde brought to his mayster. Thane sir Raynolde sayd, I am nat come hyder to do them any domage, but to knowe their ententes; it is all one to me, to entre armed or unarmed, to knowe their wylles. And so he, and sixe with hym, rode thyder unarmed, and lefte all his company behynde hym; and so he alyghted before the barryers. And whan they within sawe him in that estate, they opyned the gate and receyved him into the towne, and made hym good chere. And than he assembled the people in the market place, and sayde, Sirs, all ye that dwell in this towne, take hede what I saye; I am sente hyder by the kynge of Castell, to demaunde of you for what entencion ye do rebell, and close your gates, and have slayne of them that be come hyder to serve the kynge; knowe for trouthe, the kyng is sore displeased with you, and also he is enfourmed, howe that ye have taken in possessyon the two castelles of this towne, whiche parteyneth to his enherytaunce, and howe that ye wyll delyver them to his adversary, the kyng of Portyngale. Than they aunswered and sayd, Sir Raynolde, savynge the kynges grace, we are nat so disposed, nor to rendre them

CAP. XXXI Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foyz.

to any mannes handes, but to our kynge, the kynge of Castell, of whome we holde them, so that he governe us in peace and justice; and that we do, or have done, was in the faut of these robbers and pyllers the Bretons, who were lodged in this towne; for yf we had been Sarazyns or worse people, we coulde nat have ben worse dalte withall than we were, as in ravysshinge of our wyves and doughters, breakynge up our coffers, and breakynge out of the heedes of our vesselles of wyne, beatynge and meamynge of us, whan we speke any worde to them. Therfore it can nat be marveyled, whan we sawe these outrages done to us and to ours, by them that shulde defende us, though we were displeased; men wyll be displeased for lesse cause. Sir, ye maye shewe all this if it please you, for we be of one accorde, that whosoever come, we wyll receyve into our towne nother Frenche nor Breton, nor none but the kynges owne persone, with suche as shall please hym, so that we be nat traveyled nor putte to vyolence. Whane sir Raynolde herde them saye so, he was apeased, for it semed to hym that they dyd no wronge to putte out of their towne their enemyes. And than he sayde, O, ye good people, I have well herde you, and well understande you: ye shall abyde in peace, and I wyll retourne to the kynge, and shewe hym all that ye have sayd, and in good faythe I shall do for you as moche as in me is possyble to do. Sir, we thanke you, quod they, and we trust in you, that if the kyng have any yvell informacyon of us, that ye wyll be oure good meane. And than sir Raynolde tooke his leave and departed, and retourned to his company, who abode for hym in the feldes. And so he rode tyll he came to the hoost before Lisbone, and lyghted at his lodgynge, and wente to the kynge, and shewed hym all that he hadde harde and founde with them of Yrayne. Whan the kyng knewe the trouthe, he sayd, By my faythe they have done wisely, for no man can be sure of thes robbers.

And whan sir Geffray Richone, and sir Geffray Partenay, and their companyes, sawe howe they coulde have none other remedy of them of Saynt Yrayne, and that the kynge of Castell dissymuled with them, they were sore displeased, and sayd among themselfe, We have well lefte the realme

of Fraunce to come hyder, to serve the kyng of Spayne, thus to be shamed and domaged by a sorte of villayns, and we can have no right; we trust shortly hyder wyll come a sorte of knightes of Gascone; we wyll suffre tyll they come, and than we wyll all agree togyder, and reveng our companyons that they have slayne and yvell entreated. Tidynges came into the hoost to the kyng and to his counsayle, that the Bretons sore manasshed them of Saynt Yrayne, and maketh their avaunte, that the Gascoyns ones come, howe they shulde derely paye for that is done. Wherfore the kyng was counsayled to departe fro the siege, and to go and refresshe hym a season at Saynt Yrayns, and to sette the mater in a good waye, and so ther to tary the comyng of the Gascoyns, of whome there were a foure hundred speares of good men of warre; wherof the kynge was joyfull, and wolde nat that they shulde fynde the countre in trouble at their comynge. And also moche of his people desyred to refresshe theym, for there they had layen longe, and nothynge done. Than it was commaunded every man to dislodge, and to drawe towarde Saynt Yrayne: than the Spanyardes dyslodged, and all other, and so came into the marchesse of Saynt Yrayne. Whan they of Saint Yrayne knewe howe the kynge of Castell was comyng towarde their towne, they ordayned twelfe men, the most notablest persons of their towne, to mount on their horses: and so they dyde, and rode tyll they came where the kynge was, to knowe his pleasure. And the kynge was alighted under the shadowe of olyve trees, to refresshe hym, for the great heate that was than; and this was a two leages fro Saynt Yrayne. And there was sir Raynolde Lymosin, marshall of the hoost, who knewe of their comynge, and so he was present by the kynge whan they came and kneled downe, and said as foloweth:

CAP. XXXI

Of the state or ordynaunce of the erle of Foyz.

CAP. XXXII

Howe the kyng of Castell lefte the siege of Lixbone: and howe they of Saynt Yrayne excused themselfe.

RIGHT redouted prince, and noble kynge of Castell, we are come hyder to youre presens, sende fro the poore commynaltie of youre poore towne and bayliwike of Saynt Yrayne. To them it is gyven to understande, howe ye be greatly with them displeased; and sir, wheder it be thus, or shal be, right redouted sir, the faute came nat by them, but by reason of the injuryes and oppressyons that the Bretons hath done to them, suche as were in their towne. Sir, all their yvell dedes can nat come to knowledge; sir, we blame nat the maysters, squiers, nor knightes, nor capitens, but all onely them that dyde us hurte; for sir, these pyllers and robbers, Bretons, have doone with us suche dedes, that it were marveyle to thynke or to recorde it. Sir, they helde a season in subjectyon the towne and countre about Saynt Yrayne, so that we herde of theym many great complayntes; and sir, in the dispyte of us, they wolde breake up oure cofers, and take all that we had, and vyolate our wyves and our doughters before our faces; and whan we spake any worde, we were beten, maymed, or slayne. In this povertie we were a two monethes or more; wherfore right redouted and noble kynge, we besech your grace, if we have displeased you for this cause, or for any other, that it maye please you that we may have true justyce and laufull informacyon, and to maynteygne us in our ryght, as ye promysed and sware to us, to kepe us in our lyberties, the first tyme we sware you kynge in the towne of Saynt Yrayne; sir, ye shall do great almesse on us. For sir, whan ye be come thyder, we truste in you and in your counsayle to be suche noblenesse, that the towne of Saynt Yrayne shall be opyned agaynst your comynge: and that it may please your grace, your poore people there cryeng for mercy, and complaynynge of their injuryes and oppressyons done to them, that youre royall majestie, and your

CAP. XXXII

Howe the kyng of Castell lefte the siege of Lixbone.

noble counsayle, wyll graunt them grace and remyssyon of that is paste, and to remedy their wronges. The kyng stode styll a lytell, and sir Raynolde Lymosin kneled downe, and said, Dere sir, ye have herde your people of Saynt Yrayns complaynt, shewyng what hath ben don to them, wherfore may it plase you to answere them. Raynold, quod the kyng, we knowe well they had a juste cause to do as they dyde; go to them and bydde them ryse and go their wayes to Saynt Yrayne, and make redy for my comyng, for ther we wyll lye this night; and also, shewe them howe they shal be well maynteyned in their right. Than sir Raynolde rose and went to them, and sayd, Sirs, aryse, the kyng hath well conceyved your sayeng, ye desyre but right and justyce, and that ye shall have; go your wayes, and apparell as ye ought to do the towne of Saynte Yrayns agaynst the kynges comyng, and do so that he may gyve you thanke: your maters shall come well to passe, by suche meanes as ye shall have in your ayde. Sir, quod they, we thanke you. Than they toke their leave of the kyng, and retourned to their towne, and shewed all that they had herde of the kyng, and the answere that sir Raynolde Lymosin made them on the kynges behalfe, wherof all they of the towne were gladde. Than they apparelled their towne richely agaynst the kynges comyng, and strawed the stretes with fresshe grene herbes. So the kyng entred in the evenyng, and lodged at the castell called the Lyon, and his men in the towne as many as might, and the moost parte in the feldes, and in the villages therabout. Ther the kyng was well a moneth: and so the mater stode; for if they had done more, more had they lost.

CAP. XXXIII

Of the marveylous batayle that was at Juberoth, bytwene the kynge of Castell, and kyng Johan of Portyngale.

WHYLE the kynge of Castell was at Saint Yrayns, ther come to hym the Gascons of Bierne, with a fayre company; sir Raynolde Lymosin rode to receyve them, and welcomed them ryght swetely, as he that coulde right well do it, and brought them to the kyng, who had great joye of their comynge, and commaunded sir Raynolde Lymosin to se them well lodged at their ease: and he dyde so that they were contented. Thus these busynesses rested, and the kyng laye styll at Saynt Yrayns, and his people there about. The kynge of Castell hadde as than abrode lodged in the feldes, and therabout, a four thousande men of armes, and xxx. thousande of other. And on a daye he called the barones of Fraunce to counsayle, to knowe their myndes, howe he shulde mentayne forthe his warre, for he had layen at great cost before Lixbone, and had done nothynge. And surely if the Gascoins had nat come and encoraged the kynge, he had departed fro Saynt Yrayns, and gone outher to Bergus, or into Galice, for his people were sore anoyed to lye so longe in the feldes. Whan the knyghtes of Fraunce, and of Bierne, were come before the kynge, he sayde, Fayre sirs, ye be all good men of warre, wherfore I wolde have your counsayle, howe I may maynteyne my warre agaynst the Lyxbonoyes and Portyngaloyes, that have kepte me here in the felde a yere, and yet I have done nothynge to them; I had thought to have gotte them out of Lixbone to have fought with them, but they wolde in no wyse issue out; wherfore my people gyve me counsayle, to gyve every man leave to departe to their owne houses; wherfore I pray you gyve me youre advyse. The knyghtes of Fraunce, and of Byerne, who were but newely come, and desyred armes, and as than had nothynge done, thynking to deserve their wages that they had receyved, aunswered and sayde, Sir, ye be a puyssant man of landes, and lytell costeth

CAP. XXXIII

Of the marveylous batayle that was at Juberoth.

you the payne and traveyle of your people, and specially sithe they be in their owne countrey: we wolde nat saye so moche yf they were in a straunge countre clene without provysion; but as nowe we saye, they ought nat to gyve you any suche counsayle, for they be here in as great ease, as we se, as though they were at home. Sir, we saye to you nat in maner of a determynate counsayle, for ye are wyse ynough, but we thynke by your highe prudence, the best were to chuse as yet to kepe the felde: ye maye well kepe it tyll the feest of saint Michaell, and paradventure by that tyme your enemyes wyll assemble togyder, and drawe out into the felde whan ye take leest hede therto, and so than without fayle they shal be fought withall. Sir, we have great desyre to wyn somwhat, for this journey hath cost us moche, and great payne and traveyle, bothe to ourself and to our horses, or we came into this countre; therfore, sir, it shall nat be the opinyon of our company thus to departe agayne. By my faithe, quod the kyng, ye speke well and truely; in this warre and other, I shall use fro hensforthe after your counsayle; for the kyng my father, and I also, have founde alwayes in youre countreis great trouthe and faythfulnesse. And God have mercy of sir Bertram of Clesquyes soule, for he was a true knyght, by whome in his tyme we had many recoveraunses, and good journeys.

The wordes and counsails that the kyng had of them of Fraunce, and of Bierne, were anone knowen among the lordes and knightes of Spaygne, wherwith they were sore displeased, for two causes. One, bycause it semed to them that their kyng had more trust and confydence in straungers, than in them who were his liege men, and had crowned hym kyng; the seconde was, in that they of Fraunce counsayled the kyng to kepe styll his warre, and they felyng themselfe so wery of the warre; and so spake among themselfe in dyvers maners, nat openly but prively. They wolde saye the kyng coude make no warre but by the Frenchmen, and in lykewise no more coude his father. So they had great envy at the Frenchemen, whiche well appered; for whan the Frenche varlettes went out a forragyng, if the Spaynisshe forrengers were stronger, than they wolde take their forage fro them, and beate them and mayme them, so that com-

CAP. XXXIII

Of the marveylous batayle that was at Juberoth.

playntes came therof to the kynge. And he blamed therfore his marshall sir Raynolde Lymosyn, and sayde, Why have ye nat provyded for this mater? The marshall excused hym, and sayde, as God might helpe hym, he knewe nothynge therof, and that he wolde provyde a remedy fro thensforthe. Incontynent he stablysshed men of armes to kepe the feldes, that the Frenche forengers rode at their suretie; and also he made a crye and a commaundement, that every man that had any vitayle or provisyon to sell, that they shulde bringe it to the felde before Saint Yrayns, and they shuld have a prise reasonable for every thyng. So than the straungers had largely their parte, for the kyng ordayned that they shulde be served before all other, wherof the Spanyardes had great dispyte.

So it was, the same weke that the kyng of Castell departed fro the siege of Lixbone, thre great shyppes of men of warre, and Englysshe archers, aryved at Lixbone. They were to the nombre of fyve hundred, one and other, and the thirde parte of them were of the companyons adventurers, havyng no wages of no man; some were of Calys, of Chierburge, of Brest in Bretayne, of Mortaygne in Poytou. They had herde of the warre bytwene Castell and Portyngale, and they came to Burdeux, and ther assembled and sayd, Let us go at adventure into Portyngale, we shall fynde them there that wyll receyve us and sette us awarke. Sir Johan Harpedan, who as than was marshall of Burdeux, counsayled them greatly therto, for he wolde nat they shulde abyde in Burdeloys, for they might ther have done more hurte than good, bycause they were companyons adventurers, and had nothyng to lese. Of them that arryved at Lixbon, I can nat name all: there were thre squyers Englysshe that were their capitayns, one was called Northbery, and another Morbery, and the thirde Huguelyn of Harcerell.[1] And there were none of them paste the age of fyftie yere, and good men of armes, and well used in the feates of warr. Of the comyng of these Englysshemen they of Lixbone were right gladde, and so was the kyng of Portyngale, who wolde se them; and so they went to the palays where the kyng was, who made them great chere, and demaunded of them if the duke of Lancastre had sent them thyder. Sir, quod Northbery, it

[1] *Hardeshull.*

CAP. XXXIII

Of the marveylous batayle that was at Juberoth.

is a longe season sythe he had any knowledge of us, or we of hym; sir, we be men of dyvers sortes sekynge for adventures, here be some are come to serve you fro the towne of Calays. By my faythe, quod the kynge, you and they bothe are right hartely welcome, your comyng dothe me great good and joye, and shortely I shall sette you awarke; we have ben here inclosed a gret season, so that we be wery therof, but nowe we wyll be at large in the felde, as well as our enemyes hath been. Sir, quod they, we desyre nothynge els; and sir, we desyre you that shortely we maye se youre enemyes. The kynge made them a dyner in his palays at Lixbone, and commaunded that they shulde all be lodged in the cytie at their ease, and to be payed for their wages for thre monethes. Than the kyng set his clerkes awarke, and made letters, and sente them over all his realme, commaundynge every man able to beare harnesse to drawe to Lixbone.

All suche as these letters came unto obeyed nat, for many abode styll in their houses: for thre partes of the realme dissymuled with the kynge and with theym of Lixbone, bycause they had crowned kynge a bastarde, and spake great wordes ther agaynst prively; and bycause of the great trouble and dyfference that the kynge of Castell and his counsayle sawe in the realme of Portyngale, made hym to avaunce hymselfe, to the entent to have conquered the countre, sayenge, howe all shulde be wonne with one dayes journey of batayle, and that yf they of Lixbone might be overthrowen, the resydue of the countrey wolde nat be sorie of it, but put out of the realme that mayster Denyce, or elles slee hym, and than it shulde be a lande of conquest for hym, for his wyfe was ryght enherytoure. Yet with a good wyll kynge Johan of Castell wolde have lefte the warre, but his people wolde nat suffre him, for they ever gave hym corage, sayeng how his quarell and cause was juste. And whan the kynge of Portyngale sawe that his commaundement was nat observed, and that moche of his people disobeyed to serve hym, he was right pensyve and malencolyous; he called to hym suche as he trusted best of Lixbone, and of the knyghtes of his house, who dyde their payne to crowne hym, and also they had served kyng

CAP. XXXIII

Of the marveylous batayle that was at Juberoth.

Ferant, as sir Johan Radygos, and sir John Teatedore, the lorde of Siegere, and sir Gomme of Tabeston, Ambrise Condricho, and Peter his brother, sir Ouges of Navaret, a knyght of Castell, who was tourned Portyngaloyes, for kynge Johan hadde chased hym out of his realme, and the kynge of Portyngale hadde reteyned hym and made hym a chiefe capitayne. At this counsayle the kyng shewed many thynges, and sayde, Sirs, ye that be here I knowe well ye be my frendes, for ye have made me kynge; beholde nowe howe dyvers folkes of my realme excuseth themselfe, so that I canne nat gette them to the felde: for yf they had as good wyll to fight with oure enemyes as I have, I wolde be right gladde therof, but they be nat so dysposed: I se howe they refrayne and dyssymule the mater, wherfore I have nede of counsayle on this mater, howe I maye order myselfe, and therfore I praye you lette me have your advise. Than sir Gomme of Tabeston, a knight of Portyngale, sayde, Sir, I counsayle you for youre honoure, that as soone as ye maye, drawe yourselfe and all youre people into the felde, and adventure you and we also, and we shall ayde you, to dye in the quarell, for ye be our kynge; and if there be any in Portyngale rebelles and disdaynfull to serve you, I saye, and so saythe dyvers of this towne, that it is bycause ye have nat issued oute to shewe youre face agaynst your enemyes; ye have the grace as yet to be reputed a valyaunt man in armes, and they saye that nowe at nede your valyantnesse fayleth you; this it is that hath set your enemyes in pride, and hath cooled your subjectes; for if they sawe in you dedes of valure and of prowes, they wolde obey and dout you, and so wolde do your enemyes. By my heed, quod the king, ye say well, and so it is; wherfore, sir, I wyll incontynent that every man make hym redy, for we wyll ryde out shortely and loke on our enemyes: outher we wyll wyn all at this tyme or lese all. Sir, quod the knyght, it shall be done, for if the journey be yours, and God sende you good fortune, ye shall be kynge of Portyngale for ever, and ye shall be praysed in all straunge realmes, where as the knowledge therof shall come; and to the parfyte herytage of Portyngale ye can nat attayne, but by batayle; ye may take ensample of kyng don Henry your

CAP. XXXIII

cosyn, father to kyng Johan that nowe is kyng of Castell, of Spaygne, of Tollet, of Galyce, of Corduane, and of Sivyle.[1] He came to all these herytages by batayle, otherwyse he had never had them; for ye knowe howe the puissaunce of the prince of Wales, and of Acquitayne, put kynge don Peter, your cosyn, into possession of all these herytages and landes closed within Spayne, and afterwarde by a journey of batayle that don Henry had at Nauntuell,[2] agaynst don Peter, who there loste all agayne, and don Henry put in possession as he was before: at whiche journey he adventured hymselfe and his, or els he had nat ben kyng ther; in lykewise, sir, ye must adventure, if ye thynke to lyve with honour. Sir, quod the kynge, ye saye true, I wyll have none other counsayle but this, for this is profytable for us.

Of the marveylous batayle that was at Juberoth.

[1] *Sibyle* P.
[2] *Montiel.*

Thus departed that counsayle. And than it was ordayned, that within thre dayes every man shulde drawe into the feldes, and there to take some ground to abyde their enemyes; those thre dayes they kepte the gates so close of Lixbone, that nother man nor woman coude issue out, for they wolde nat that their enemyes shulde be prevy of their entensyon. And whan the Englysshmen that were there understode that they shulde issue oute and drawe towardes Saynt Yrayns to loke on their enemyes, they were joyfull. Than every man made hym redy, and the archers dressed redy their bowes and arowes, and all other, in every thynge that they neded: and on a Thursdaye they departed out of Lixbone, and that day they lodged by a lytell ryver syde, a two leages fro Lixbone, with their faces towarde Saynt Yrayns. And every man sayde with good herte and wyll, that they wolde never retourne to Lixbone tyll they had sene their enemyes; sayeng, howe it was better for them that they shulde go and requyre batayle of their enemyes, rather than they shulde come on them. For they said, they had sene and herde dyvers ensamples of requyrers and nat requyrers, and ever of fyve, four hath optayned; and in a maner all the vyctories that the Englysshmen have had in Fraunce, they were ever the requyrers; for naturally the secars for batayle are more strongar and coragyous in assaylinge, than the defendars be. Of this opynyon they were nere all; and some of the burgesses of Lixbone sayde,

CAP. XXXIII

Of the marveylous batayle that was at Juberoth.

We were at Bruges, in Flaunders, whan the Gauntoyse came before the towne, and requyred batayle agaynst the erle of Flaunders, and all his puissaunce, and we knowe well that Philyppe Dartvell, Petre de Boyse, Johan Clyqueriell, Fraunces Atreman,[1] and Peter le Myttier,[2] who as than were capitayns of the Gauntoyse, they brought oute of Gaunte no mo but sevyn thousande men, and yet they requyred batayle of their enemyes, and overcame and disconfyted a xi. thousande; this is true, and this was without any treason, but by clene fortune of batayle; this was done on a Saturdaye, a leage fro Bruges, as we herde reported the nexte day whan they had wonne the towne of Bruges: so thus they dyde putte in adventure, outher to wynne or to lese; and thus must we do if we thynke to have any good spede. Thus these Lixbonoyse that Thursday spake one to another: and whan the kyng was enformed of their wordes, and of their great confort, he had great joye.

[1] *Ackermann.*
[2] *De Wintere.*

And on the Friday in the mornynge, they sowned their trumpettes and made them redy, and toke the waye on the right hande, folowyng the ryver and the playne countre, for their caryage that folowed them, and so rode that daye four leages. That day tidynges came to the kynge of Castell, where he laye at Saynte Yrayns, that the Portyngalois and the Lixbonoyes were commyng towardes hym. These tidynges anone were spredde abrode in the host, wherof the Spaygniardes, Frenchemen, and Gascoyns had great joye, and sayde, Beholde yonder Lixbonoyes be valyant men, sithe they come to seke for batayle; shortely let us go into the feldes, and lette us close them among us and we maye, to the entent that they retourne nat agayne. Thane it was ordayned and publysshed in the hoost, that every man the Saturdaye in the mornynge, a foote and a horsebacke, shuld issue out of Saynt Yrayns, and drawe towardes their ennemyes to fyght with them: every man made hym redy, and were joyfull of that journey. And on the Saturday in the mornynge they sowned their trumpettes, and the kynge herde masse in the castell, and dranke, and than lepte on his horse, and every man with hym, and so drewe into the felde in good aray of batayle, sir Raynolde Limosin, marshall of the hoost, formast. And he sente forthe scurrers to advyse

CAP. XXXIII

Of the marveylous batayle that was at Juberoth.

the dealynge of their ennemyes, and to se where they were, and what nombre they were of. And the Frenchmen sente forthe two squyers, one a Burgonion, and the other a Gascone; the Burgonyon was called Wylliam of Montigny, and he was there with sir Johan of Rey; and they of Gascoyne and Bierne sent forthe Bertrande of Barge;[1] and they were bothe the same day made knightes. And with them rode forth a chatellayne of Castell, a good man of armes, called Peter Ferant of Medyne; he was on a marveylous light genet. And whyle these thre rode forthe to advyse their enemyes, the resydue of the hoost rode a softe pase, and they were in nombre two thousande speares, knyghtes and squiers, Gascoyns, Burgonyons, Frenchmen, Picardes, and Bretons, as well apoynted and armed as any men might be, and a twentie thousande Spanyardes, all a horsbacke; and they had nat rydden forthe a bowe shotte but they stode styll. On the other syde, the kynge of Portyngale in lykewise had sent forthe thre scurrers to avieu justely the demeanyng of the Spaniardes, wherof two of them were Englysshe squyers, expert men of armes, one called Jaquyne Dartebery, and the other Philippe Barqueston, and with them Ferrant de la Grosse, of Portingale. They were all well horsed, and rode forthe tyll they came to a lytell hyll, and there they might well se the behavynge of the Spanyardes; than they retourned to the kynge of Portyngale, and to his counsayle, and ther made relacyon of that they had done, and sayd, Sir, we have ben so farre forwarde that we have sene your enemyes; sir, surely they be a great nombre, they are welle a thyrtie thousande horse; therfore sir, take your advyse. Than the kyng demaunded if they rode all in one batayle or nat. Sir, quod they, surelye they be in two batayls. Than the kyng turned hym towarde his people, and sayd aloude, Sirs, nowe advyse you well, for there nedeth nowe no cowardnesse, for we shall fight shortelye, for our enemyes be comyng, and hath gret desyre to fynde us; and so they shall, for we can nat flye nor retourne; we are issued out of Lixbone a great nombre of people: thynke, sirs, to do well, and lette us selle our lyves dere; ye have made me kyng, this daye shall I se yf the crowne of Portyngale wyll abyde with me peasably or nat;

[1] *Baruges.*

CAP. XXXIII

Of the marveylous batayle that was at Juberoth.

and, sirs, of one thyng be ye sure, I shall nat flye, but abyde the adventure with you. Than they all answered, with a good wyll, So be it, and we shall all abyde with you. Than the Englysshe capitayns were called forthe, as Northbery, and Hartesell, and other of them that were moost experte in armes. The kynge demaunded of them what counsayle they wolde gyve hym, howe to abyde the adventure of the batayle; for he sayd, he knewe well they must nedes fyght, for his enemyes aproched faste, and they be in nombre four agaynst one of us. Than the Englysshmen sayd, Sir, sithe we shall have bataile, and that they be greatter in nombre than we be, wherfore it is a harde partie, we can nat conquere without we take some advauntage of some hedges or busshes: lette us take suche a grounde as we may fortify, and that they shall nat entre upon us so lightely as they shulde do on the playne felde. Sirs, quod the kynge, ye speke wysely, and it shal be as ye have devysed.

On this counsayle of the Englysshmen the kyng rested, and ther toke advyse what grounde they might take. And nat farre of fro them was the towne of Juberothe,[1] a great vyllage. Thyder the Lisbonoyes had sent all their provision, somers and caryages; for it was their entension that night to lodge there, wheder they had batayle or no, if they might scape with honour. And without the towne, a quarter of a leage or therabout, ther was a great abbey of monkes, whyder they of Juberothe and of other vyllages were wonte to come to here masse, and the churche standeth a lytell oute of the waye in a moote, envyroned about with great trees, hedges, and busshes: it was a stronge place with a lytell helpe. Than the Englysshmen were called to counsayle to the kynge, for thoughe they were but fewe, yet the kynge wolde folowe moche their advyse. Thane they sayde, Sir, we knowe hereby a place, the mynster without Juberoth, among the trees, it standeth in a stronge place, with a lytell amendement and helpe. And suche as knewe the countre sayd, Sir, it is true. Than the kyng sayd, Let us drawe thyder, and let us order there ourselfe as men of warr ought to do, so that whan oure enemyes come, let them nat fynde us unprovided. Incontynent it was done, and so they came wher as the churche was. Than whan the Englysshemen,

[1] *Aljubarrota.*

CAP. XXXIII

Of the marveylous batayle that was at Juberoth.

and sir Monges[1] of Naveret, and dyvers other valyant men of Portugale, and of Lixbone, had well advysed the place rounde about, they sayd, This place is stronge ynough with a lytell helpe, so that we maye here abyde the adventure. Than on the syde nexte the feldes they cutte downe the trees, and layde them one over another, to thentent that horsemen shulde nat come with full course on them: they lafte one waye open nat very large, and suche archers and crosbowes as they had, they sette them on every syde of the waye, and their men of armes all afote in a playne within the way, and the churche on their one syde, and ther was the kynges baners pight up. And whan they had thus ordered every thynge they were in great joye, and sayd, that if it pleased God they were well, and in suche a place to kepe longe, and to make a good journey. Than the kynge sayd, Fayre sirs, this day every man do his parte and thynke nat to flye, for that can nat aveyle us: we are far of fro Lixbone, and also in the chase there is no recoveryng, for thre wyll slee and beate downe xii. that be flyenge. Therfore shewe this daye that ye be men of prowes, and selle derely your lyves, and ymagyn in yourselfe howe the journey shal be ours, as it shal be if God be pleased, and than shall we be moche honoured and spoken of in straunge countreis, where as the tidynges shall come, for alwayes the victours be exalted, and they that be disconfyted dispraysed. And sirs, thynke howe ye have made me kynge, wherfore ye ought to be the more hardy and coragyous. And of one thyng be ye sure, that as long as this axe endureth in my handes I shall fight, and if it fayle or breke I shall get another, and shewe myselfe that I wyll mentayne and defende the crowne of Portyngale for myselfe, and for the right that I have by successyon of my brother, the whiche I take on my soule that myne enemyes traveyleth me wrongfully, and that the quarell is myne.

[1] *Ougues.*

Than all suche as harde the kynge sayd, Sir, of your grace and mercy ye admonest us wyselye, and sir, we shall helpe to ayde and maynteyne that we have gyven you, whiche is your owne. Sir, we shall all abyde with you here in this same place, and shall nat departe, without God departe us. Sir, make a crye to all youre people, for every man

CAP. XXXIII

Of the marveylous batayle that was at Juberoth.

hath nat herde you speke, commaundyng on payne of dethe no man to flye; and sir, if there be any that are faynt harted to abyde the batayle, let them come forthe, and gyve them leave to departe fro the other, for one faynt harte may dyscourage two dosyn of good men; or els stryke of their heedes in your presens, to gyve ensample to other. The kyng answered, I wyll it be so. Than there were two knightes ordayned to go and sertche every company, and to demaunde if any were abasshed to abyde the batayle. The messangers reported to the kyng whan they retourned, that they coude fynde no man but that was redy to abyde the adventure of batayle. It is so moche the better, quod the kyng. Than the kyng caused all that wolde be made knightes to come before hym, and he wolde gyve them the order of knighthod, in the name of God and of saynt George. And as I understande ther were made a threscore newe knightes, wherof the kyng had great joye, and dyd sette them in the front of the batayle, and sayd to them, Sirs, the order of knighthode is as noble and highe as any herte can thynke, and there is no knight that ought to be a cowarde nor shamefull, but ought to be fierse and hardy as a lyon, whan his helme is on his heed and seyth his ennemyes. And bycause I wolde ye shulde this day shewe prowes wher it ought to be shewed, therfore I ordayne you in the first front of the bataile; and, sirs, do so that we maye have honour and you also, otherwyse your spurres are but yvell set on. And every knight answered as his tourne fell, as he passed by the kynge, Sir, with the pleasure of God we shall so do, to have your grace and love. Thus the Portyngalois ordred themselfe, and fortifyed them besyde the churche of Juberoth, in Portyngale. That daye there was no Englisshman that wolde be made knight, yet they were desyred of the kyng and other, but they excused themselfe for that day.

CAP. XXXIIII

Of the Spanyardes, howe they ordered themselfe and their batayle.

NOWE let us retourne to the kynge don Johan of Castell, and of the knyghtes and squyers of Fraunce and of Gascone, who were ther with him. And such as they had sent to advyse their enemyes, retourned agayne and sayd, Sir kyng, and ye lordes and knightes here present, we have rydded so forwarde, that we have sene oure enemyes; and accordyng as we can juge, they be nat paste ten thousande men in all, one and other, and they be about the mynster of Juberothe, and ther they be rested and sette in order of batayle, and there they shall be founde, who soever wyll seke for them. Than the kyng called to hym his counsayle, and specially the barons and knightes of Fraunce, and demaunded of them what was best to do. They answered and sayd, Sir, we thynke it were best let them be fought withall incontynent: we se nothyng elles, for by that is reported they be afrayed and in great doute, bycause they be so farre of fro any fortresse. Lixbone is farre of a sixe leages, they can nat ronne thyder with their ease, but they shall be overtaken by the waye, without they take the advauntage of the night. Therfore sir, we counsayle, sithe ye knowe where they be, order your batayls and go and fyght with them, whyle your people be of good wyll to do well. Than the kyng demaunded of them of his owne countre their opinyons, as of sir Dangonyes Mendant,[1] sir Dygo Parsement,[2] Pier Goussart of Mountdasque,[3] and Pier Ferrant of Valesque,[4] and of the great mayster of Caletrave.[5] They answered the kynge and sayd, Sir, we have well harde the knightes of Fraunce, howe they wolde have you hotely to sette on your enemyes. Sir, we wyll that ye knowe and they also, that are we can come to them it wyll be nyght, for ye se the sonne draweth downe warde, and as yet ye have nat ordred youre batayls. Sir, therfore we thynke it were good ye taryed tyll the mornynge, and lette us drawe so nere them, and laye so good spyall in dyvers places, that if

[1] *Diego Gomez Manrique.*
[2] *Diego Pier Sarmiento.*
[3] *Pedro Gonzalez de Mendoza.*
[4] *Pedro Fernandez de Velasco.*
[5] *Caletrane* P.

CAP. XXXIIII

Of the Spanyardes, howe they ordered themselfe and their batayle.

they wolde dislodge aboute mydnight and departe, than lette us also dyslodge; for they can nat flye nor scape us, the countre is so playne; and there is no place to hyde them by Lixbone whiche we can nat gette with our ease. Sir, this counsayle we gyve you. Than the kyng stode styll a lytell and caste downe his loke to the erthe, and after he tourned his regarde on the straungers. Than the marshall, sir Raynolde Lymosin, sayd, to please the Frenchmen, in the langage of Spaygne, to the entent he might the better be understande of every man, and so turned hym to the Spanyardes, suche as had gyven the kyng that counsayle, sayeng, and callyng every man by his name, Sirs, howe can ye be more sage in batayls, or more used in armes, than these valyant knightes be that be here present? Howe can ye devyse any thyng beyond them, that shulde be of any valure? For they have done nothyng els all their life dayes, but traveyll fro realme to realme to fynde and to do dedes of armes. Howe can you, or durst you, devise any thyng agaynst their wordes, whiche are so noble and so highe, for to kepe the honour of the kyng and of his realme, wherin ye have greatter parte than they? For ye have there your herytages and your bodyes, and they have nothyng there but nowe al onely their bodyes, whiche they wyll firste and formast put in adventure; and so they have desyred of the kyng to have the first batayle, and the kyng hath graunted them. Than regarde their great and noble courage, whan they wyll first of all adventure themselfe for you: it shulde seme that ye have envy at them, and that ye wolde that profyte nor honoure shulde come to them; whiche ye ought nat to do, but to be all of one accorde and wyll. And also, by you and by youre counsayle, the kyng hath ben here in the feldes longe at great cost and charge, for hym and for all his, and layne at siege before Lixbone, and coude never have the adventure of batayle tyll nowe, with hym that writeth hymselfe kyng of Portyngale; wherin he hath no right, for he is a bastarde, and nat dyspensed withall: and now he is in the felde with suche frendes as he hath, whiche is no great nombre; and if nowe by crafte he shulde agayne withdrawe hymselfe and nat fought withall, ye put yourselfe than in adventure that

CAP. XXXIIII

Of the Spanyardes, howe they ordered themselfe and their batayle.

all the hole hoost shulde ryse on you and slee you, or els that the kyng shulde repute you for traytours, and strike of your heedes, and confyske all your landes. Therfore I se no better way for you than to be styll, and let them alone that hath sene more than you in suche busynesses, for ye never sawe that they have done, nor never shall. And than the kynge loked up, and by semynge was gladde with those wordes, and the Spanyardes were abasshed, and feared they had done gretter trespace than they dyd. For though the marshall reproved them and spake agaynst them, yet they had well spoken, and truely counsayled the kyng: but what for valyantnesse, and to please the strangers, who desyred batayle, the marshall spake as he dyde.

Than every man was styll, and the kynge sayd, I wyll in the name of God and saynt James, that our enemyes be fought withall, and all suche as wyll be made knyghtes to come forth before me, for I wyll gyve them thordre of knighthode, in the honour of God and saynt George. Than ther came forthe many squyers of France, and of Byerne, and there they were made knightes of the kynges hande, as sir Roger of Spayne Edmonde, son to sir Roger[1] of the countie of Foiz, sir Bertrande of Barroge, sir Peter of Salebere, sir Peter of Valentyne, sir Wylliam of Quere,[2] sir Angers of Sollenayre, sir Peter of Vaude, sir Wyllyam of Montigny; and of one and other, to the nombre of a hundred and xl. And ther were certayne barons of Bierne that raysed up ther first their baners, and also dyvers of Castell, and also sir Johan of Rey. There might have ben sene amonge these newe knightes great noblenesse, and they maynteyned themselfe so goodly that it was pleasure to beholde them, for they were a fayre batayle. Than the lorde of Loyngiache[3] came before the kyng, and all other that were strangers, whatsoever nacyon they were of; so they were no Spanyardes, they were all named in the name of strangers. Than they said to the kynge, Sir, we be come fro farre partes to serve you: Sir, we requyre you do us that grace to let us have the first batayle. I am content, quod the kyng, in the name of God and saint James, and saynt George be in your ayde. Than the Spanyerdes sayd one to another softely, Beholde, for Goddessake beholde, howe our kynge

[1] *messire Rogier d'Espagne, aisné fils à messire Rogier de la conté de Fois.*

[2] *Kers.*

[3] *Lignac.*

CAP. XXXIIII

Of the Spanyardes, howe they ordered themselfe and their batayle.

putteth all his truste in these Frenchmen, he hath no parfyte trust in none other; they shall have the first batayle, they prayse us nat so moche that they wyll take us with them, they wyll do their dede by themselfe, and than lette us do ours be ourselfe, let us let them alone with their enterprise; they have made their avaunt howe they be stronge ynough to discomfyte the Portugaloys. Lette it be so, we are content; but it were good we demaunded of the kynge, wheder he wyll abyde with us, or els go with the Frenchemen. So therupon they were long in murmuryng, wheder they shulde demaunde it, or els be styll, for they douted greatly the wordes of sir Raynolde Lymosin; howebeit, all thynges consydred, they thought it none yvell to demaunde hym the questyon. Than sixe of the moost notablest of them wente to the kynge, and enclyned themselfe, and sayd, Right noble kyng, we se and understande well by aparent signes, that this day ye shall have batayle with youre enemyes, God sende grace it be to your honoure and vyctorie, as we greatly desyre; Sir, we wolde knowe wheder your pleasure lyeth, to be amonge the Frenchmen, or els with us. Fayre sirs, quod the kyng, though I have graunted the first batayle to these knightes and squyers straungers, who are come farre of to serve me, and are valyant and expert men in warres, yet for all that I renounce you nat, for I wyll be and abyde amonge you; therfore sirs, helpe to defende me. Of this answere the Spanyerdes had great joy, and were well contented, and sayd, Sir, so shall we do, and nat to fayle to dye in the quarell; for sir, we are sworne to you, and so have promised by the faithe of our bodyes whan ye were crowned; for sir, we loved so well the kyng your father, that we can nat fayle you in any wise. That is our trust, quod the kyng. So thus the kyng of Spayne abode among his owne men, who were well a twentie thousande horsmen, all covered in stele. Sir Raynolde Lymosin was in the first batayle, for it was his right so to be, bycause he was marshall.

The same Saturday was a fayre daye, and the sonne was tourned towarde evynsong. Than the first batayle came before Juberoth, where the kyng of Portugale and his men were redy to receyve them. Of these Frenche knightes

there were a two thousande speares, as fresshe and as well ordred men as coulde be devysed. And as soone as they sawe their enemyes, they joyned toguyder lyke men of warre, and aproched in good order tyll they came within a bowe shotte. And at their first comyng ther was a harde rencountre, for suche as desyred to assayle to wyn grace and prayse entred into the strayte way, where the Englysshmen by their policy had fortyfied them. And bycause thentre was so narowe there was great prease, and great mischefe to the assaylantes. For suche Englysshe archers as were there shot so holly toguyder, that their arowes pearsed men and horse, and whan the horses were full of arowes they fell one upon another. Than the Englyssh men of armes, the Portugaloys, and Lisbonoyes, came on them cryeng their cryes, Our Lady of Portugale, with good speares and sharpe heedes, wherwith they strake and hurte many knightes and squyers. There was the lorde of Lanache,[1] of Bierne, beaten downe, and his baner won and he taken prisoner, and many of his men taken and slayne; also sir Johan of Ree, sir Geffray Richon, sir Geffray of Partenay, and all their companyes that were entred within the strayte: there horses were so hurte with tharchers, that they fell on their maysters, and one upon another: there these Frenchmen were in great danger, for they coulde nat helpe one another, for they had no roume to enlarge themselfe, nor to fight at their wyll. And whan the Portugaloys sawe that myschefe fall on the first assaylers they were gladde, and as fresshe and coragyous to fyght as any men might be. There was the kynge of Portugale, with his baners before hym, mounted on a good horse, trapped with the armes of Portugale, and he had great joye to se that myschefe fall on his enemyes. And to conforte his people he laughed and sayd a highe, On forthe good men, defende you and fight with good wyll, for if ther be no mo but these we nede nat to feare; and if I knewe ever any thynge in batayle, all these be ours.

CAP. XXXIIII

Of the Spanyardes, howe they ordered themselfe and their batayle.

[1] *Lignac.*

Thus the kyng of Portugale reconforted his people, who fought valiantly, and had enclosed in the streight all the first assaylers, of whome ther were many slayne. True it was that this first batayle whiche these knightes of Fraunce and of Bierne ledde had thought to have ben quickelyer

CAP. XXXIIII

Of the Spanyardes, howe they ordered themselfe and their batayle.

ayded of the Spanyerdes than they were. For if the kyng of Castyle and his company, who were a twentie thousande men, had come by another parte and assayled the Portugaloys, it had been lykely the journey to have ben theirs. But they dyde nothynge, wherfore they were to blame and receyved domage. Also in dede the Frenchmen sette on to soone, but they dyde it to thentent to have won honoure, and to maynteyne the wordes they had spoken before the kyng: and also as I was enformed, the Spaynierdes wolde nat sette on so soone, for they loved nat the Frenchmen, for they had said before, Lette them alone, they shall finde right well to whome to speke: these Frenchmen ar great vantours and highe mynded, and also our kyng hath no parfite trust but in them, and sith the kyng wolde they shulde have the honour of the journey, let us suffre them to take it, or els we shall have all at our ententes. Thus by these meanes the Spanyierdes stode styll in a great batayle, and wolde nat go forwarde, whiche was right displesant to the kyng, but he coude nat amende it. But the Spaynierdes sayd, bycause ther was none retourned fro the batayle, Sir, surely these knightes of Fraunce have disconfyted your enemyes, thonour of this journey is theirs. God gyve grace, quod the kyng, that it be so, let us ryde than somwhat forwarde. Than they rode a crosbowe shotte forwarde, and than agayne rested: it was a great beautie to se them, they were so well mounted and armed. And in the mean season the Frenchmen fought, and suche as had leysar to alight fought valiantly; dyvers knightes and squyers of eyther partie dyd many feates of armes one upon another; and whan their speares fayled, they toke axes and gave many great strokes on the helmes, sleyng and maymynge eche other.

Whosoever were in suche case of armes as the Frenchmen and Portugaloys were at Juberoth, must abyde the adventure as they dyde, without they wolde flye awaye; and in flyeng there is more paryll than to abyde the batayle, for in flyeng lightly are moost slayne, and in batayle whan one seith he is overmatched, he yeldeth hymselfe prisoner. It can nat be said but that the knightes of Fraunce, of Bretayne, of Burgoyne, and of Byerne, but that [they] right valiantly

fought: but at their first encountre they were hardely handled, and all that was by the counsayle of the Englysshmen to fortyfie their place. So at this first batayle the Portugaloys were stronger than their enemyes, so they were all taken or slayne, but fewe that were saved; so that there were at that firste brunt a thousande knightes and squyers taken prisoners, wherof the Portugaloys were joyfull, and thought as that day to have no more batayle, and so made good chere to their prisoners. And every man sayd to their prisoners, Sirs, be nat abasshed, for ye are won by clene feate of armes: we shall kepe you good company, as we wolde ye shuld do, if ye hadde us in lyke case: ye shall come to Lixbone and refresshe you there, and shal be at your ease. And they thanked theym whan they sawe none other bote. And so there some were put to their fynaunce incontynent, and some wolde abyde their adventure, for they ymagined that the kynge of Spaygne with his great armye wolde shortely come and delyver them.

CAP. XXXIIII

Of the Spanyardes, howe they ordered themselfe and their batayle.

CAP. XXXV

Howe the Frenche knightes and Gascoyns, suche as were taken prisoners at Juberoth by the Portugaloys, were slayne of their maysters, and none escaped.

TIDYNGES came into the felde to the kyng of Castyle and to his companye, who were aprochynge to Juberoth, by them that fledde, who came cryeng with great feare, and sayd: Sir kyng, avaunce yourselfe, for all they of the vowarde are outher taken or slayne; there is no remedy of their delyveraunce, without it be by your puyssaunce. And whan the kyng of Castyle herde those tidynges, he was sore displeased, for he had good cause, for it touched hym nere. Than he commaunded to ryde on, and sayd, Avaunce forthe baners, in the name of God and saynt George; lette us ryde to the rescue, sithe our men have nede therof. Than the Spaynierdes began to ryde a better pase cloose toguyder in good order, and by that tyme the sonne was

CAP. XXXV
Howe the Frenche knightes and Gascoyns were slayne of their maysters.

nere downe; than some sayd, it were best to abyde tyll the mornyng; bycause it was so nere night, they said they coude make but an easy journey. The kynge wolde they shulde sette on incontynent, and layde his reasons, and said, What, shall we leave our enemyes in rest nowe they be wery, to gyve them leysar to refresshe themselfe? Whosoever do gyve that counsayle, loveth nat myne honoure. Than they rode forthe, makyng great noyse and brunt, with sownyng of trumpettes and tabours, to abasshe therwith their enemyes. Nowe shall I shewe you what the kyng of Portugale dyd and his company.

As soone as they had disconfited the vowarde and taken their prisoners, and that they sawe none other batayle comyng within their sight, yet for all that they wolde put no trust in their first vyctorie; therfore they sent sixe notable persons to go and aviewe the countrey, to se if they shulde have any more to do. They that rode forthe came and sawe the kynge of Castelles great batayle comyng to them warde, fast approchynge to Juberothe, more than twentie thousande horsmen: than they retourned as fast as they might, and sayde all an highe to the people, Sirs, advyse you well, for as yet we have done nothyng: beholde yonder cometh the kyng of Castyle with his great batayle, with mo than twentie thousande men; there is none taryed behynde. Whan they herde those tidynges, they toke shorte counsayle, whiche was of necessyte: than incontynent they ordayned a pyteous dede, for every man was commaunded, on payne of dethe, to slee their prisoners without mercy, noble, gentyll, ryche, nor other, none except. Than the lordes, knightes, and squyers that were prisoners were in a harde case, for there was no prayer that avayled them fro the dethe; and so they were slayne, some in one place and some in another, as they were spredde abrode unarmed, wenyng to have ben saved, but they were nat. To say trouth, it was great pytie, for every man slewe his prisoner, and he that dyd nat, other men slewe them in their handes: and the Portugaloys and the Englysshmen who had gyven that counsayle sayd it was better to slee than to be slayne; For if we kylle them nat, whyle we be a fightynge they wyll escape and slee us, for ther is no trust in a mannes enemy.

Thus was slayne by great mischiefe the lorde of Longnache, sir Peter of Byerne,[1] the lorde of Lespres, the lorde of Byerne,[2] the lorde of Boordes, sir Bertrande of Bergues,[3] the lorde of Morayne, sir Raymonde of Douzanche,[4] sir Johan of Fologe,[5] sir Manaut of Sarenen, sir Peter of Salybers, sir Stephyn Valentyne, sir Raymon[6] Courase, sir Peter Havfame, and to the nombre of thre hundred squyers of Byerne; and of Fraunce, sir Johan of Rue,[7] sir Geffray Richon, sir Geffray Partenay, and divers other. Lo, beholde the great yvell adventure that felle that Saturday, for they slewe as many good prisoners as wolde well have ben worthe, one with another, foure hundred thousande frankes.

CAP. XXXV
Howe the Frenche knightes and Gascoyns were slayne of their maysters.

[1] *de Kers.*
[2] *Bernecque.*
[3] *Baruge.*
[4] *d'Arzac.*
[5] *Assolegie.*
[6] *Etienne.*
[7] *Rye.*

CAP. XXXVI

Howe the kynge of Castell and all his great batayle were disconfyted by the kyng of Portugale, before a vyllage called Juberoth.

WHAN the Lisbonoise, Englysshe, and Portugaloyse had delyvered the place and slayne all their prisoners, never a one scaped without he were before conveyed to the vyllage of Juberoth, where as all their caryages were, than they drewe all togyder with a feirse wyll, on the same place where as they were first assayled, and as than the sonne was goyng downe. Than the kyng of Castell, in a puyssant array, with his baners and penons dysplayed, and mounted on their horses well covered, came on cryeng Castell, and began to entre into the place that was fortified, and there they were receyved with speres and axes; and at the first comyng, the shotte of arowes greved sore their horses, so that many therby were slayne and overthrowen. And all that season the kyng of Castell nor his men knewe nat of the myschiefe that was fallen to the vowarde, nat how they were all slayne; but he beleved they had ben styll prisoners, thynkynge to recover them agayne, as ye have herde. There was a harde batayle and a fyerse, and many a man caste to the erthe: the Portugalois had no suche advauntage, but and they had nat fought valiantly,

CAP. XXXVI

Howe the kynge of Castell and all his great batayle were disconfyted.

they had ben loste and disconfyted; that saved them, was their enemyes coude nat come on theym but by one narowe waye. There the kyng of Portyngale lyghted afote, and toke an axe in his hande, and dyd marveylous in armes, and beate downe a thre or four with his owne handes, so that he was feared, that none durst aproche nere him.

I shall shew some parte of the condycions of the Spaniardes. Trewe it is, at their first settyng on they are fierse and coragyous, and of great advauntage, and hyghe mynded if they have avauntage; they fight well a horsbacke; but as soone as they have caste two or thre dartes, and gyven a stroke with their swerde, and se that their enemyes be nat disconfyted therwith, than they feare and turne their horses and flye awaye to save themselfe that best maye. And at this bataile of Juberoth, they used the same playe, for they founde their enemyes harde and strong, and as fresshe in the batayle as though they had done nothynge of all the daye before, wherof they had marveyle, and also that they harde no tidynges of the vowarde, nor where they were become. There the Spayniardes that evenyng were in the harde fortune of batayle and perylous for them; for as many as entred into their strength, were by valyantnesse and feates of armes all slayne; they toke no man to raunsom, whatsoever he were, noble or other: so the Lisbonoys had ordayned, for they wolde nat be charged with prisoners. Ther were slayne of them of Castell suche as foloweth: Sir Dangonnes Nendreche,[1] sir Digo Persement, sir don Peter of Rosermont,[2] sir Marc of Versaux, the great maister of Calestrave and his brother, who was that daye made knight, called sir Dygomor,[3] sir Peter Goussart of Mondesque, don Peter Goussart of Sonvyll,[4] don Johan Radigo of Rousell, and a threscore baronnes and knightes of Spaygne. At the batayle of Naders,[5] where the prince of Wales disconfyted kyng don Henry of Castell, there were nat slayne so many noble men of Castell as there was at this batayle of Juberoth, whiche was the yere of grace, a thousande thre hundred fourscore and fyve, on a Saturday on Oure Lady day in August.

Whan the kyng of Castell understode and sawe howe his menne were thus disconfyted, and howe that his vowarde was clene disconfyted without recovery, and that sir Raynalt

[1] *Diego Gomez Manrique.*
[2] *Pedro Ruiz Sarmiento.*
[3] *Diego Moñiz.*
[4] *Sandoval.*
[5] *Najera.*

CAP. XXXVI

Howe the kynge of Castell and all his great batayle were disconfyted.

Lymosin was deed, who was his marshall, and sawe howe all his noble chivalry were lost, as well of his owne realme as of Fraunce and elles where, suche as were come thider to serve him with their good wylles, he was than sore displeased, and wyste nat what counsayle to take, for he sawe his men began to flye on every syde. And he herde howe some sayd to hym, Sir, departe hens, it is tyme, the mater is in a herde case; ye can nat alone disconfyte your enemyes, nor recover your domages; your people flyeth all about; every man intendeth to save hymselfe. Sir, save youreselfe, and ye do wysely: if fortune be this day agaynst you, another tyme it shall be better. The kynge of Castyle beleved counsayle, and than chaunged his horse and mounted on a fresshe courser, strong and light, wheron no man had rydden before of all daye. Than the kyng strake the horse with his spurres, and tourned his backe towarde his enemyes, and toke the waye towarde Saynt Yrayne, whyder all suche as wolde save themselfe fledde. The same tyme the kyng of Castell hadde a knight of his house who bare his bassenet, wherupon there was a sercle of golde and stones, valued to twentie thousande frankes. It was ordayned or they went out of Saynt Yrayne, that this knight shulde beare it tyll they came to the busynesse, and than to delyver it to the kynge to weare on his heed; but this knight dyd nat so; for whan they came to the joyninge of the batayle, the prease was so great, that this knyght coude nat come to the kynge, nor also he was nat called for, wherfore he aproched nat to the kyng. And whan he sawe howe his company were discomfyted, and that the Portugaloys optayned the vyctorie, and sawe howe every man fledde on every syde, he feared than the leasyng of such a riche jowell, and set than the bassenet on his owne heed and so fledde; but he toke nat the way to Saynt Yrayne, but toke another waye to the towne of Arpent.[1] Thus some fledde this way and some that waye, lyke people sore disconfyted and abasshed; but the moost parte fledde to Saynt Yrayne; and that evenynge thyder came the kyng sore abasshed.

[1] *Villalpando.*

At this disconfyture of the Spaynierdes at Juberothe, where the Portugaloys and Lisbonoys optayned the place, ther was a great slaughter of men, and it had ben gretter if

CAP. XXXVI

Howe the kynge of Castell and all his great batayle were disconfyted.

they had folowed in the chase. But thenglisshmen, whan they sawe the Spaygniardes tourne their backes, they sayd to the kyng of Portugale and to his men, Sirs, demaunde for your horses and folowe the chase; and all they that be fledde shal be outher taken or slayne. Naye, nat so, quod the kynge; it suffyceth that we have done; oure men be wery and sore traveyled, and it is nere hande night, we shall nat knowe whyder to go; and thoughe they flye, yet they be a great nombre, and paradventure they do it to drawe us out of our strength, and so to have us at their ease: let us this daye kepe them that be deed, and to morowe take other counsayle. By my faythe, sir, quod Hartesell, an Englysshman, the deed bodyes are easy to be kept; they shall never do us any hurte, nor we shall have of them no profyte. We have slayne many good prisoners, and we be straungers, and are come farre of to serve you; therfore we wolde fayne wynne somwhat of these calves that flye without wynges, with their banners wavyng with the wynde. Fayre brother, quod the kyng, they that all coveteth all leseth: it is better we be sure, sythe the honour of the vyctorie is ours, and that God hath sende it us, rather than to putte ourselfe in paryll whan it nedeth nat: we thanke God we have ynowe to make you all ryche. Thus in this case the busynesse rested.

Thus, as I have shewed you, felle of the busynesse at Juberothe, where as the kynge of Portugale optayned the vyctorie; and ther were slayne a fyve hundred knightes and as many squyers, whiche was great pytie and domage, and about a sixe or sevyn thousande of other men; God have mercy on their soules. And all that night tyll on the Sonday to the hour of prime, the kyng of Portugale and his men removed nat fro the place that they were in, nor never unarmed them, but eate a lytell and dranke every man as they stode, whiche was brought them fro the vyllage of Juberothe. And on the Sonday in the mornyng, after the sonne rysinge, the kynge caused twelfe knightes to mount on their horses, and to ryde forthe to sertche the feldes, to se if there were any newe assemble; and whan they had rydden here and there, they retourned and shewed how they founde no body but deed men. Well, quod the kyng, of them we nede nat to doute. Than it was publysshed to

CAP. XXXVI

Howe the kynge of Castell and all his great batayle were disconfyted.

departe thens, and to go to the vyllage of Juberothe, there to abyde all that day and night tyll Monday in the mornynge. So thus they departed, and lefte the churche of Juberothe, and went to the vyllage and there lodged, and taryed out all that Sondaye and the nexte nyght; and on the Monday in the mornyng they counsayled to drawe towarde Lixbone. Than they sowned trumpettes to dislodge, and so in gode order they departed and rode towarde Lixbone; and the Tuesday the kynge entred into the towne with moche people, glorie, and triumphe, and was receyved with processyon, and so brought to his palays; and in ryding through the stretes, the people and chyldren made feest and reverence, and cryed with highe voice, Lyve the noble kyng of Portugale, to whome God hath gyven that grace to have vyctorie of the puyssaunt kynge of Castyle, and hath disconfyted his enemyes.

Bi this journey that the kyng of Portugale had of the kyng of Castyle, he felle into suche grace and love of his countrey and realme of Portugale, so that all suche as before the batayle dyd dissimule with hym, than came all to hym to Lixbone to do to hym their homage, sayeng, howe he was well worthy to lyve, and howe that God loved hym, in that he had disconfyted a more puissaunt kynge than he was himselfe; wherfore he was worthy to beare a crowne. Thus the kynge gatte the grace of his people, and specially of all the commons of the realme.

Nowe let us a lytell speke of the kyng of Castyle, who, after he was thus disconfyted, went to Saynt Yrayn, wepynge and lamentyng for his people, and cursyng his harde fortune, that so many noble men of his owne countre and of Fraunce were slayne in the felde.

The same tyme that he entred into Saynt Yrayne, yet he knewe nat the domage that he had, but on the Sondaye he knewe it, for he had sende his haraldes, to sertche out the deed bodyes: and he thought before that the moost parte of all suche as the haraulde founde deed had bene but prisoners and saved alyve; but they were nat, as it appered: than he was so sore displeased and sorie, that no man coulde comforte hym. Whan he herde the reporte of the haraulde, and knewe the certentie of them that were deed, than he

CAP. XXXVI

Howe the kynge of Castell and all his great batayle were disconfyted.

sayd and sware, that he shulde never have joye sythe so many noble men were deed in his quarell. And after the thirde daye that the kyng had taryed at Saynt Yrayne, there came to him his knight with his bassenet, who was called sir Martyn Haren, and delyvered the bassenet to the kynge, whiche was valued as ye have herde before. And before there had ben herde wordes spoken of hym; some said that falsely he was ronne awaye fro the kynge, and wolde never retourne agayne. Than the knight kneled downe before the kyng, and excused hymselfe so largely, that the kynge and his counsayle were well content with hym. Than a fyftene dayes after the kynge of Castyle retourned to Bergus[1] in Spayne, and gave every man leve to departe. Than after ther was meanes and treaties made bytwene the kynge of Castyle and the kyng of Portugale: than a truce was taken fro the feest of saynt Mychaell to the first day of May, bothe by lande and by see. And the deed bodyes slayne at Juberothe were buryed in the churche of Juberoth and in other[2] churches there about, and the bones of dyvers caryed by their servauntes into their owne countreis.

[1] *Burgos.*

[2] *mother* P.

CAP. XXXVII

Howe a spyrite, called Orthone, served the lorde of Corasse a long tyme, and brought hym ever tidynges from all partes of the worlde.

IT is great marveyle to consyder one thynge, the whiche was shewed me in therle of Foiz house at Ortayse, of hym that enfourmed me of the busynesse at Juberothe: he shewed me one thyng that I have oftentymes thought on sithe, and shall do as longe as I lyve. As this squyer tolde me, that of trouthe the nexte daye after the bataile was thus fought at Juberoth, the erle of Foiz knewe it, wherof I had great marveyle. For the sayd Sonday, Monday, and Tuesday, therle was very pensyfe, and so sadde of chere, that no man coulde here a worde of hym; and all the same thre dayes he wolde nat issue out of his chambre, nor speke to any man, thoughe they were never so nere about hym.

CAP. XXXVII

Howe a spyrite, called Orthone, served the lorde of Corasse a long tyme.

And on the Tuesday at night he called to hym his brother Arnault Guyllyam, and sayde to hym with a softe voyce, Our men hath had to do, wherof I am sorie; for it is come of them by their voyage as I sayd or they departed. Arnault Guyllyam, who was a sage knyght, and knewe right well his brothers condicions, stode styll and gave none answere; and than therle, who thought to declare his mynde more plainlye, for long he had borne the trouble therof in his herte, spake agayne more hygher thane he dyd before, and sayd, By God, sir Arnault, it is as I saye, and shortely ye shall here tidynges therof; but the countrey of Bierne this hundred yere never loste suche a losse at no journey as they have done nowe in Portugale. Dyvers knyghtes and squyers that were there present, and herde hym say so, stode styll and durst nat speke, but remembred his wordes. And within a ten dayes after they knewe the trouthe therof by suche as had ben at the busynesse, and there they shewed every thyng as it was fortuned at Juberothe. Than therle renewed agayne his dolour, and all the countrey were in sorowe, for they had loste their parentes, bretherne, chyldren, and frendes. Saynt Mary, quod I to the squyer that shewed me this tale, howe is it that therle of Foiz coude knowe on one day what was done within a day or two before, beynge so farre of? By my faythe, sir, quod he, as it appered well, he knewe it. Than he is a devyner, quod I, or els he hathe messangers that flyeth with the wynde, or he muste nedes have some crafte. The squyer began to laughe, and sayd, Surely he muste knowe it by some arte of nigromansye, or otherwyse. To saye the trouthe, we can nat tell howe it is, but by oure ymaginacions. Sir, quod I, suche ymaginacion as ye have therin, if it please you to shewe me, I wolde be gladde therof; and if it be suche a thynge as ought to be secrete, I shall nat publysshe it, nor as longe as I am in this countre I shall never speke worde therof. I praye you therof, quod the squyer, for I wolde nat it shulde be knowen that I shulde speke therof; but I shall shewe you as dyvers men speketh secretelye, whan they be togyder as frendes. Than he drewe me aparte into a corner of the chapell at Ortayse, and than began his tale and sayd:

CAP. XXXVII

Howe a spyrite, called Orthone, served the lorde of Corasse a long tyme.

It is well a twentie yeres paste that there was in this countrey a barone, called Raymon, lorde of Corasse, whiche is a sevyn leages fro this towne of Ortaise. This lorde of Corasse had the same tyme a plee at Avygnon before the Pope, for the dysmes of his churche, agaynst a clerke curate there, the whiche preest was of Cateloygne. He was a great clerke, and claymed to have ryght of the dysmes in the towne of Corasse, whiche was valued to a hundred florens by the yere, and the right that he had he shewed and proved it. And by sentence diffynityve, pope Urbane the Fyfte, in consistory general, condempned the knight, and gave jugement with the preest: and of this last jugement he had letters of the Pope for his possession, and so rode tyll he came into Bierne, and there shewed his letters and bulles of the Popes for his possession of his dismes. The lorde of Corase had great indignacion at this preest, and came to hym and said, Mayster Peter, or Maister Marten, as his name was, thynkest thou, that by reason of thy letters, that I wyll lese myne herytage? Nat so hardy that thou take any thynge that is myne; if thou do, it shall coste the thy lyfe. Go thy waye into some other place to get the a benefyce; for of myne herytage thou gettest no parte, and ones for alwayes I defende the. The clerke douted the knight, for he was a cruell man, therfore he durste nat parceyver. Than he thought to retourne to Avygnon, as he dyde; but whan he departed, he came to the knight, the lorde of Corasse, and sayd, Sir, by force and nat by right, ye take away fro me the right of my churche, wherin ye greatly hurte your conscience. I am nat so strong in this countrey as ye be; but, sir, knowe for trouthe, that as soone as I maye, I shall sende to you suche a champyon, whome ye shall doute more than me. The knight who douted nothyng his thretnynges sayd, God be with the; do what thou mayst, I doute no more dethe than lyfe; for all thy wordes, I wyll nat lese myne herytage. Thus the clerke departed fro the lorde of Corasse, and went, I can nat tell wheder, to Avygnon or into Cateloygne, and forgate nat the promyse that he had made to the lorde of Corasse or he departed. For afterwarde, whan the knyght thought leest on hym, about a thre monethes after, as the knyght laye on

CAP. XXXVII

Howe a spyrite, called Orthone, served the lorde of Corasse a long tyme.

a nyght a bedde in his castell of Corasse with the ladye his wyfe, there came to hym messangers invisyble, and made a marveylous tempest and noise in the castell, that it semed as thoughe the castell shulde have fallen downe, and strake gret strokes at his chambre dore, that the good ladye his wyfe was soore afrayde. The knyght herde all, but he spake no worde therof, bycause he wolde shewe no abasshed corage, for he was hardy to abyde all adventures. This noyse and tempest was in sondrie places of the castell, and dured a longe space, and at laste cessed for that nyght. Than the nexte mornynge all the servauntes of the house came to the lorde whan he was rysen, and sayd, Sir, have you nat herde this night that we have done? The lorde dyssymuled and sayd, No, I herde nothyng; what have you herde? Than they shewed him what noyse they hadde herde, and howe all the vessell in the kechyn was overtourned. Than the lorde began to laughe, and sayde, Yea sirs, ye dremed; it was nothynge but the wynde. In the name of God, quod the ladye, I herde it well. The nexte night there was as great noyse and greatter, and suche strokes gyven at his chambre dore and wyndowes, as all shulde have broken in peces. The knyght starte up out of his bedde, and wolde nat lette to demaunde who was at his chambre dore that tyme of the night; and anone he was aunswered by a voyce that sayde, I am here. Quod the knyght, Who sent the hyder? The clerke of Catelloygne sent me hyder, quod the voyce, to whom thou dost gret wronge, for thou hast taken fro hym the ryghtes of his benefyce: I wyll nat leave the in rest tyll thou haste made hym a good accompte, so that he be pleased. Quod the knyght, What is thy name, that arte so good a messangere? Quod he, I ame called Orthone. Orthone, quod the knyght, the servyce of a clerke is lytell profyte for the; he wyll putte the to to moche payne if thou beleve hym. I pray the leave hym and come and serve me, and I shall gyve the good thanke. Orthone was redy to aunswere, for he was in amours with the knyght, and sayde, Woldest thou fayne have my servyce? Yea, truely, quod the knyght, so thou do no hurte to any persone in this house. No more I wyll do, quod Orthon; for I have no power to do any

CAP. XXXVII

Howe a spyrite, called Orthone, served the lorde of Corasse a long tyme.

other yvell but to awake the out of thy slepe or some other. Well, quod the knyght, do as I tell the, and we shall soone agree, and leave the yvell clerke, for there is no good thyng in him but to put the to payne; therfore, come and serve me. Well, quod Orthon, and sythe thou wylte have me, we are agreed.

So this spyrite Orthone loved so the knight, that oftentymes he wolde come and vysite hym whyle he laye in his bedde aslepe, and outher pull hym by the eare, or els stryke at his chambre dore or wyndowe, to awake hym: and whan the knyght awoke, than he wolde saye, Orthon, let me slepe. Nay, quod Orthone, that wyll I nat do, tyll I have shewed the suche tidynges as are fallen a late. The lady, the knyghtes wyfe, wolde be sore afrayed that her heer wolde stande up, and hyde herselfe under the clothes. Thane the knight wolde saye, Why, what tidynges haste thou brought me? Quod Orthone, I am come out of Englande or out of Hungry, or some other place, and yesterdaye I came thens, and suche thynges are fallen or suche other. So thus the lorde of Corasse knewe by Orthon every thynge that was done in any parte of the worlde: and in this case he contynued a fyve yere, and coude nat kepe his owne counsayle, but at laste discovered it to the erle of Foiz: I shall shewe you howe.

The firste yere the lorde of Corasse came on a daye to Orthayse to the erle of Foiz, and sayd to hym, Sir, suche thynges are done in Englande, or in Scotlande, or in Almaygne, or in any other countrey. And ever the erle of Foiz founde his sayeng true, and had great marveyle howe he shulde knowe suche thynges so shortly. And on a tyme therle of Foiz examyned hym so straitly, that the lorde of Corase shewed hym all toguyder howe he knewe it, and howe he came to hym firste. Whan the erle of Foiz herde that, he was joyfull, and sayd, Sir of Corasse, kepe hym well in your love; I wolde I hadde suche a messangere; he costeth you nothynge, and ye knowe by hym every thynge that is done in the worlde. The knight answered and sayd, Sir, that is true. Thus the lorde of Corasse was served with Orthon a long season. I can nat saye if this Orthone hadde any mo maysters or nat; but every weke,

CAP. XXXVII

twyse or thrise, he wolde come and vysite the lorde of Corasse, and wolde shewe hym suche tidynges of any thyng that was fallen fro whens he came: and ever the lorde of Corasse, whan he knewe any thynge, he wrote therof ever to the erle of Foiz, who had great joy therof, for he was the lorde of the worlde that moost desyred to here newes out of straunge places. And on a tyme the lorde of Corasse was with the erle of Foiz, and the erle demaunded of hym and said, Sir of Corasse, dyd ye ever as yet se your messangere? Naye, surely sir, quod the knyght, nor I never desyred it. That is marveyle, quod the erle; if I were as well acquaynted with hym as ye be, I wolde have desyred to have sene him; wherfore I praye you desyre it of hym, and than to tell me what forme and facyon he is of: I have herde you say howe he speketh as good Gascone as outher you or I. Truely, sir, quod the knight, so it is; he speketh as well and as fayre as any of us bothe do: and surely, sir, sithe ye counsayle me, I shall do my payne to se hym and I can. And so on a night as he laye in his bedde with the lady his wyfe, who was so enured to here Orthon, that she was no more afrayde of hym, than came Orthon and pulled the lorde by the eare, who was fast aslepe, and therwith he awoke, and asked who was ther? I am here, quod Orthon. Than he demaunded, Fro whens comest thou nowe? I come, quod Orthon, fro Prage in Boesme. Howe farre is that hens? quod the knyght. A threscore dayes journey, quod Orthone. And arte thou come thens so soone? quod the knyght. Ye, truely, quod Orthon; I came as fast as the wynde, or faster. Hast thou than wynges? quod the knight. Nay, truely, quod he. Howe canste thou than flye so faste? quod the knyght. Ye have nothyng to do to knowe that, quod Orthone. No, quod the knight, I wolde gladly se the, to knowe what forme thou arte of. Well, quod Orthon, ye have nothing to do to knowe; it sufficeth you to here me, and I to shewe you tidynges. In faythe, quod the knyght, I wolde love the moche better, and I myght se the ones. Well, quod Orthone, sir, sithe ye have so great desyre to se me, the firste thynge that ye se to morowe whan ye ryse out of your bedde, the same shall be I. That is sufficient, quod the lorde: go thy way; I gyve the leave to departe for this

Howe a spyrite, called Orthone, served the lorde of Corasse a long tyme.

CAP. XXXVII

Howe a spyrite, called Orthone, served the lorde of Corasse a long tyme.

nyght. And the next mornynge the lorde rose, and the lady his wyfe was so afrayd that she durst nat ryse, but fayned herselfe sicke, and sayd she wolde nat ryse. Her husbande wolde have had her to have rysen. Sir, quod she, than I shall se Orthone; and I wolde nat se him by my good wyll. Well, quod the knight, I wolde gladly se hym; and so he arose fayre and easely out of his bedde, and sat downe on his bedde syde, wenyng to have sene Orthon in his owne proper forme; but he sawe nothyng wherby he might saye, Lo, yonder is Orthon. So that daye passed, and the nexte night came; and whan the knyght was in his bedde, Orthon came and began to speke, as he was accustomed. Go thy waye, quod the knight; thou arte but a lyer: thou promysest that I shulde have sene the, and it was nat so. No, quod he, and I shewed myselfe to the. That is nat so, quod the lorde. Why, quod Orthon, whan ye rose out of your bedde sawe you nothynge? Than the lorde studyed a lytell, and advysed hymselfe well. Yes, truely, quod the knyght, nowe I remembre me, as I satte on my beddes syde, thynkynge on the, I sawe two strawes on the pavement tumblyng one upon another. That same was I, quod Orthone; into that fourme I dyde put myselfe as than. That is nat ynoughe to me, quod the lorde: I praye the putte thyselfe into some other fourme, that I maye better se and knowe the. Well, quod Orthon, ye wyll do so moche, that ye wyll lese me and I go fro you, for ye desyre to moch of me. Naye, quod the knyght, thou shalte nat go fro me; let me se the ones, and I wyll desyre no more. Well, quod Orthone, ye shall se me to morowe: take hede, the firste thynge that ye se after ye be out of your chambre it shal be I. Well, quod the knight, I am than content; go thy way, lette me slepe. And so Orthone departed; and the nexte mornynge the lorde arose and yssued out of his chambre and went to a wyndowe, and loked down into the courte of the castell, and caste about his eyen; and the firste thynge he sawe was a sowe, the greattest that ever he sawe; and she semed to be so leane and yvell favoured, that there was nothyng on her but the skynne and the bones, with long eares and a longe leane snout. The lorde of Corasse had marveyle of that leane sowe, and was wery of the sight

CAP. XXXVII

Howe a spyrite, called Orthone, served the lorde of Corasse a long tyme.

of her, and commaunded his men to fetche his houndes, and sayd, Lette the dogges hunt her to dethe and devoure her. His servauntes opyned the kenelles and lette out his houndes, and dyde sette them on this sowe; and at the laste the sowe made a great crye, and loked up to the lorde of Corasse as he loked out at a wyndowe, and so sodaynely vanysshed awaye, no man wyste howe. Than the lorde of Corasse entred into his chambre right pensyve, and than he remembred hym of Orthon his messangere, and sayd, I repent me that I sette my houndes on hym; it is an adventure, and ever I here any more of hym, for he sayd to me often tymes, that if I displeased hym, I shulde lese hym. The lorde said trouthe, for never after he came into the castell of Corasse; and also the knight dyed the same yere next folowynge. Lo, sir, quod the squyer, thus I have shewed you the lyfe of Orthone, and howe a season he served the lorde of Corasse with newe tidynges. It is true, sir, quod I; but nowe as to your firste purpose: Is the erle of Foiz served with suche a messangere? Surely, quod the squier, it is the ymaginacion of many that he hath suche messangers; for ther is nothynge done in any place, but and he sette his mynde therto, he wyll knowe it, and whan men thynke leest therof: and so dyde he whan the good knightes and squyers of this countrey were slayne in Portugale, at Juberothe. Some saythe, the knowledge of suche thynges hath done hym moche profyte; for and there be but the value of a spone loste in his house, anone he wyll knowe wher it is. So thus than I toke leave of the squyer and went to other company, but I bare well awaye his tale.

Nowe I wyll leave to speke of the busynes of Portugale and of Spaygne, and speke of the busynesse in Languedocke and in Fraunce.

CAP. XXXVIII

Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretaygne, and howe dyvers Englysshe fortresses about the countre of Tholous were recovered and turned Frenche.

IN the season whyle these adventures thus felle in Castyle and in farr marchesse, it was ordayned by sir Olyver of Clysson, constable of Fraunce, to make a bastyde before the strong castell of Brest in Bretaygne, whiche the Englysshmen helde, and had done longe, and wolde nat departe, nother for the Frenche kyng nor for the duke of Bretayne, to whom the castell shulde partayne. The duke of Berrey and the duke of Burgoyne, and the Frenche kynges counsayle, hadde oftentymes written to the duke of Bretayne, desyring hym to putte to his payne and dilygence to gette agayne his enheritaunce, the castell of Brest, for it was gretly to his prejudyce to suffre the Englysshmen to enjoye it. And the duke, what for the prayer of the sayde lordes, and also bycause he wolde gladly have had the possession of Brest in his owne handes, on a tyme he layd siege therto, but nothyng he wan there, and so departed thens, and sayd howe he coude do nothyng ther. Wherat some knightes and squyers murmured, and sayde howe the duke dyd but dissimule, for suche as were ther he tooke theym nat for his frendes, nor wolde nat, for all the peace that was made, that the castell of Brest shulde be in the Frenche kynges handes; for if the Frenchmen helde it, he shulde nat be lorde therof; yet he had rather it were in the Englysshemens handes, for the Englysshemen durst nat displease him. Wherfore, all thynges consydred, the constable of Fraunce thought that the castell of Breest and the towne were nat mete to be enemy to the realme of Fraunce, and thought it nat honorable for the duke nor for the knyghtes of Bretaygne to suffre it as they dyde. Therfore he ordayned to laye siege therto, with a great nombre of knyghtes and squyers of Bretaygne: and he made chiefe capitaynes of them, the lorde of Malestroyt, the vycount of Barleere,[1] Morfane,[2] and

[1] *Bellière.*
[2] *Morfouace.*

CAP. XXXVIII

Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretaygne.

the lorde of Roche Duraunt. These foure valyant men wente and layde siege as nere to Brest as they might, and made a bastyde, and closed it about with pales and stones, and tooke fro Brest all their issues, excepte the see, whiche was nat in their power to close fro them. And often tymes there were scrimysshes and feates of armes done before the barryers, for suche as were without, desyringe dedes of armes, wolde come valyantly to the barryers, and they within receyved theym as valyantly, so that often there were dyvers hurt on bothe parties; there were but fewe dayes but that some dedes of armes were done.

The same season there was in the marchesse of Tholousyn a valyant knyght of Fraunce, called sir Galtier Paschac, a good capitayne of men of warre; he was of the nacyon of Berrey, on the fronters of Lymosyn. And or his comynge, the seneschall of Tholous, sir Roger of Spaygne, and sir Hugh of Frodevyll, and the seneschall of Carcassone, hadde written into Fraunce to the constable there of the state of the countre of Tholous and Robestan,[1] and howe that dyvers of the companyons adventurers, suche as were yssued out of Lourde and of Castell Cuyllet, and had made warre for the Englysshmen, helde in their handes the fortresses folowyng: as saynt Forget, the Bassere,[2] the Mesnylle, Purpuron, Convall,[3] Rochefort, the Dos Julyen, Naveret, and dyvers other; wherby they had so envyroned the cytie of Tholous, that the people coude nat yssue oute to labour their vynes and landes, nor go on marchandyse, but in great paryll, without they had truce, or patesed with them. And of all these castells, the chiefe capitayne was an expert man of warre of Basque, called Espaignoullet; he dyd many marveylous dedes in armes; he toke on a tyme, by scalynge, the castell of Armayle,[4] whyle the lorde therof, sir Raymonde, was gone to Tholous, and he kepte it more than a yere. And in the meane season whyle he kepte it, he caused to be made a myne and a cave, whiche went out of the castell into the feldes; and whan the cave was made, he closed up the entre with stones, so that it coulde nat be parceyved that any waye was there under the yerthe: and in the same meane season the lorde Raymonde of Armayle treated with Espaygnollet to have agayne his castell for money. Whan the

[1] *Rabastens.*
[2] *Bassouès.*
[3] *Commaleix.*
[4] *Commaleix.*

CAP. XXXVIII

Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretaygne.

cave was finysshed, he agreed with the lorde to delyver up the castell for two thousande frankes, and he and all his to departe. Than the lorde entred agayne into his castell, and repayred it where it was in defaulte: and a fyftene dayes after Espaignollet, with his company, in a night came to the wode where the yssue of the cave was, and entred into it. And so at the hour of mydnight they toke the castell, and the lorde lyenge in his bedde, and raunsomed hym agayne at two thousande frankes, and than let hym go; but Espaygnollet kept styll the castell and a good garison, whiche after sore traveyled the countrey, with other of his alyaunce and company.

For these maner of people that robbed and pylled thus in the marches of Tholous, of Rouergue, and there about, under the colour of the Englysshmen, therfore thyder was sente sir Gaultier of Paschac, with a certayne nombre of men of armes, to delyver the countre fro their enemyes: and so he came to Tholous, and sent for the knyghtes and squyers therabout, and wrote to sir Roger of Spaygne, seneschall of Carcassone, who came to serve hym, for sir Gaultier had a commissyon generall over all the offycers of Languedocke; and so all suche as were sent for came with suche nombres as they might make. Sir Roger of Spayne came with a threscore speares and a hundred pavesses, and the seneschall of Rouergue and sir Hugh Frodevyll came with as many or mo. So whan they were all togyder, they were a four C. speares and a M. pavesses. And also there was the sonne of therle of Tereache with a fayre company, the lorde of Barbason, sir Benedic of Faguell,[1] and Willyam Caudron, Breton, and their companyes. So one day they departed fro Tholous, and came before saynt Forgette, and there rested: and there was capitayne a man of Bierne, a great robber, called the bourge of Taylsacke. Whan these lordes and their companyes were come before Forget, they incontynent went to the assaut, and the Genowayes began sore to shote, so that scant they within durste apere at their defence; but the Frenchmen myst of their purpose at this first assaute, and so there they lodged all night and toke their ease, for they had ynoughe wherwith. In the mornyng betymes they armed them throughe the host, and

[1] *Fajoles.*

CAP. XXXVIII

sowned their trumpettes to the assaute, and so they came in good ordre to the fote of the dyke; he that had sene than the men of armes entre into the dykes, with their targettes over their heedes, and tasted the dyke with their speares, and passed over to the fote of the wall, wolde have taken great pleasur. Whan the first were passed over the dyke, and had shewed the way to other, than other folowed with great wyll, for it had ben great blame to them if they had than taryed behynde and their company before. And suche as folowed them had matockes and pykes in their handes to pearse withall the walles, and covered their heedes with targettes to receyve the stones that were caste downe, whiche were no great plentie, for the Genowayes shotte so surely with their crosbowes, that non durste put out their heedes to their defence; for the Genowayes crosbowes shotte so surely, that lightly they myst nat of their levell, so that ther were many within sore hurte with their quarelles, in so moche that they doughted sore the shotte. This saute was so sore contynued, that the mynours overthrewe a pane of the walle. Than they within were sore abasshed, and wolde than have yelded them, their lyves saved; but their enemyes had no luste therto, for they felle into so good handes, that they were all slayne, for sir Galtier, their capitayne, commaunded that it shulde so be. So there were none taken to mercye, but all slayne, nat one that scaped. Thus these lordes of Fraunce at their first comynge had the castell of Forget, and sir Gaultier delyvered it to the owner therof, who loste it the same yere before for lacke of good kepyng, as dyvers other castelles had bene before in Fraunce.

Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretaygne.

After the takyng of the castell of Foget, and that sir Gaultier had delyvered it to the owner, the knight newe repayred it where as nede was, for the Frenchemen had sore dystroyed it in the assayling therof or it were won. Than they went to the castell of Basse,[1] of whiche Ernalton of Batefoyle was capitayn, and had greatly fortifyed it, for he thought the Frenchemen wolde visyte hym, as they dyde. And whan the Frenchemen came thyder, they layde siege therto, and than advysed on whiche parte they might best for their advauntage gyve assaute, and determyned on a place; and so on a day they came to the saut on that parte

[1] *Bassoues.*

CAP. XXXVIII

Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretaygne.

as they thought moost feeble. There the Genowayes crosbowes were ordayned to shote, and the assauters behynde them; and they acquyted themselfe truely in doyng of their feate, for they shot so rudely at them within, that none durst shewe themselfe. Ernalton of Batefoyle was at the gate where there was a great assaute, and there he dyde marveylous in armes, so moche, that his enemyes sayd among themselfe, Beholde yonder is a squyer of great herte, on whome his harnesse is well enployed, for he valyantly defended hymselfe; it were well done some bodye to shewe hym, that it were best for hym to yelde up the castell, and to departe some where elles; and to shewe hym, that if sir Gaultier of Paschac wynne hym parforce, ther is no man can save hym fro the dethe, for he hath sworne as many as he wynneth parforce shall all dye or be hanged. Than the seneschall of Tholous commaunded a squyer of Gascoyne, called Wyllyam Alyedell, who knewe ryght well Ernalton, for he had ben dyvers tymes with hym in armes as his companyon, and he was gladde to go, for he was lothe that Ernalton shulde have hadde any domage, if he myght do hym any good. And so he came to the assaute, and made token that he wolde speke with Ernalton for his great profyte; and he answered he was content. Than the saut rested on that syde, but nat on the other parte. Than this Wylliam sayd, Ernalton, ye are happy, for certayne of yonder lordes have sende me to you, for they have pyte on you; for if ye be taken parforce, there is no remedy but dethe. Oure soveraygne capitayne hath so ordayned, that you nor none of yours shall scape dethe, but to be served as they were of saynt Forget; therfore they and I also wolde counsayle you to yelde up the fortresse, rather than to abyde thadventure; for of one thyng ye may be sure, we shall nat departe hens tyll ye be taken. Than Ernalton sayd, William, I knowe well thoughe at this tyme ye be agaynst me, that ye wolde nat counsayle me to any thyng to my dishonour. Knowe for trouthe, that if I rendre up the holde, it shal be so that I and all myne may safely departe, and carye with us as moche as we maye, and to be safely conducted to the castell of Lourde. On this condycion I wyll herken to you, or elles nat. Sir, quod Wylliam,

CAP. XXXVIII

I have nat so farre charge to commen with you, but gladly I shal speke for you to my maisters. And so he retourned to the seneschall of Tholous, and shewed hym all these wordes. Than sir Hughe of Frodevyll sayd, Lette us go and speke with sir Gaultier, for I can nat tell what he wyll do: sithe I have gone so farr in the mater, I wyll se what he will do. Than they came to sir Gaultier, who was styll at the saute, and sir Hughe of Frodevyll sayd, Sir Gaultier, I have treated with the capitayne of the castel, and he is well wyllynge to yelde up the castell to us as it is, so that he and all his maye go quite with all that they maye cary with them, and to be safely conducted to the castell of Lourde; therfore nowe, sir, loke what ye wyll do, if we shulde lese one of our knightes or squyers, outher by shotte or cast of stones, or by any perylous accident, it shulde be gretter domage than we can have any profyte by puttyng of them to dethe whan we have won them, whiche is nat yet, for or they be won it wyll coste us some of our people. Sir, that is true, quod the seneschall of Carcassone; suche assautes can nat be without some dethe and sore hurtyng.

Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretaygne.

To those wordes sir Galtier of Paschac sayd, I am well content; cease the assaut; we have more to do in other places: thus lytell and lytell we shall wynne the castelles that these pyllers holde, though they departe nowe with a good market. Paradventure herafter they maye fall agayne in our handes, and than one tyme they shall paye for all; ever yvell dedes come to an yvell ende. In my dayes I have hanged and drowned of suche robbers fyve hundred; and hereafter they shall come to the same pricke. Than they that went on this treatie came agayne to the barryers to Ernalton Batefoyle. Than Wylliam sayd, By my faithe, Ernalton, you and all yours maye thanke God and sir Hughe of Frodevyll, for he hath made your treatie as ye demaunde. Ye may departe safely and all yours, and beare awaye as moche as ye can, and ye shall be safely brought to Lourde. Well, quod Ernalton, I am contente, sythe it wyll be no better. Knowe for trouthe, Wylliam, I shall departe fro this fortresse sore agaynst my wyll, for I have had great profite therby syth I was taken at the bridge at Turnay besyde Malvoysin, by the Burge of Spaygne, who had of me

CAP. XXXVIII

Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretaygne.

for my raunsome two thousande frankes. To saye trouthe, I have well recovered myself here, and ever have ben here in these fronters, whiche I love well; for whan so ever I rode forthe, lyghtely I founde some good aventure, outher by some marchaunt of Robeston, of Tholous, or of Rodes; for the moost parte ever I gatte somwhat. Than Wylliam sayd, Sir, I beleve you well; but and ye wyll become Frenche, I undertake ye shal be clene pardoned, and to have a thousande frankes gyven you, and I wyll become youre suretie that ye shal be ever good Frenche, if ye wyll swere yourselfe so to be. Sir, quod Ernalton, I thanke you; but as for that I wyll nat, for I wyll be still as yet Englysshe; as God helpe me, I can nat fynde in my herte to be good Frenche. Returne to your company, and shewe them that this daye we wyll order oure busynesse, and to morowe in the mornyng we shall delyver up the castell and departe; wherfore se that oure conducte be redy.

So than ceassed the saute, and the Frenchemen went to their lodgynges, and so passed the night at their ease, they hadde well wherwith. And in the mornyng, whan every man was redy in the hoost, and that they were redy that shulde conducte the companyons to the castell of Lourde, than sir Hughe Frodevyll, seneschall of Tholous, went to take possessyon of the castell; and whan he came to the castell, he founde Ernalton of Batefoyle and his company redy to departe, and had trussed all that they wolde cary. Than a knight of Lourde, called sir Monant of Salenges, conveyed them safely wheder they wolde. Thus the castell of Basse was wonne, and a squyer of the countrey had the kepynge therof gyven hym, and of the countrey, who was called Bertram of Montesquyeu. Than these Frenchmen went forthe, and came to the castell of Pulpuron,[1] wherof the lytell Mechyne[2] was soverayne capitayn, who had done great domage to the countre therabout; wherfore sir Galter of Paschac sware by his fathers soule, that non ther shuld be take to mercy nor raunsome, but all to be hanged if he might gette them; and so there he layd his siege. This castell stode on a rocke, a goodly castell to loke on; and there sir Gaultier sware never to departe thens tyll he hadde them at his pleasure. Ther were many assautes, but they

[1] *Pouy-Perun.*

[2] *Augerot et le Petit Meschin.*

CAP. XXXVIII

Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretaygne.

wan but lytell, for the castell was well defended. Well, quod sir Galtier, I can nat tell howe it wyll be: the Frenche kynge is ryche ynough to kepe a sege here, but as for me, I wyll nat departe in one yere, without I have the castell at my pleasure. And suche as were with hym beleved hym well, and ordred themselfe therafter; and I shall shewe you howe it fortuned. Whan the capitayns within sawe surely howe the Frenchmen wolde nat departe thens tyll they had the castell, whatsoever it cost them, than they douted them, and advysed to departe thens, wheder the Frenchmen wolde or nat, which they might well do, for they hadde a cave that went out of the castell under the grounde into a wode halfe a leage of. So whan Augerot, capiteyne of the castell, sawe the dealyng of the Frenchmen, and knewe howe they had promised nat to departe thens tyll they had the castell, outher by famyne or otherwise, than he douted and sayd to his companye, Sirs, I se well sir Gaultier of Paschac hath us greatly in hatered, and I feare by longe siege he shulde famysshe us; and that to do he nedeth nat but to make a bastyde, and let it be kept but with a hundred speares, so that none of us than dare departe; therfore I shall shewe you what we shall do. Lette us take all that we have, and in the nyght we wyll departe by this cave under the erthe, which is fayre and great, and without faut, it shall bring us into a wode a leage hens; than shall we be out of all parell, for there is no man in the host that knoweth it. They all agreed to his counsayle; and in a night, whan they hadde all trussed, than they toke torches and fagottes, and entred into the cave, whiche was fayre and clere, and so they issued out therof into a wode halfe a leage fro the castell. Than ther were ynowe that knewe the wayes to other forteresses in Lymosin and in Rouergue, and some of them, whan they were oute of all parelles, toke other wayes, and sayd howe they wolde folowe the warres no lengar. Augerot and fyve with hym wente to a towne and a castell in Piergourt, called Mountroyall, and the lorde therof receyved hym swetely, for he and all his landes were good Englysshe, nor he wolde never tourne Frenche whan other dyd; howbeit, there were dyvers other of his opynion.

Thus they of the garyson of Pulpuron saved themselfe,

CAP. XXXVIII

Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretaygne.

and left no persone behynde them, and were nere ther as they wolde be, or the Frenchmen knewe of their departynge. The thirde day after their departyng the Frenchemen ordayned to gyve assaut, and they had made an ingyn with four stages, and in every stage there might be twentie crosbowes. And whan all was redy, they set forthe this ingyn, the whiche they named Passe on before,[1] to the weykest syde of the castell, and the Genoways within the ingyn; and whan it was there as they wolde have it, there they shotte agaynst the castell, and no body dyde appere. Than anone they parceyved that the castell was voyde, bycause no body came to their defence: than they ceassed their shot, bicause they wolde nat lese their quarelles. Than they came downe fro the ingyn, and came to the capitayns, who had marveyle what they ment, and than they sayd, Sirs, without fayle there is no body within the castell. Howe knowe you that? quod sir Gaultier. Sir, quod they, we knowe it, for there is none appereth at their defence for all our shot. Than ther were ordayned ladders to sette up agaynst the walles, and they that mounted on them passed over the walles, and entred into the castell, and founde no creature therin, and than they wente to the gate, and there they founde a great bundell of kayes, and among other they founde the kaye of the gate and opyned it, and than all the barryers one after another, wherof the lordes had great marveyle, and specially sir Gaultier of Paschac. He wende they had ben departed out of the castell by enchauntment, and than demaunded of them that were about hym howe it might be; the seneschall of Tholous sayd to hym, Sir, surely they can nat be thus gone, without they have some secrete waye under the erthe, which I thynke there be. Thanne all the castell was sought in every corner where any suche waye shulde be: there they founde in a cellar the mouthe of the alley open, and there all the lordes dyde beholde it; and sir Galtier had great marveyle therof, and demaunded of the seneschall of Tholous if he knewe before of any suche cave. Sir, quod he, I have herde or this therof, but I thought nothyng that they wolde have thus departed by that waye. By my faythe, quod sir Gaultier, they be gone the same waye; have the castelles of this countre suche

[1] *Passe-avant.*

CAP. XXXVIII

Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretaygne.

ordynaunce? Sir, quod sir Hughe, there be dyvers suche castelles as of olde tyme parteyned to Raynalt of Montabon that hath suche conveyaunce; for whan he and his bretherne kepte warre agaynst kynge Charlemayne of Fraunce, they were made all after this maner by the counsayle and advyse of Maugis theyr cosyn; for when the kynge besyeged them by puyssaunce, and that they sawe they coulde not resyst hym, then they wolde departe without ony leve takynge, by meanes of these passages under the erthe. Surely, sayd syr Galtier, I lawde gretly that ordynaunce; I can not say yf ever I shall have any warre agaynst me or not, other by kynge, duke, or by ony other neyghboure that I have; but as soone as I am retourned into my countrey I shall cause suche a myne to be made in my castell of Pasac. So thus they toke possessyon of the castell, and set therin men of warre to kepe there a garyson; and so then they wente further towardes the castell of Convall, where Espaygnolet of Papereaw,[1] Basque, was capytayne, and with hym a good nombre of these pyllers and robbers.

[1] *Bageran.*

So these lordes and theyr company came to the garyson of Convall,[2] in Rabestan, and layde syege therto, and then syr Gaultyer demaunded of the seneshall of Tholous, yf Convall auncyently perteyned to Raynalte of Mountalban. And he sayd, Yes. Then there is a cave under the grounde, sayd syr Gaultyer. Syr, that is true, sayd syr Brews,[3] for by reason therof Espaygnolet wanne it the seconde tyme, and the owner within it. Then syr Gaultyer sente for the knyght that was owner therof, and sayd to hym, Syr, it were good ye enfourmed us of the myne that is out of this castell, and the yssue therof. Then syr Raymonde of Convall sayd, Syr, surely there is a way under the grounde, for therby I was taken, and lost this my castel; it was before of longe tyme decayed and destroyed, but these robbers newe repayred it, and by that way they came on me; and syr, the yssue therof is in a wood not farre hence. Wel, sayd syr Gaultyer, all is well. And so iiii. dayes after he wente to the same wood, and had with hym CC. men wel armed. And when he sawe the hole where the yssue was, he caused the erthe and busshes to be avoyded, and then he lyghted up many fagottes, and sayd to them that were

[2] *Commaleix.*

[3] *Hugues.*

CAP. XXXVIII

Howe a siege was layde to Breste in Bretaygne.

ordeyned to go into the cave, Syrs, folowe this cave, and it shal brynge you into the hall of Convall, and there ye shal fynde a dore: breke it up, ye are stronge ynough so to do, and to fyght with them within. So they entred and came to the grece nere to the hall dore in the castell; then with grete axes they strake at the dore, and by that tyme it was nere nyght. They within the castell made good watche, and perceyved howe by the myne they wolde have entred into the castell, and Espaygnolet was goynge to his rest; then he came thyder, and there they cast stones, benches, and tymbre, before the cave dore, to the entente that none sholde entre there, thoughe the dore were broken up. This was done, for other shyfte had they none of defence. But for all that, they within the myne anone brake the dore all to peces, and yet were never the nere, for then they had more to do then they had before; and when they sawe it was impossible for them to entre there, they retourned agayne to the oost, and by that tyme it was mydnyght. Then they shewed what they had founde, and howe they of Convall had perceyved them, and had so fortefyed the cave dore, that it was not possyble to entre by that way into the castell.

CAP. XXXIX

Howe the castelles of Convall, of Bygore, and of Mesnyll, were taken, and all they within taken, slayne, and hanged.

THEN syr Gaultyer of Paschac sente to Basse for the grete engyne, whiche was taken downe and brought thyther, and raysed up on his wheles as it sholde be, and also they apparelled other instrumentes for the assawte. And when al was redy, then syr Gaultyer, who gretly desyred to wynne this castell, caused his trompettes to sowne to the assawte. There was the seneshall of Tholouse with his company on the one syde, and syr Roger of Spayne, seneshal of Carcasson, on the other syde; also there was the lorde of Barbazan, syr Benedic, and the lorde of Benoch, the lorde of the countye of Desterac,[1] syr Raymonde of Lysle,

[1] *le fils au conte d'Esterac.*

CAP. XXXIX

Howe the castelles of Convall, of Bygore, and of Mesnyll, were taken.

and other knyghtes and squyers of the countrey. Then they began the sawte, and they within to defende themselfe, whiche was nede, for they sawe themselfe in a harde parte; they knewe wel howe syr Gaultyer wolde take none to mercy, therfore they thought to defende themselfe as longe as they myght, and to sell theyr lyves derely. There the Geneways crossebowes shot sore, and hurte many within, so that there were none within but doubted gretely. And there syr Gaultyer of Pasac dyd mervayles in armes, and sayd to his company, What syrs, shall these rascalles holde us in hande all this daye thus? Yf it were agaynste good men of armes I wolde not mervayle, for in them were mo feates of warre then in these rascalles that be within: it is myne entent to dyne within the castell; nowe it shall be sene yf ye wyll accomplysshe my desyre. With those wordes suche as desyred his good wyl advaunced themselfe forthe; they toke many ladders and set them up agaynst the wall, where as the engyne stode with the crossebowes, who shot so fyersly that none within durst shew themselfe. Thus by clene assawte the Frensshemen entred into the castel of Conval, theyr swordes in theyr handes, chasynge theyr enemyes, and there were many slayne, and the other taken; then every man entred in at the gates. Then it was demaunded of syr Gaultyer what sholde be done with them that were taken. By saynt George, sayd he, I wyll they be all hanged; and incontynent his commaundement was done, and Espaygnoylet began fyrst. So the lordes dyned in the castel, and the other people in the towne, and there they taryed all that day: and syr Gaultyer delyvered agayne to the lorde of Convall his towne and castell, and then ordeyned to departe thens.

Thus after the takynge of the castell of Convall, as ye have herde, the Frensshmen wente to another holde, called Mesnyll,[1] whiche had done grete domage to the countrey, with other, and there they made assawte, and they within defended themselfe, but that was not longe, for by clene assawte they were wonne, and the castell also, and all that was within slayne and hanged up. And when they of Rotchfort, and of other castelles, knewe howe syr Gaultyer had wonne so many castelles, and that he toke none to mercy, but outher slayne or hanged, they doubted moche for

[1] *Mastull* P. *Mézin.*

CAP. XXXIX

Howe the castelles of Convall, of Bygore, and of Mesnyll, were taken.

comynge to the same ende, wherfore they departed in the nyght tyme. I can not tell whether they wente under the grounde or above, for bytwene the castell of Rochefort, and the castell of Royx, were caves under the erthe,[1] for auncyently they perteyned to Raynolde of Mountalban. So the Frensshmen founde these castelles clene voyde when they came thyder; then they newely repeopled it with men of warre and provysyon. Then they toke theyr way towarde Tholous to go into Bygore, for on the fronter of Tarbe there were two castelles, the one called the Dos Julyan, and the other Navaret, whiche gretely travayled the countrey, and the good towne of Tarbe, and the londes of the lorde Danchyn.

[1] *ces deux chasteaulx Roys et Rochefort sont minés.*

When syr Gaultyer of Pasac, and the lordes of Fraunce, and of Languedoc, had well refresshed them in the cyte of Tholous, then they departed and toke the waye into Bygore, and so came before the castell of Le Dos Julyan, and there taryed and sayd they wolde goo no further tyll they had wonne it. Thyder came to syr Gaultyer of Pasac, the seneshal of Nobesan,[2] perteynynge to the erle of Foys, for syr Gaultyer had sente for hym to helpe to dryve out of the countrey the pyllers and robbers, who had renne as well in the countrey of Nobessan, as in other places; also the erle of Foyz consented that he sholde so do, or elles he durst not have done so. They were before Dos Julyan xv. dayes or they had it; the castell was stronge, and a good capytayne therin, a squyer of Gascoyn, called Bruer de Brome.[3]

[2] *Nébouzan.*

[3] *Bernier de Brunemotte.*

Howbeit, they at the last hadde it, not by assawte, but by treaty, they within departed, theyr lyves and goodes saved; and also they were safely convayed to Lowrde, by a squyre called Bertram of Mountdyghen. And when these lordes of Fraunce had Dos Julyen, then they toke advyse whether they myght kepe it styll, or rase it downe to the erthe; then it was counsayled to bete it downe, bycause of them of Lowrde, who were crafty and subtyle, fearynge that when they sholde be gone, that they wolde wynne it agayne; so it was betten downe, and as yet the stones lye on a hepe, and lykely never to be buylded agayne. Thus became of Dos Julyan. Then they wente before Navaret, wherin there was also companyons adventurers, who had kepte it more then a yere. And when they knewe howe they of Dos Julyan

CAP. XXXIX

Howe the castelles of Convall, of Bygore, and of Mesnyll, were taken.

were departed, in lyke wyse dyde they, and had a saufconduyte, and wente to Lowrde, whiche was theyr chefe refuge, for they knewe well no man wolde seke them there, without they wolde lese theyr payne, for the castell of Lowrde was impossyble to be taken by force.

When the Frensshemen had rased the castel of Dos Julyan, then they wente to Navaret, and founde it all voyde. Then it was ordeyned to be beten downe, and so it was, wherof they of Tarbe were nothynge myscontent, for that garyson had done them grete domage. Then they wente to the castell of Dauchen,[1] in Bygore, standynge amonge the mountaynes, in the entre of Byerne: and there they were a xv. dayes, and in that season made dyvers assawtes, and wanne the base courte and al theyr horses, but there was a stronge towre on the rocke that coulde not be wonne. And when the lordes sawe howe they lost there but theyr payne, and that Wyllyam Morenton, who kepte the holde, wolde not yelde it up, nor sell it, nor herken to no treatye, then they departed and retourned to Tarbe. And then syr Gaultyer of Passac gave leve to all his men of warre to departe, and they were payde of theyr wages, or had suffycyent sygnement, so that they were pleased; and he wente to Carcasson, and theraboute, and refresshed hym. And whyle he lay there, tydynges came to hym out of Fraunce, and a commaundement fro the kynge, that he sholde drawe to the garyson of Bountevyll Xainton,[2] on the marches of Burdeloys and Poyctou, whiche garyson was kepte by a capytayne called Saynt Foy, a Gascoyne. And it was sayd in Fraunce, that syr John Harpedan, seneshall of Burdeaus, made a grete assemble of men of warre at Lyborne, to rayse the bastydes that they of Poictou, and of Xainton, hadde layde before Bountevyll. To the kynges commaundement obeyed syr Gaultyer, as it was reason, and toke with hym a lx. speres, and a C. crosse bowes, Genevoys, and so departed fro Carcasson, and passed by Rouuergue, Agen, and costed Pierregourt, and so came to Bountevyll, and founde there the seneshalles of Rochel, of Poictou, of Pierregourt, and of Dagen, and a grete nombre of men of warre.

[1] *Ost.*

[2] *Bouteville en Xantonge.*

In farre countres it maye be well mervayled of the noble royalme of Fraunce, therin is so many cytees, townes, cas-

CAP. XXXIX

Howe the castelles of Convall, of Bygore, and of Mesnyll, were taken.

telles, whiche be without nombre, and that as well in farre partyes therof, as in the harte of the royalme. Ye shall fynde goynge from the cyte of Tholous, to the cyte of Burdeaus, stondynge on the ryver of Garon, fyrst, Langurant, Rions, Caldiac,[1] Bangou,[2] saynt Macayre, the castell of Dorthe,[3] Candoch,[4] Geronde, Larull,[5] Myllant,[6] saynt Basyll, Marmande, Commont,[7] Tannus,[8] Lemnas Dagenes,[9] Montour, Agyllon, Thouars, Porte Saynt Mary, Clermont, Agen, Ambyllart, Castell Sarasyne, Le Hedo, Verdun, and Bell Mote. And then takynge the way by the ryvere of Dordone, whiche falleth into Garon, ye shall fynde these castelles, on the one syde and on the other: Brouech,[10] Fronsach, Liborne, saynt Milion, Chatellon, the Mote, saynt Pesant, Montremell, and saynt Foy, Bergerach, Mortquinormons,[11] and the castell of Teue.[12] And these castels some were Englysshe, and some Frensshe, and so contynewed all the warre season, the Gascoynes wolde have had it none otherwyse to have chosen; for in xxx. yere they never made othe nor promyse to ony man. True it was of the Gascoynes, fyrst, by theyr meanes kynge Edwarde had chefe possessyon of Gascoyne, and also the Prynce his sone, and after they put them agayne fro it, as it is clerely conteyned in this hystory: and by the good wyt and advyse of kynge Charles, sone to kynge John, he drewe to his love by fayre meanes and grete gyftes, the grettest lordes of all Gascoyne, as the erle of Armynake, and the lorde Dalbret. The Prynce lost them by pryde, for I Johan Froysarde, who wrote this hystory, the same season that I was at Burdeaus, and that the Prynce wente into Spayne, the Englysshemen were so prowde, that they set nothyng by ony nacyon but by theyr owne. For the gentylmen of Gascoyne, and of Acquitayne, suche as lost theyr goodes in the warre, yet they coulde gete no maner of offyce in theyr countrees, for the Englysshemen sayd they were not worthy nor able to have ony; wherwith they were sore grudged in theyr myndes; and when they myght they shewed it, for bycause of the hardnes that the erle of Armynacke, and the lorde Dalbret, founde in the Prince, they forsoke hym and became Frensshe, and so dyde dyvers other knyghtes and squyers of Gascoyne. Kynge Phylyp of Fraunce, and kynge John his sone, had lost them by pryde

1 *Cadillac.*
2 *Longen.*
3 *Castets-en-Dorte.*
4 *Cauderot.*
5 *La Reole.*
6 *Meilhan.*
7 *Caumont.*
8 *Tonneins.*
9 *Le Mas d'Agènes.*
10 *Bourg.*
11 *Pontour, Mons.*
12 *Couse.*

CAP. XXXIX

Howe the castelles of Convall, of Bygore, and of Mesnyll, were taken.

and hyghe mynde; in lyke wyse so dyde the Prince; and kynge Charles wan[1] them by fayrnes, by larges and humylyte, for so wolde Gascoynes be delte withall. And kynge Charles, to the entente that the love of these lordes sholde the longer contynewe, he made a maryage bytwene the syster of the lady Isabell of Burbon, and the lorde Dalbret, and bytwene them were fayre chyldren, and for this cause the love endured the longer. And on a tyme at Paris, where as I was, I herde the lorde Dalbret speke a worde, whiche I well noted, but I byleve he spake it but in sporte; howbeit, he spake it in grete sadnes to a knyght of Brytayne, who had served hym before, for the knyght had demaunded hym of the busynes of his countrey, and howe he was contente to be Frensshe. He answered and sayd, I thanke God I do metely well; howbeit, I had more money, and my men also, when we made war for the kynge of Englonde, then we have now; for when we rode forthe at adventure we founde ever some ryche merchaunt, other of Tholous, Condon, or Bergerath: lyghtely there was no day but we gate ever some good pray; then we were fresshe and joly, and nowe we be as deed. Then the knyght began to laughe and sayd, Truely this is a lyfe of Gascoynes, lyghtly they wolde ever have other mennes domage. Therfore, I that harde these wordes say, as I thought, that the lorde Dalbret repented hym in that he was become Frensshe, as the lorde of Musydent, Gascoyne, who was taken at the batayle of Aimet, and sware into the handes of the duke of Anjow, that he wolde come to Parys, and become Frensshe ever after. So he came to Paris, and kynge Charles made hym good chere, but for all that ever the kynge dyd, the lorde of Musydent departed agayne fro Parys without ony leve, and wente into his countrey, and became agayne Englysshe, and brake all the promyses that he had made with the duke of Anjow: in lykewyse so dyde the lorde of Rousen, the lorde of Duras, and the lorde of Languerant. Suche is the nacyon of Gascoyne: they be not stable, for they love yet the Englysshemen better then the Frensshemen, for theyr warre agaynst the Frensshemen were more profytable for them then agaynst the Englysshemen; this is the pryncypall incydent that moost inclyneth them therto.

[1] *wynne* P.

CAP. XL

Howe the kynge of Cypres was slayne and murdred in his bedde by his owne broder by exhortacyon and corrupcyon of the infydelles, for the bountye and hardnes that was in hym.

IN this same season there came other tydynges into Fraunce, for thider came kyng Lyon of Armony,[1] not with no grete company, but as a man chased out of his royalme, wherof he was kynge, by the Turkes. And al his royalme was wonne, excepte one castel standynge on the see, called Courthe,[2] whiche was kepte by the Genevoys, bycause that castell was the key, yssue, and entre, by the see, to go to Alexandria, and into the Sowdans londe. For these Genevoys gothe a marchaundyse, by the meanes of truage that they pay, into Inde,[3] and into Prester Johns londe, and in every place they are welcome, bycause of the golde and sylver that they brought thyder, and for other merchaundyse that they exchaunge in Alexandria, in Cayr, in Damas, and in other places amonge the Sarasyns. For in suche maner the worlde is governed: for that is not in one countrey, is in another, and therby every thynge is knowen. And the Genevoys be those that furthest doth adventure theyr merchaundyse; they be lordes of the portes of the se above the Venisians, and more feared and doubted amonge the Sarasyns then ony other people on the see; they be valyaunt men and of grete entrepryse: a galy well furnysshed of the Genevoys, dare well assay iiii. galeys of the Sarasyns. The Turke and Tartaryes sholde do moche domage to chrystendome, yf the Genevoys were not, bycause they be renomed to be chefe lordes of the see, marchynge on infydelles; therfore they have ever l. galeys and grete shyppes rynnynge on the see, to defende the Iles, as the Ile of Cypres, the Ile of Rodes, the Ile Dostye,[4] and all the boundes of the see, and Grece unto Turkye. And they have the towne and castel of Pere, stondynge on the see before Constantyne le noble, whiche is kepte at theyr cost and charge, and iii. or

[1] *Armenia.*
[2] *Gorhigos.*
[3] *Rude* P.
[4] *l'isle de Scie.*

iiii. tymes every yere it is refresshed with that that is necessary. The Tartaryes and Turkes have dyvers tymes assayed to gete it, but they coulde never attayne therto, for they have ever lost there more then they have wonne: for the castell of Pere stondeth on a rocke, and there is but one entre, whiche the Genevoys gretely dyde fortefye. Also the Genevoys have the towne and castell of Jason,[1] whiche is ryght noble, and a grete profyte to them, and to other nere countres of Crystendome. For yf Pere, Jason, Stycye,[2] and Rodes were not with the ayde of the Genevoys, the infydelles wolde soone come to Gaiet, yea, and to Naples, to the porte of Cornet, and to Rome. But the sayd garysons, whiche alwayes be well provyded for with men of warre and Genevoys, with the shyppes and galeys, are ever redy to defende them, wherfore the Turkes dare not adventure on that partyes, but that they do is on the fronters of Constantyne le noble, and towarde Hungery. Yf the noble kynge of Cypres, Peter of Liesiegnen,[3] who was so noble and valyant a prynce, and had conquered the grete cyte of Alexandrie, and Satalye, yf he had lyved longer he wolde have gyven the Sowdan and Turkes so moche ado, that syth Godfrey of Boloyns dayes they had never so moche. And that ryght wel knewe the Turkes, and Tartaryes, and infydelles, suche as knewe his prowes and hygh dedes, and therfore to have hym dystroyed they made merchaundyse with the kynges broder, called Jaquet, that he sholde slee the kynge his broder. And so he dyd, for he slewe him in his bed, whiche was a fowle dede for bloode, to slee so valyaunt a man as was the kynge of Cypres, who intended and ymagened nyght and day on none other thynge but how he myght wynne the holy londe, and to have it out of the handes of the infydelles. And sir Phelyp of Maysyeres, chauncellour to Peter of Liesiegnen, kynge of Cypres, wrote on his tombe as it foloweth, the copy wherof is in the chapytre house of the freer Celestynes, in Paris: Peter of Liesiegnen, the vi. kyng Latyne of Iherusalem, after Godfrey of Boloyne, and kynge of Cypres, who by his grete prowes and hyghe empryse toke by batayle at his cost these cytees, Alexandrie in Egypte, Triple in Surie, Layas in Armony, Satalie in Turkye, and dyvers other cytees and

CAP. XL

Howe the kynge of Cypres was slayne and murdred in his bedde.

[1] *Samsoun.*

[2] *Scie.*

[3] *Lusignan.*

CAP. XL

Howe the kynge of Cypres was slayne and murdred in his bedde.

castelles on the infydelles and enemyes of the lawe of Ihesu Cryst. *Anima eius requiescat in pace.*

And when the Genevoys, who loved hym gretely, as it was reason, when they knewe of his dethe they prepared vii. galyes, and sente them into Cypres, and toke there perforce the cyte of Samagose,[1] and Jaquet within it, and over ranne the best parte of the royalme, and wolde have destroyed the royalme, but bycause there were stronge townes and fortresses to kepe fronter warre agaynst the Turkes, therfore they lefte them styl in the mennes handes of the countre, excepte the cyte of Samagose, whiche they kepte styll and fortefyed it; but when they wanne it fyrste, they had there grete ryches; and so they ledde with them to Genes this Jaquet, who had murdred his broder. True it was this kyng of Cypres had a fayre sone, whom they maryed, and crowned kynge, and put this Jaquet into strayte pryson, and wolde not put hym to dethe, and kepte styll in theyr handes Samagose, I knowe not yf they kepe it as yet or no. Then within a season after the yonge kynge of Cypres dyed in his bed, wherof the Genevoys were sore dyspleased, but they coulde not amende it; so the lande was without ony heyre. I can not tell who governeth it nowe, but the same yere that I was in the erle of Foys house, it was shewed me by a knyght of Biern, the lorde of Valenchyn, howe the Genevoys had a grete parte of the lande, and helde styl Samagose, and how they of the countrey had crowned to theyr kynge the sayd Jaquet, for lacke of other heyre: I can not tell by what meanes he came out of pryson, and out of the handes of the Genevoys. When the sayd kynge Lyon of Armony came fyrst into Fraunce, the kynge there and the lordes made hym good chere, as it was reason, for he was come thyder out of a farre countre; and so by hym and his was knowen tydynges of the royalme of Grece, and of the empyre of Constantyne le noble, for he was examyned of the puyssaunce of the Turkes, and of the Tartaries, who had put hym out of his royalme. He answered and sayd, that the grete Tacon of Tartarie had alway made hym warre, and it was he that had put him out of his royalme. Then he was demaunded yf the Tacon of Tartarie were puyssaunt: Ye truely, sayd he, for by his puyssaunce,

[1] *Famagosta.*

CAP. XL

with the puyssaunce of the Sowdan, he hath subdued the emperoure of Constantyne le noble. [*Then the lords asked if Constantinople*] kepte the lawes of the Tartaries. The kyng answered and sayd Nay, but the Tacon of Tartarie, and the Sowdan have longe made warre agaynst the emperour of Constantyne le noble; at the last he was fayne to make his ende, or elles he coulde have no peas, whiche emperour of Constantyne le noble was sone to my lady Mary of Burbon, and sone to the emperour Hughes of Lesiegnen, whiche emperour was fayne to give his doughter in maryage to the sone of the Tacon of Tartarie; howbeit, the emperour abydeth styll in his Crysten lawe, and all is by reason of commyctyon of this maryage. Then it was demaunded of hym what the erle Couiet[1] of Savoy dyd in that countrey, seyng he was so valyaunt a man, and had so grete a puyssaunce. Then the kynge answered and sayd, that when the erle of Savoy was in the empyre of Hungry, and made warre agaynst the Turkes and Tartaryes, there by his valyauntnes he conquered on the Tartaryes, and on the Sowdans lande, two good townes, as Calipole and Lobeme,[2] and lefte men there to kepe them. And after the retourne of the erle of Savoy, the townes were kepte styll crysten as longe as the good kynge of Cypres lyved; but as soone as the Sowdan, and the Tacon of Tartarie knew of his dethe, they feared nothynge the emperour of Constantyne le noble, but raysed an army of a C. M. horsemen, and so came and ranne before Constantyne le noble, and fro thens they wente and besyeged Calipole, and conquered it perforce, and slewe all the crysten men that were within it, and had made so grete warre agaynst the emperour of Constantyne le noble, that all his puyssaunce coulde not resyst them; but they forbare hym by reason of his doughter, whom the sone of the grete Tacon coveted to have in maryage. Whiche is a harde case for the tyme to come, for the offycers of the Tacon be as now in the cyte of Constantyne le noble, so that the Grekes there lyve under them, and by truage; and yf the kynges Crysten put not therto a remedy, or at lengthe the matter shall go so evyll, that the Turkes and Tartaries shall conquere all Grece, and tourne it to theyr byleve, for so they make theyr avauntes. They do mocke

Howe the kynge of Cypres was slayne and murdred in his bedde.

[1] *Amé.*

[2] *et la obtint.*

CAP. XL
Howe the kynge of Cypres was slayne and murdred in his bedde.

the popes, wherof one is at Rome, and another at Avignyon; they say that the ii. goddes of Crystendome warreth eche agaynst other, wherby they afferme our lawe to be the more feble, and the lyghter to be dystroyed and condempned; they lay therto reason in that they that sholde exalte the Crysten fayth, are the fyrst that mynyssheth it, and dystroy it. Then it was demaunded of the kynge of Armony, whether that the Sowdan, and the Tacon of Tartarie, were ii. of the grettest prynces amonge the infydelles that were knowen with the Grekes. The kynge answered and sayd, Nay surely, they be not the gretest, for alwayes the Turkes are more noble, more greter, more sage, and more redoubted in warre, as longe as they have a good heed and governour, as they have had this C. yere: for thoughe the Tacon of Tartarie holde in subjeccyon the emperoure of Constantyne le noble, yet the lorde of Turkey holdeth in lyke wyse the Tacon. And this lorde of Turkey is called Lamorabaquin,[1] and to say the trouthe he is a valyaunt man in armes, and a wyse man in his lawe; of Lamorabaquin I complayne me not, for he never dyd me hurte, for he hath alwayes kepte his warre agaynst the emperoure of Hungery. Then the lordes of Fraunce demaunded of hym yf this Lamorabaquin were so grete, and so feared as he sayd. Ye truely, sayd the kynge of Armony, and more then I speke of; for the emperour of Constantyne le noble, and the emperoure of Hungery feareth hym: in lyke wyse doth the Sowdan of Babylon, and the Tacon of Tartarie; and as I have herde say of the Tartaryes, the Tacon wolde or this tyme further have put under the emperoure of Constantyne le noble, but for doubte of Lamorabaquin; the Tacon knoweth hym and his nature so well, for as sone as he knoweth one gretter then hymselfe, he wyll never have joy tyl he have put hym under; wherfore the Tacon wyll not do to Constantyne le noble that he myght well do yf he wolde. Then he was demaunded yf this Lamorabaquin had ony grete power of men. The kynge sayd, Ye surely, for in xxx. yere, where soever he wente he had ever in his company a C. M. horses alwayes lodged in the feldes, and never entreth into ony towne, and for his garde he hath ever xx. M. Turkes. And where so ever he goeth he hath his fader with hym, and he

[1] *l Amorath Baquin.*

hymselfe is of a lx. yere of age, and his fader lxxx. and x. And he loveth moche the Frenshe language, and suche as cometh thens; he desyreth to se all the grete lordes of the worlde, and the Frensshe kynge, and his estate and ordre; and one speke to hym of Fraunce he is well content. Then the kynge was demaunded why that Lamorabaquin suffred the Tacon in peas, syth he was so grete an emperour. Bycause, sayd the kynge, that the Tacon feareth hym, and dare make hym no warre; and also there be certayne townes and portes in Tartarie that yerely payeth trybute to Lamorabaquin. And also they are all of one lawe, and they wyl not lyghtly dystroy theyr owne lawe; and he mervayleth gretely of the warre amonge Crysten men howe eche of them dystroyeth other, wherfore he is often in mynde to come into Crystendome, and to wyn all before hym; I wolde he had won my lande rather then the Tacon, for it had ben better for me. He was demaunded Why. And he answered and sayd: Lamorabaquin is a lorde of noble condycyon, and yf he were xxx. yere yonger, he were lykely to make grete conquestes where as he wolde employ his warre; for when he hath wonne a countrey, towne, or sygnory, he desyreth nothynge but truage, and leveth styll every man in his owne byleve, and he putteth never no man fro his herytage; he desyreth nothynge but the soverayne domynacyon. Wherfore I saye yf he had conquered the royalme of Armony, as the Tartaries have [he would have] suffered me in peas, and my royalme styll in our owne byleve, by knowledgynge hym as my soverayne, as other grete lordes do that marche nere hym, as the Grekes and Tracyens, who take hym for theyr soverayne lorde, wherby they are out of doubte of the soveraynte of the Sowdan, and of the Tacon of Tartarie. The lorde of Satalie, and the lorde de la Palice,[1] and the lorde of Hawlte Lodge,[2] these iii. lordes and theyr landes are in peas, by reason of a truage that they pay to Lamorabaquin: ther is no Turke nor Tartarien that dare do them ony wronge or domage. Then it was demaunded of the kynge of Armony, yf his lande were so clerely lost that it myght not be recovered agayne. Truely, sayd the kynge, it is without recovery, without the puyssaunce of Crystendome come thyder stronger then the

CAP. XL

Howe the kynge of Cypres was slayne and murdred in his bedde.

[1] *Palatia* (*Miletus*).

[2] *Altilocus* (*Ephesus*)

CAP. XL

Howe the kynge of Cypres was slayne and murdred in his bedde.

Turkes and Tartariens; for as I have sayd, the ferther they come forwarde, more they are lykely to conquere; for excepte one towne, called Courth, which is the fyrst towne of the royalme of Armony, and is as yet in the Crysten mennes handes, al the resydue of the royalme is in the infydels handes: and where as the chyrches were wonte to be, there they set up theyr ydolles and theyr mawmettes. Then it was demaunded if the towne of Courth were stronge. Ye truely, sayd the kynge, it wyll not be wonne without it be by longe syege, or elles betrayed, for it standeth nere to the see in a drye place bytwene ii. rockes, whiche can nat be approched; for yf the Turkes or Tartaries had it in theyr handes, and another good towne not ferre thens, called Adelphe, all Grece were dystroyed, and Hungery sholde have moche ado. Then it was demaunded yf Hungery marched nere to Tartarie, and to the Turkes: the kynge sayd, Ye truely, and nerer to the Turkes and Lamorabaquin, then to ony other. Then the lordes sayd, It is grete mervayle that Lamorabaquin suffereth hym to be in rest, syth he marcheth soo nere to Hungery, and he beynge so valyaunt a man, and so grete a conquerour. In the name of God, sayd the kynge of Armony, or this tyme he hath studyed as moche as he myght how to have done domage to the royalme of Hungery, and yf an incydent had not ben or this, he had ben farre in the countrey of Hungery. He was demaunded what incydent it was; and the kynge sayd, I shal shewe you.

CAP. XLI

Howe the kynge of Armony was examyned, and howe xxx. M. Turkes were slayne and dystroyed in the royalme of Hungery.

WHEN Lamorabaquin sawe that all the lordes that marched nere to hym fered and doubted him, what for his conquestes and prowes, and how that al the boundes of the see to Hungery obeyed to hym; also he saw wel how the valyaunt kyng of Hungery, Frederycke, was deed, and how the royalme was fallen to a woman,

CAP. XLI

Howe the kynge of Armony was examyned.

wherfore he advysed hym to conquere the royalme, and so made a grete somons in Turkye, and suche as he sente for came to hym. And so then this Lamorabaquin went forthe and lodged in the playnes of Satalie, bytwene Palice and Haulte Lodge, to gyve more feare to his enemyes. And his entencyon was to entre into the royalme of Hungery; and bycause that Hungery is a royalme and countrey, closed and envyronned with hygh rockes and mountaynes, wherby it is the stronger, then he sente before hym his ambassadours and heraldes, with a mulet charged with mylle, and he commaunded them to go into Hungery, to the erle of Lazaran,[1] whose landes lyeth bytwene the mountaynes of Melcabe,[2] and of Robee,[3] whiche way he purposed his army sholde pas, and to shewe hym how he commaunded hym, Yf he thynke to lyve in rest, and to have his lande in peas, that he obey to us, in lykewyse as the lorde of Palice, and the lorde of Satalie, and the lorde of Haulte Lodge hath done, and that he open and gyve us fre passage thrughe his landes; and yf he say nay, and be rebell agaynst us, then shewe hym on our behalfe that I shall brynge as many men to dystroy his countrey, as there be graynes of mylle in the sacke. The ambassadours departed wel instructed of that they sholde do, and so rode by theyr journeys tyll they came into Hungery, into the lande of the erle Lazaran, and founde hym in a castell of his called Archforme. And the erle lyke a sage lorde receyved these ambassadours right swetely, and made them good chere, but he had mervayle when he sawe entre into his courte the mule charged with a sacke, and wyst not what it was: he thought it had ben golde or precyous stones, that Lamorabaquin had sente to hym, to drawe hym therby to consente to suffre hym to have fre passage thrugh his countrey; howbeit, he sayd to hymselfe that he wolde never be corrupted for no maner of ryches that sholde be presented to hym. Then these messangers came before the erle, and sayd, Syr of Lazaran, understande we be sente fro the hyghe and redoubted lorde and soverayne kynge, Lamorabaquin, lorde of Turkye, with the apertenaunces, and we say to you on his behalfe that he commaundeth you to come to his obeysaunce, in lyke maner as ye knowe that your neyghbours

[1] *Lazarus, lord of Servia.*
[2] *Melkovat.*
[3] *Rahowa.*

CAP. XLI
Howe the kynge of Armony was examyned.

have done, as the lorde de la Palice, the lorde of Haulte Lodge, and the lorde of Satalie have done to hym homage: and that ye open to hym the passages of your countrey, yf ye thynke to lyve in rest, and in your so doynge ye shall deserve gretely his grace and love; and yf ye rebell and disobey, we are charged to say to you, that our lorde Lamorabaquin wyl brynge into your countrey mo men of armes then there be graynes of mylle in this sacke. And therwith they opened the sac, and shewed hym what was within it. And when the erle of Lazaran understode the ambassadoure of Lamorabaquin, and determyned in hymselfe to answere temporatly, and wolde not dyscover his thought sodaynly, but sayd, Close up the sacke, I se ryght wel what is therin, and I have well harde what thynge Lamorabaquin demaundeth of me: and within these iii. dayes I shall make you an answere, for his request demaundeth counsayl. They answered and sayd, Syr, ye speke wel: so trustyng to have an answere they taryed there iii. dayes. Now shall I shewe you what the erle of Lazaran dyd in the space of these iii. dayes: he sent and provyded into the castell mo then ii. M. capons and hennes, and closed them up into a house without ony maner of mete, so that in iii. dayes they ete no thynge. And when the daye came that he wolde answere the ambassadours, then he sent for them into a galary lokynge downe into a courte, and sayd, Syrs, come hyder and leane here with me, and I shal shewe you a newe thynge, and so answere you. And they knowynge not what he wolde doo, leaned downe in a wyndowe by hym. Then the gates were closed, and the courte was grete; so his men were redy to doo as he had ordeyned: then they opened a chambre dore or ii. where as all the pollayne were that had eten no mete of ii. dayes before. Then the servauntes toke the grayne that was in the sacke, and cast it all aboute before the capons nd hennes, so that within halfe an houre al the corne was

Wn up clene, and wolde have eten more yf they had had it. n the erle sayd to the messangers, Syrs, ye have sene this grayne whiche you have brought hyder from your al the bu is clene eten and devoured, and brought to nothynge he saw we pollayne, and yet they wolde ete more yf they had was deed, is true syr, sayd they, wherby speke you that? I

say, sayd the erle, your answere lyeth therin, as by ensample ye have sene; Lamorabaquin sayth, that yf I obey hym not, he wyl brynge into my lande men of armes without nombre: wherfore say unto hym fro me, I wyl abyde it, and he shall not brynge so many, but they shal be al devoured, as this corne is devoured by this pollayne.

CAP. XLI
Howe the kynge of Armony was examyned.

When the ambassadours harde this answere they were ryght pensyve, and so toke theyr leve and departed, and dyde so moche by theyr journeys that they came to Lamorabaquin, and shewed hym what the erle sayd, saynge, by semynge he set but lytell by his manassyng. With this answere Lamorabaquin was sore dyspleased, and sayd, howe the matter sholde not rest so, but whether the erle wolde or not, he wolde entre into his countre, and into Hungery, and how he wolde dystroy the erles countrey, bycause he answered hym so presumptuously.

Nowe shall I shewe you what the erle dyd, for he sawe well he was defyed of Lamorabaquin, and knew wel he sholde shortely here other tydynges of hym; therfore he made provysyon to defende hym, and wrote to al knyghtes and squyers, and to other, to come to hym to stoppe the entre of Lamorabaquin into Hungery, commaundynge every man after the syght of his letters to drawe to hym, certefyenge them howe Lamorabaquin was as then in the playnes of Haulte Loge. All suche as the erle sente for obeyed wyllyngly, and so came to the erle to defende Crystendome; and dyvers came to hym that were not sente for, suche as harde therof, to exalte Crysten faythe, and to dystroy the infydelles. Also the erle Lazaran caused forestes and hyghe trees to be hewen downe, and layde travers one over another, wherby the Turkes sholde not fynde out ony newe way; and then he with all his power came to a certayne passage, where as Lamorabaquin sholde passe to entre into Hungery. The erle had with hym a x. M. men of Hungery, and x. M. crossebowes, and dyd set them on bothe sides of the way; and also he had redy ii. M. men of the countre, havynge grete axes to cut downe the trees when he wolde have them. And when al this was done, then he sayd to them that were aboute hym, Syrs, without doubte Lamorabaquin wyl come, syth he sente me worde he wolde do so: therfore syrs, quyte

CAP. XLI
Howe the kynge of Armony was examyned.

yourselfe well, and valyauntly, to kepe and defende this passage; for yf the Turkes wynne it, al Hungery is in grete peryll to be lost; we be here in a stronge place, one of us is worth iiii. of them; and also we were better to dye with honoure in defendynge our herytages, and the fayth of Jesu Cryst, then to lyve in shame and servage under the dogges infydels, thoughe Lamorabaquin be a noble wyse man in his lawe. Syr, sayd they, we shall abyde the adventure with you, let the Turkes come when they wyll, we shall be redy to receyve them. Of this ordenaunce and passage the Turkes knewe nothyng, for the erle of Lazaran, for doubte of spyes, had set men suche as he trusted as well as hymselfe to kepe the passages, that no man sholde go to the Turkes, nother day nor nyght.

Lamorabaquin forgate not his entrepryse, but sayd how he wolde go vysyte the lande of the erle of Lazaran, to his grete domage, for he wolde not be reputed for a lyer in that he had promysed. So he toke lx. M. of his men, and set over them iiii. capytaynes of his householde, as the duke of Mansyon of Mecque, the keper of Damiet, Alphalori of Samarie, and the prynce of Corde, called Brachyn. And at theyr departynge he sayd to them, Syrs, go your waye with your company, ye be suffycyent to open the passages into Hungery, and entre into the lande of the erle of Lazaran, and dystroye it, and as soone as I may know that ye be there, I shal come thyder to you with all the resydue of my people: for I wyl put all Hungery under my subjectyon, and after, the royalme of Almayne. The enchauntours of my countrey, and of Egypte, saye it is my desteny to be lorde and kynge of all the worlde; and the place that I wolde moost gladlyest se is Rome, for auntyently it was of our enherytaunce, for our predecessours conquered and governed it dyvers tymes; and there I wyll be crowned, and Galafre of Landas,[1] the Tacon of Tartarye, and the Sowdan of Babylone, shal crowne me. Then they who were before hym on theyr knees answered and sayd, Syr, we shall accomplysshe your desyre and commaundement: and so they departed with a lx. M. Turkes, amonge whom there were xx. M. of the moost experte men of warre, and best armed of all Turkye, and they ledde the vowarde. So longe they

[1] *le califfe de Baudas (Bagdad).*

journeyed that they came in amonge the mountaynes of Lazaryn; they founde no let in the entrynge into the countrey; so the vowarde entred in, and the duke of Mecque and the duke of Damiet ledde them, and so this vowarde passed the erle of Lazaryns enbusshement. And when the erle and the Hungeryons sawe theyr tyme, they set theyr workemen a worke to cut downe trees, and to stoppe so the wayes that there coulde no mo entre, nor they that were comen in to recule; they were so closed in that it was not possyble for ony man to go ony further. So there was thus enclosed a xxx. M. Turkes, who were fyersly assayled by the Hungaryons, and so handeled on bothe sydes of the way that they were there all slayne, not one that skaped, and the ii. dukes also slayne; some thought to have saved themselfe in the woodes, but they were so chased that they were all slayne. Then they of the areregarde tourned backe when they saw they coulde not entre for the trees that stopped the way: so they retourned to Lamorabaquin, and shewed hym the grete myschyef that was fallen on his people, wherof he was mervayllous sory and dyspleased. Then he called his counsayle to know what was best for hym to do, for he had lost the floure of all his chyvalry, and so retourned and dyd no more at that tyme.

CAP. XLI

Howe the kynge of Armony was examyned.

When the kynge of Armony had shewed all this and his owne estate to the Frenshe kynge, and to the barons of Fraunce, and to his counsayle, they had of hym grete pyte. And bycause he was come fro so ferre a countre as Grece to seke counsayle and ayde there, and bycause he was a kynge and chased out of his royalme, and had as then no thynge to lyve on to maynteyne his estate, the Frensshe kynge, as yonge as he was, sayd, We wyl that the kynge of Armony, who is come hyder to se us, in hope to have some conforte, helpe, and ayde of us to kepe his estate as it aperteyneth to hym, who is a kyng as wel as we be, and when we may, we shal ayde hym with men of warre, and helpe to recover his enherytaunce, wherto we have good wyl; for we are bounde to exalte the Crysten faythe. The Frensshe kynges wordes were well harde and understande, as it was reason, and there were none that sayd the contrary. The kynges uncles and counsayle were desyrous to accomplysshe his entent. So

CAP. XLI
Howe the kynge of Armony was examyned.

the kynge of Armony, to maynteyne his estate, there was assygned to hym a certayne rente and revenues out of the chambre of accomptes, and so was well and truely payde every moneth; his assygnement was a vi. M. frankes by the yere; and he had delyvered hym at the fyrst v. M. frankes, to provide for his lodgyng, vessel, and other thynges necessary; and his lodgynge apoynted at saynt Andon besyde saynt Denyce, there to kepe his house. Thus the kynge of Armony was reteyned by the Frensshe kyng at his fyrst comynge; and dayly he encreased, and not apayred, and was somtyme with the Frensshe kynge, and specyally at hyghe feestes.

CAP. XLII

Howe pope Urbane and pope Clement were at grete dyscorde togyder, and howe the Crysten kynges were in varyaunce for theyr lectyons, and of the warres bytwene them.

THE same season there came to Avignyon, to se the pope Clement, syr Othes of Bresnyl,[1] to have money for the warre he had made for hym agaynst the Romayns and Bertram of Aigles, who wrote hymselfe pope Urban the vi., as it is conteyned in his hystory here before. And there syr Othes shewed dyvers thynges to the Pope and to the Cardynalles, wherin he was well beleved and harde; but as for money he coulde gete none, for the Popes chambre was so clene voyded fro golde and sylver, that the cardynals coulde not have the money that perteyned to theyr hattes: so this syr Othes of Bresnyll departed fro them, not wel content. At Avygnyon there was delyvered hym a M. frankes, and he set lytell therby, wherby pope Clementes warre was sore weked, for syr Othes wolde in no wyse medle ony more in the Popes warres. Then Margaret of Duras, who was at Gaiecte, and was adversary agaynst the quene of Naples, wyfe somtyme to kynge Lewes, duke of Anjow, she sente for this syr Othes to ayde her in the warre that she made agaynst the Napolytanes. And this

[1] *Bresvich. Brunswick.*

syr Othes a certayne space exscused hymselfe, and dyssymuled and foded forth the tyme as he that wyst not what to do. Then some of his counsayle dyde put hym in mynde to go to this Margaret of Duras, who was enherytoure to Naples and to Cycyle, and to helpe to ayde and to defende her heritage, and to take her to his wyfe, for she was contente to mary hym, bycause he was of a noble blood, and of hyghe extraccyon, and was lorde and kynge of the countrey called Daure.[1] And some other of his counsayle counsayled hym contrary, saynge how he myght therby come to an evyll ende, for the chyldren of kynge Lewes of Naples, who was crowned kynge in the cyte of Bari, thoughe they were but yonge, yet they had grete frendes and kynsmen, and specyally the Frensshe kynge theyr cosyne germayne, who wyl ayde them and theyr moder, Johan duches of Anjowe and of Mayne. Al these doubtes some of his counsayle shewed hym; wherfore syr Othes forbare a longe season, and dyssymuled the mater, and toke none of bothe partyes. The same season the sowdyours of pope Clement enclosed in the cyte of Peras[2] pope Urban, and was besyeged by the lorde of Moctroy, a valiaunt knyght of the countye of Genes[3] and of Savoy, syr Talebart, a knyght of the Rodes, and syr Bernarde de la Sale; and there pope Urban was sore constrayned and on the poynte to have ben taken; for, as I was then enformed, for the some of xx. M. frankes, a capytayne Almayne, who had a grete company with hym, called the erle Conrant, wolde have delyvered pope Urban into the handes of pope Clement. Wherupon syr Bernarde de la Sale was sent to Avygnyon to pope Clement for the sayd some of money; but the Pope nor the Cardynalles there coulde not make the money, for that Popes courte was so poore, that they had no money; and so syr Bernarde de la Sale retourned evyll content to the syege of Pruce. And so then they dyssymuled the matter, and the Prucyens in lykewyse, and also this erle Conrant; and so pope Urban yssued out of Pruce and out of peryll, and wente to Rome and abode there.

I knowe ryght well that in tyme to come there wolde be had moche of these thynges, howe the churche sholde fall in suche troubles and endure so longe; but it was a plage sent

CAP. XLII

Howe pope Urbane and pope Clement were at grete dyscorde togyder.

[1] *du pays dont elle se clamoit dame.*

[2] *Perugia.*

[3] *Geneva.*

CAP. XLII

Howe pope Urbane and pope Clement were at grete dyscorde togyder.

fro God, for the clargy to advyse and to consydre well theyr grete estate and superfluyte that they were in. But many dyde sette lytell therby, for they were so blynded with pryde, that eche one thought to be as good as another; wherfore it wente evyll, and yf our fayth had not ben confyrmed in the handes and grace of the Holy Goost, who inlumyned the harte of them that were gone out of the ryght way, and helde them ferme in unyte, elles our fayth had be gretely defourmed. But the grete lordes of the erthe at the begynnyng dyd nothynge but laughe at the chyrche, tyl I cronycled these cronycles in the yere of Our Lorde Jhesu Cryst M.CCC.lxxx. and x.; moche of the comon people mervayled howe the grete lordes, as the Frensshe kynge, the kynge of Almayne, and other kynges and prynces of Crystendome, dyd provyde no remedy in that case. There was one thynge reasonable to appease the comon people, and to escuse the hyghe prynces and kynges, dukes and erles, and other lordes; as, by ensample: the yolke of the egge can not be without the whyte, nor the whyte without the yolke, no more maye the clergy and the lordes be one without another; for the lordes are governed by the clergy, or they coulde not lyve but as beestes, and the clergy were not: and the clergy counsayleth and exhorteth the lordes to do as they do. And I say surely I have ben in my tyme in dyvers partyes of the worlde, what for to accomplysshe my pleasure, and to se noveltyes in the worlde, and to have knowledge of the conquestes and adventures wryten in this boke: and, truely, the season that I wente thus aboute in the worlde, I coulde lyghtly se no grete lorde but that he had a marmoset, or of the clergy, or a boy of symple lygnage mounted up to honoure, by reason of theyr jangelyng and raylynge, excepte the erle of Foys: for he had never none suche, for he was naturally sage, for his wysdome was better than ony that coulde be gyven hym. Yet I say not that suche lordes as are ruled by suche marmosettes be fooles, but rather more then fooles, for they be sore blynded, and yet they have two eyen. Whan the knowledge came fyrst to the Frensshe kynge Charles of the dyfference bytwene these two popes, he dyd put the matter on the clergy whiche way he sholde take

CAP. XLII

Howe pope Urbane and pope Clement were at grete dyscorde togyder.

them: they of the clergy of Fraunce determyned, and toke pope Clement for the moost surest parte. And to the Frensshe opynyon acorded the kynge of Castel and the kynge of Scottes, bycause all the season that the scysme was thus in the chyrche, Fraunce, Castell, and Scotlande were joyned togyder by alyaunce. And the kynge of Englonde and the kynge of Portyngale were of the contrary oppynyon agaynst theyr enemyes. The erle of Flaundres never inclined in his courage to pope Clement that he sholde be ryght Pope, bycause Urban was fyrst chosen at Rome, who was archebysshop of Bare. This Clement beynge cardynall of Geane, wrote lettres unto the noble erle of Flaunders, howe there was a Pope chosen by due electyon at Rome, and named Urban: wherfore he wolde not byleve after on that Clement; and as longe as he lyved he was of that opynyon; so was the kynge of Almayne and all the empyre, and also the kynge of Hungry. Thus, then, I put in wrytynge the state and dyfferences that I had sene in my dayes in the worlde and in the chyrche; it was no mervayle, thoughe the lordes of the worlde suffered and dyssymuled the matter. This brought to my remembraunce howe that when I was but yonge, and pope Innocent raygned in Avygnyon, he helde in pryson a freer mynoure, called freer John Roche Tayllad; this clerke, as it was sayd, and I have herde it prively in dyvers places, he shewed and aledged dyvers auctorytes of the incydentes and fortunes that fell after in his dayes in the royalme of Fraunce; and also he spake of the takynge of kynge John, and shewed certayne thynges reasonable howe the chyrche sholde suffre moche for the grete superfluytes that he sawe in them. And while he was in prison, it was shewed me what he sayd to the cardynall of Ostie, called de Arras, and to the cardynall of Auxere, who wente to vysyte hym and to argue with hym; then he layde to them an ensample, as hereafter ye shall here.

Lordes, sayd this freer, there was ones a fowle appered in this worlde without ony fethers; and when al other fowles knew that he was borne, they came to se hym, bicause he was so fayre and pleasaunt to beholde. Then they ymagyned amonge them what they myght do for this byrde, for without fethers they knewe well he coulde not lyve; and they

CAP. XLII

Howe pope Urbane and pope Clement were at grete dyscorde togyder.

sayd they wolde he sholde lyve, bycause he was so fayre. Then every fowle there gave hym of theyr fethers, and the fayrer byrde the mo fethers he gave hym, so that then he was a fayre byrde, and a well fethered, and began to fle: and the byrdes that had gyven hym of theyr fethers, when they sawe hym flee, they toke grete pleasure. And when this byrde sawe hymselfe so well fethered, and that all other fowles honoured hym, he began to waxe prowde, and toke no regarde of them that had made hym, but pycked and spurred at them, and was contrary to them. Then the other byrdes drewe togyder, and demaunded eche other what was best to be done with this byrde that they had made up of nought and now so dysdayneth them. Then the pecocke sayd, He is gretly beautyed by reason of my fethers; I wyl take them agayne fro hym. In the name of Good, sayd the fawcon, so wyll I have myne. And so sayd al the other byrdes: and then they began to take agayne fro hym al the fethers that they had gyven hym. And when this byrde saw that, he humbled hymselfe, and knowledged of the welth and honour that he had, not of hymselfe but of them; for he knewe that he came into the worlde naked and bare, and the fethers that he had they myght wel take fro hym agayne when they lyst. Then he cryed them mercy, and sayd that he wolde amende hymselfe, and noo more be prowde; and so then agayne these gentyll byrdes had pyte on hym, and fethered hym agayne, and sayd to hym, We wolde gladly se the fle amonge us, so thou wylte be humble as thou oughtest to be; but knowe surely, if thou be ony more prowde and dysdaynous, we wyll take from the all thy fethers, and set the as we founde the fyrst.

Thus sayd the freer John to the cardynalles that were in his presence: Sirs, thus shall it fall on you of the chyrche, for the emperour of Rome and of Almayne, and the other kynges crystened, and hyghe prynces of the worlde, have gyven you the goodes and possessyons and ryches to the entente to serve God, and ye spende it in pryde and superfluyte. Ye rede not the lyfe of saynt Sylvester, pope of Rome after saynt Peter; ymagyne and consyder howe the emperour Constantyne gave hym fyrst the dysmes of the chyrche, and on what condycyon. Saynt Sylvester rode

CAP. XLII

Howe pope Urbane and pope Clement were at grete dyscorde togyder.

nother with CC. nor CCC. horse abrode in the worlde, but he helde hymselfe symply closed in Rome, and lyved soberly with them of the chyrche, when the aungell of God shewed hym how the emperour Constantyne, who was as then but an infydell, sholde sende for hym. In lykewyse the emperour had it by revelacyon of an aungell, that Sylvester sholde shewe hym the way of helthe, for he was syke of the lypper, so that his flesshe fell in peces: and when Sylvester came before hym, he shewed hym the way of baptysme, and so crystened hym; and incontynent he was hole. For the whiche the emperoure Constantyne byleved in God and all his empyre, and gave to Sylvester and to the chyrche all the dysmes, for before, the emperoure of Rome helde them: and besyde that gave hym many fayre gyftes and grete sygnyoryes, augmentynge our fayth and the chyrche. But it was his entencyon that the goodes and sygnyoryes that he had gyven hym, that he sholde governe it humbly and truely, and not to spende it in pompe and pryde; but nowe a dayes they of the chyrche do the contrary, wherwith God is dyspleased, and hereafter wyll be more dyspleased, so that the grete lordes of the erthe wyll waxe colde in theyr devocyons, and not be so lyberall in gyvynge ony thynge to the chirche, but rather to be redy to take fro it that was gyven before; and I thynke it wyll not be longe or this be sene.

Thus this freer, John of Roche Tayllayd, whome the cardynalles helde in pryson in Avignyon, shewed to them these wordes, and dyvers other, wherof the cardynalles were abasshed, and wolde gladly have put hym to dethe yf they myght have founde ony just cause agaynst hym. But they coulde fynde none, and so suffred hym to lyve; but they durst not let hym out of pryson, for he shewed his matters so parfyte, and layde for hym hyghe scryptures, that peradventure he myght have made many in the worlde to have arred. Howbeit, suche as toke more hede to his sayenge then I dyde, sawe many thynges fall after accordynge as he sayd and wrote in pryson; and all that he sayd he wolde prove by the Apocalyps; the true prowes wherwith he armed hymselfe saved hym fro brennynge; and also some of the cardynalles had pyte on hym, and wolde not do theyr uttermoost to hym.

CAP. XLII

Howe pope Urbane and pope Clement were at grete dyscorde togyder.

Nowe let us leve to speke of these narracyons, and retourne to our pryncypall matter and hystory of Spayne, of Portyngale, of Fraunce, and of Englonde, and recorde the fortunes that fell in that season, whiche be not to be forgotten.

Ye have herde here before howe kynge John, otherwyse called mayster Denyce of Portyngale, bastarde broder to kyng Don Ferant, was in possessyon of the royalme of Portyngale, by the helpe all onely of iiii. cytees in Portyngale. But as for the nobles and knyghtes of the royalme of Portyngale at the begynnynge acquyted them truely to kynge Don Peter, and to kynge John of Castell, and to his wyfe the lady Beatryce. And yet thoughe some helde the opynyon of that lady, neverthelesse other named her a bastarde: for she was doughter to a lady in Portyngale, called Elynoure, who had as then her fyrst husbande on lyve, a knyght of that countre, syr John Laurence of Coygne.[1] And the kynge of Portyngale had taken her fro hym, and the kynge maryed her, and put her husbande out of Portyngale, who wente and dwelled with the kynge of Castell: for he durst not dwell in Portyngale for fere of the kynge, who helde his wyfe, and yet he was of hyghe lygnage. These thynges are to be mervaylled at; for kynge Ferant of Portyngale reputed his doughter as lawfully begotten, for he had a dyspensacyon of pope Urban the vi.; and then the peas was made bytwene the ii. kynges of Castell and Portyngale, and that a knyght of the royalme of Portyngale, called syr John Ferant Andere,[2] who was chefe of counsayle with the kynge of Portyngale, treated of peas, and made the maryage bytwene kynge Ferant of Portyngalles doughter and kynge John of Castell, who was as then a wydower, and had maryed before the doughter of Don Peter, kynge of Aragon, thoughe the kynge of Castell and his counsayle dyd cast all these doubtes, and howe they fered lest the kynge of Portingales doughter sholde not be taken as heyre of Portyngale after her faders dysseas. But to put in suretye therof the kynge of Castell, the kynge of Portyngale caused dyvers of the chefe lordes of Portyngale to swere, that after the kynges dysseas to take her as theyr lady, and to tourne the royalme of Portyngale to the kynge of Castell. Also the kynge of Portyngale had bounde certayne good townes

[1] *João Lourenço da Cunha.*

[2] *João Fernandes Andeiro, Count of Ourem.*

to the kynge of Castel, to take hym as theyr kynge, on the payne of forfayture of ii. thousande frankes. And thoughe this knyght, Johan Ferant Andere, dyde his busynes for a good entente to make peas and concorde bytwene Castell and Portyngale at the instaunce of his lorde, yet the comons of Lyxbone slewe hym, and chase to theyr kynge this mayster Denyce. For they sayd they wolde not be under the subjectyon of them of Castell, they hated them so moche, for they coulde never love togyder; and also they sayd, that the crowne of Portyngale myght not go to a woman, and that the quene of Castell was not true herytour, but a bastarde, and worse then a bastarde: for kynge Ferante lyvynge,[1] and after his dethe, Johan Ferant of Coygne lyved, who was husbande to that ladyes moder. And therfore they chase this mayster Denyce, and was crowned by these iiii. cytes, Lyxbone, Vyc, Eure,[2] and the Porte of Portyngale: they sayd they wolde have a kynge amonge them; and one of the chefe incydentes that moved the comons to be agaynst the kynge of Castell was as I shall shewe you. The Spanyardes, whom I call Castellyans, when the maryage was made bytwene them and Portyngale, and that the kynge of Portyngale had graunted that after his dysseas the royalme sholde go to the kyng of Castell: ever when the Spanyardes mette ony of the Portyngales, they wolde mocke them, and say, Syrs, whether ye wyll or not, nowe ye shall come to our daunger; we shall holde you under subjectyon and servage, and kepe you lyke slaves and Jues, and do with you as we lyst. And they wolde answere and saye, they trusted that sholde never be, and never to be under subjectyon of ony other man lyvyng excepte God. And for suche causes and wordes reprovable of the Spanyardes, the Portyngales toke this mayster Denyce, bastarde broder to kynge Ferant, and made hym kynge. In his broders dayes there was no rekenynge made of hym, nor thenkynge[3] that the comons wolde never have chosen hym to theyr kynge, and forsake his doughter as they dyd. Howbeit, often tymes this sayd knyght, syr John Ferant Andere, sayd to the kynge, how that this mayster Denyce, his basterde broder, had gretely the grace of the comons of the royalme; wherfore he sayd it had ben good he had ben put to dethe. But kynge

CAP. XLII

Howe pope Urbane and pope Clement were at grete dyscorde togyder.

[1] *Ferantes lyuynges* P.

[2] *Evora and Coimbra.*

[3] *thekynge* P.

CAP. XLII

Howe pope Urbane and pope Clement were at grete dyscorde togyder.

Ferant answered and sayd, howe the comons sholde never have puyssaunce to do ony thynge agaynst the wyll of the noble men of his countrey: and how that his sone in lawe, the kynge of Castell, sholde ever be puyssaunt ynough to constrayne them, and to chastyce them yf they rebelled after his dyssease; wherfore he sayd there was noo cause to put his bastarde broder to deth, nor put hym in pryson: sayng how he was his broder, and a man of relygyon, and had ynoughe to lyve on besyde the crowne of Portyngale; and so he was lefte alyve.

These foresayd poyntes and artycles be true, for I the auctoure of this booke have ben sufficyently enfourmed therof by the nobles of Portyngale. It is a thynge to be mervayled at, to make a bastarde a kynge; and they of Portyngale saye, and as yet sayth, that the quene of Castel, the lady Beautryce, doughter to the lady Elynour of Coygne,[1] was a bastarde, therfore they wolde not take her as quene of Portyngale, nor none heyre that came of her. The same opynyon the erle of Foys layde to the knyghtes of his countrey when they wente into Spayne to ayde the kynge of Castel, for he had ben suffycyently infourmed in the matter bytwene Portyngale and Castel; wherfore he sayd to them at theyr departyng, Syrs, ye have nothynge to do to busy yourselfe bytwene Castell and Portyngale for the quene of Castell, who was doughter to kynge Ferant of Portyngale: it is a warre evyll begon; there maye moche evyl come to them that be busye in that matter. But they answered hym, syth they had receyved wages of suche a man as the kynge of Castell was, they must nedes go and serve hym; and so they wente, and moost parte of them there dyed, as ye have herde here before.

[1] *Cunha.*

Nowe let us retourne to the busynes of Portyngale; for they be not for to be lefte for the grete adventures that there hathe fallen; and to cronycle al thynges as they have fallen, to the entente that in tyme to come they sholde be founde wryten and regystred; yf adventures were not knowen, it were grete domage. And by clerkes that auncyently have wryten and regystred the hystoryes and bookes, therby the hystories are knowen; there is not so perpetuall a memory as is wrytynge. And truely I saye to you and

CAP. XLII

Howe pope Urbane and pope Clement were at grete dyscorde togyder.

wyll that they that come after me sholde knowe, that for to knowe the trouth of this hystory, I have taken therin grete payne in my dayes, and have serched many royalmes and countreys to knowe the trouthe; and have had acquayntaunce of many valyaunt men, and have sene dyvers bothe of Fraunce, of Englonde, of Scotlande, Castell, Portyngale, and of other landes, duchyes, and countyes, suche as they and theyr landes hath ben conjoyned in these warres; and with them I have spoken, and ben instructed and infourmed, and I wolde not that ony enquest sholde passe unknowen, syth I knewe it to be true and notable. And whyle I was in Byerne with the erle Gaston of Foys, I was there enfourmed of dyvers busynesses, suche as fell bytwene Castell and Portyngale; and when I was retourned agayne into my countrey in the countye of Heynalte, and in the towne of Valencennes, and that I had refresshed me there a season, then I determyned me to folowe the hystory that I had begon. Then I advysed in myne ymagynacyon howe I coulde not suffycyently be instructed by the herynge of them that susteyned the opynyon of the kynge of Castell, but that in lykewyse I ought to here the Portyngales as well as the Gascoynes and Spanyardes that I herde in the house of the erle of Foys. And in the waye goynge thyder and retournynge, I toke noo regarde to the payne or travayle of my body, but so I wente to Bruges in Flaunders, to fynde there some of the royalme of Portyngale and of Lyxbone, for there were ever some of that countrey. Beholde if myne adventure were good or no; yf I had sought a season vii. yere, I coulde not have come to a better poynte then I dyd then; for then it was shewed me, that if I wolde go to Meldebourc[1] in Selande, I sholde fynde there a knyght of Portyngale, a valyaunt man and a sage, and of the kynge of Portyngales counsayle, who was newly come thyder, and was goynge thens by see into Pruce, and howe he coulde justly and playnly shewe me of the busynes and adventures of Portyngale, for he knewe and had ben over all the countrey. These tydynges rejoysynge me, and so I wente fro Bruges with one of Portyngale in my company, who knewe ryght wel this knyght, and so we came to Sluse, and there toke the see, and dyd so moche by the grace of God, that we came to

[1] *Middleburgh.*

CAP. XLII

Howe pope Urbane and pope Clement were at grete dyscorde togyder.

Meldebourc. And the Portyngales that were in my company aquaynted me with this knyght, and I founde hym ryght gracyous, sage, honourable, courtoys, amyable, and acquayntable; and so I was with hym vi. dayes or there aboute. And this knyght enfourmed me of all the busynes bytwene the royalme of Castel and Portyngale syth the dethe of kynge Ferant tyll the departynge of that knyght out of that countrey; he shewed me every thynge so playnly and so gracyously, that I toke grete pleasure to here hym and to wryte it. And when I was enfourmed by hym of all that I desyred to knowe, I toke leve of hym, and he conveyed me to my shyp, and so dyd dyvers other ryche merchauntes of his countrey, who were come fro Bruges and fro other places to se hym. And in his company there was the sone of Navarre in Portyngale, and dyvers other knyghtes and squyers of that royalme; but he had the chefe honoure amonge them. And certaynly by that I coulde se and ymagyne of hym and of his estate he was worthy to have honour, for he was of noble porte and goodly stature, and lykely to be a valyaunt man. And when I retourne agayne fro Rome[1] into myne owne countrey, I shall busy me to make relacyon of the wordes of this gentyll knyght, called syr John Ferant Portelet,[2] and shall cronycle all that hathe fallen in Portyngale and in Castell vnto the yere of Our Lorde M.CCC.lxxx. and x.

[1] *or retournay depuis à Bruges.*

[2] *Pacheco.*

CAP. XLIII

Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde, to shewe tydynges of theyr countrey to the kynge of Englonde and to the grete lordes there.

NOWE sheweth the hystory that after this mayster Denys, kyng John of Portyngale, had dyscomfyted kynge John of Castell at the batayle of Juberoth, nere to the abbaye called the Cabbase,[3] where as so many noble knyghtes and squyers of Fraunce, Gascoyne, and Byerne were slayne; and that the kynge of Portyngale, for that fayre and vyctoryous journey, was gretely doubted and

[3] *Alcobaça.*

honoured of the Portyngales, and was receyved after his vyctory into Lyxbone with grete glory of al the people, and there with grete tryumphe was crowned with lawrell, as auncyently kynges were wonte to be crowned after they had dyscomfyted ony kyng in batayle. And there in Lyxbone was grete feest or the departure of suche knyghtes and squyers as were there, and the counsayles of the good townes and cytees of that royalme; then there was a parlyament and a counsayle holden, howe they might perceyver in theyr opinyon honourably. For certayne of the sages of the royalme sayd howe it was necessary for them to se how they myght fortefye themselfe agaynst the kyng of Castel and his puyssaunce, so that they myght honourably abyde in theyr victory, and to multiply and exalte. In this parlyament at Lyxbone, holden in the cathedral chyrche of saynt Dominicke, there were many devyses recyted whiche nede not to be rehersed; but the rest and conclusyon of this parlyament was, that they sholde sende into Englonde to the duke of Lancastre, who claymed of ryght the enherytaunce of Castell, by reason of the lady Constaunce his wyfe, eldest doughter to kynge Don Peter of Castell, and to wryte to hym that if ever he wolde clayme ony ryght in the royalme of Castell, and to set forwarde his busynes, whiche longe hath hanged in balaunce and in adventure to be lost, that he wolde come into Portyngale with a company of men of armes and archers, for as then it was tyme convenyent for hym so to do. Then the erle of Navarre, constable of Portyngale, in fayre language sayd, Syth we be agreed to sende into Englonde to the duke of Lancastre, by whome we thynke to be ayded, whiche is the moost profytablest waye for us, to cause our enemyes to feare us, therfore let us advyse in our royalme sage personages and notable to do this message, and to enfourme so the duke of Lancastre and his counsayle to come into this countrey so stronge as to resyst our enemyes with suche ayde as he shall have of us; for we may well suppose that the kynge of Castell wyll gete grete ayde of the Frensshe kynge. The Frensshe men of warre wote not where better to enploy theyr season, for they have peas with Englonde unto the feest of saynt John; and also the Frensshemen have ferme peas with the Flem-

CAP. XLIII
Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

CAP. XLIII

Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

ynges, who hath occupyed them before dyvers yeres. The erle of Naverres wordes were well accepted, and every man sayd howe he spake well to the poynte, and that so they wolde do. Then there were named by sad delyberacyon of counsayle, that the grete mayster of saynt Jaques in Portyngale and Laurence Fongasse,[1] a ryght sage and dyscrete squyer, who coulde ryght well speke the language of Fraunce, howe they sholde goo on this message into Englonde, for they coulde sende none of the counsayle of Portyngale that better coulde doo that message then they. Then there were letters wryten in good Frensshe and in Latyn to the kynge of Englonde, to the duke of Lancastre, and to his bretherne the erle of Cambrydge and Bokyngham. And when these letters were wryten and grosed up in Frensshe and in Latyn, then they were redde before the kyng and his counsayle there, and well lyked, and so sealed and delyvered to the grete mayster of saynt Jaques and to Laurence Fongase, who toke on them the charge to bere them into Englonde, so they myght passe the daungere of the see, and encounteryng of ony enemyes and robbers of the see; for as wel there were robbers on the see as on the lande. So they toke a shyp called the *Lyn*,[2] whiche wolde sayle with all maner of wyndes more surelyer then ony other shyp: so on a day they toke theyr leve of the kyng, and of the archebysshop of Connymbres, and of the grete counsayle of Portyngale, and wente to the see, and sayled towarde Englonde, and were iii. dayes on the see without syght of lande, and on the fourthe day they sawe Cornewall.

[1] *Fogaça.*

[2] *une nef que l'on appelle lin.*

They sped so well by theyr journeys, and, by the ayde of God and good wynde, that they costed Cornewall and the boundes of Englonde, and so aryved saufely without peryll in the haven of Hampton, and there cast ancre, and so yssued out of theyr shyppe, and wente and refresshed them in the towne. And there they were examyned by the baylyffe of Hampton, and suche other as were kepers of that cost, of what countrey they were, and fro whens they came, and whyther they wolde. They answered to all theyr demaundes, and sayd howe they were of the royalme of Portyngale, and sente thyder fro theyr kynge and his coun-

sayle. Then they were welcome, and had good chere. And when they had refresshed them there, and provyded for horses for them and for theyr servauntes, then they rode to London by guydes, for they knew not the countrey, and so were lodged at the sygne of the Fawcon, and sente backe agayne theyr horses. And it fortuned so well for them that the kynge and his uncles were at Westmynstre, wherof they were joyfull; they came to London in the fore noone, and so dyned, and after dyner they toke theyr letters and wente to the duke of Lancastre and to the duches. And when the duke and the duches knewe of theyr comynge, they were ryght joyfull, for they desyred to here tydynges fro Portyngale; there had ben shewed them dyvers tydynges, but gretely they dyd not byleve it, bycause they had no letters therof out of the countrey. Then the grete mayster of saynt Jaques and Laurence Fongase entred into the dukes chambre, and the duches there present. And bacause that Laurence Fongase coulde speke Frensshe, he spake fyrst; and when he had made his reverence to the duke and to the duchess, and delyvered them letters fro Portyngale, the duke toke his, and the duches hers, and so red theyr letters; and then the duke sayd to the messageres, Syrs, ye be ryght welcome into this countrey, and to morowe ye shall go to the kynge and we shall do you the ayde we can, as it is reason. Then the duches drewe Laurence Fongase aparte, and demaunded of hym tydynges out of Castell and Portyngale: to every thynge this Laurence answered. Then the duke called for wyne and spyce, and so they dranke, and toke theyr leve and retourned to theyr lodgynge; and in the mornyng they wente agayne to the duke, who had herde masse, and so then they entred into a barge, and wente by water to Westmynstre, where the kynge and the moost parte of his counsayle was. The duke entred into the counsayle chambre, and sayd to the kynge, Syr, here is the grete mayster of saynt Jaques in Portyngale, who hath brought you letters fro the kynge; wyll it please you to se them? With a good wyll, sayd the kynge. Then the ii. messagers kneled downe before the kynge, and Laurence Fongase delyvered his letters. The kynge toke them, and caused them to be redde: also they

CAP. XLIII

Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

CAP. XLIII

Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

delyvered letters to the erle of Cambrydge and to the erle of Bokyngham; eche of them redde theyr letters. The kyng answered the messageres ryght swetely, and sayd: Syrs, ye are welcome into this countrey; your comynge dothe us grete joy, and ye shal not departe without answere, suche as shall please you and all your busynes; let myne uncles here have them in remembraunce. So they thanked the kynge and departed out of the counsayle chambre, and wente downe into the palays, abydynge for the duke of Lancastre, who taryed tyll it was hyghe noone. Then the duke of Lancastre toke his two bretherne with hym to dyner, and wente by water, and these messageres with them. The erle of Cambrydge knewe ryght well the grete mayster of saynt James and Laurence of Fongase, for he had sene them before in Portyngale; wherfore after dyner he comoned with them of dyvers thynges in the presence of his other two bretherne, and demaunded them of the maryage of Castell, and of her that sholde have ben his doughter in lawe, the lady Beautryce. To all his demaundes the ambassadours answered wysely and truely, wherby the lordes were ryght well contente and pleased.

Trewe it was, that before these ambassadours were comen into Englonde, the duke of Lancastre, and the erle of Cambrydge his broder had dyvers counsayles togyder for the ryght they claymed by theyr wyffes. The erle of Cambrydge, as ye have herde before, was not well contente with kynge Ferant of Portyngale, nor with the men of warre there, for they had lodged xv. dayes in the feldes before the Castellyans, and yet kynge Ferant nor the Portyngales wolde never fyght with them. Yet the erle the same tyme shewed the kynge his defaulte, and sayd, Syr, I have here in my company of poore Englysshemen a C. speres and a M. archers; and al we are wyllyng to fyght with our enemyes, and to abyde the adventure that God wyll sende us. But kynge Ferant answered ever that he was not counsayled to fyght; wherfore, when the erle saw that, he departed thens, and toke with hym agayne his sone out of Portyngale. And when he was departed, then the kynge of Portyngale accorded with kynge John of Castell, and maryed his doughter to hym to make the peas: and this treatye was

made by syr John Andre,[1] a knyght of Portyngale. The kynge there had all his trust in hym. The kynge of Portyngale demaunded of his doughter whether she had rather have the kynge of Castel, or the erle of Cambrydge sone? She answered and sayd, howe she loved better John of Englonde then John of Castel. The kynge demaunded why she sayd soo? She answered, bycause John of Englonde was a goodly personage and of her age, and that was the cause she wolde not have the kynge of Castell; howbeit, her fader, to have peas with the Spanyardes, made that maryage. Also the erle had sayd to the duke of Lancastre his broder, that kynge Ferant ones deed, he doubted that the comons of the royalme of Portyngale wolde rebell agaynst the lady Beautryce, for the moost parte of the royalme, for al that theyr kynge had maryed her moder, the lady Elyanoure of Coygne, yet they helde not the kynges doughter to be borne in lawfull maryage, but reputed her as a bastarde, and murmured theron whyle the erle was there; wherfore he was the gladder to take away his sone thens. The duke of Lancastre, to whom the matter touched nerer then to the erle of Cambrydge, bycause he had maryed the eldest syster, heyre to Castell, and he had a fayre chylde by the lady Constaunce his wyfe, wherfore he ever desyred to be truely and justly enfourmed of the busynes in those partyes, and dyd set his mynde howe he myght exalte and further his tytle; and he sawe clerely that as then he coulde not have so good an entre into Castell as by the royalme of Portyngale, specyally seynge howe he was desyred and requyred of the kyng of Portyngale, and of the barons and comons of the royalme; and also consyderynge howe the kynge of Portyngale that was then was a noble sage prynce and valyaunt, seynge howe he had discomfyted the kynge of Castel in playne batayle and all his puyssaunce, wherby the duke the soner enclyned to go into Portyngale: and also the kynge of Englonde and his counsayle was agreed therto; but to the entente to be justly enfourmed of all the busynes, state, and condycyon of the countrey of Castel, and of the ryght that the lady Beautryce claymed to the crowne of Portyngale, and also of the ryght of kynge John of Portyngale, whome the comons had crowned to theyr kynge, for this entente, on a daye the

CAP. XLIII

Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

[1] *Andeiro.*

CAP. XLIII

Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

duke made a dyner to these ambassadours of Portyngale in his owne lodging, and after dyner he made every man to departe, and called these ambassadours to hym ryght amorously, and demaunded of them of the busynes of Portyngale. And bycause that Laurence Fongase coulde speke Frensshe, the duke addressed his words unto hym and sayd, Laurence, I requyre you to shew me, from poynte to poynte, the condycyon and maner of your londe of Portyngale, and what hath fallen there and in Castell syth my broder, the erle of Cambrydge, was there; for the kynge of Portyngale hath wryten to me, that there is no man in Portyngale that can enforme me more justly then ye can do, and in this ye shall do me a grete pleasure. Syr, sayd the squyer, I shall fulfyll your pleasure: and then began to speke, and sayd in this maner:

Syr, syth the departure of your broder, the erle of Cambrydge, out of Portyngale, there hath fallen grete trouble and dyscencyon in the royalme, and in grete adventure to have ben lost; but, thanked be God, the busynesses there are as nowe in good poynte and fermely stablysshed; but and God had not wrought by his grace, the matter had gone evyll, and all thrughe the defaulte of kynge Ferrant last dysseased. This is the oppynyon of the moost parte of the royalme; for kynge Ferrant in his dayes loved sore a lady, wyfe to a knyght of his, called syr John Laurence of Coygne, and bycause of her beautye he wolde have her by force. The lady withstode the kynges desyre as longe as she myght, but at the laste he had her, and sayd, Dame, I shall make you quene of Portyngale; for thoughe I love you, it is not for your hurte, but to exalte you, for I wyl mary you. Then the lady on her knees wepynge sayd, Syr, savynge your dyspleasure, I can have none honour to be quene of Portyngale; for you knowe, and so dothe all the worlde, that I have an husbande all redy, and have hadde this v. yere. Elyanoure, sayd the kynge, make none escuse, for I wyll have none other wyfe but you; but I shall quyte you from your husbande or I mary you. The lady coulde gete none other wordes of the kynge; and she shewed all the matter to her husbande. And when the knyght knewe therof, he was sory and malencolyous, and regarded and studyed what were best

for hym to do, and sayd to hymselfe, I wyll not thus leve my wyfe. Howbeit, he doubted the kynge, and wente out of the royalme of Portyngale into Castell to kynge Henry, who receyved hym and reteyned hym to be of his house as longe as he lyved, and soo dothe kynge John that nowe is. Thus the kynge of Portyngale, to accomplysshe his folysshe pleasure, sente for the knight and for the lady; but the knight was goone. Then the kynge sente for the bysshoppe of Connymbres, who was as then chauncelloure of Portyngale, and of the kynges counsayle; and the kynge shewed hym his entent, how he wolde wedde Elyanoure of Coygne. And the bysshop fered the kynge, bycause he knewe hym of an hyghe and a fyerce condycyon; therfore he durst not saye contrary to the kynges pleasure: and also syr John Ferrant Andere, who was chefe of counsayle with the kynge, to please the kynge sayd to the bysshop, Syr, ye may wed them wel ynoughe, ones the kynge shal make recompence for all. So the bysshop wedded them, and this lady was crowned quene, and so reputed in al the grete cytees in Portyngale, and had as moche honoure and reverence as ever hadde ony other quene in the royalme of Portyngale; and the kynge had by her a doughter, who as nowe is quene of Castell. True it was, that whyle kynge Ferant lyved, he sente on a day to Lyxbone for all the prelates and noblemen of the countrey, and for the counsayles of the cytees, portes, and townes of Portyngale, and this was or your broder the erle of Cambrydge came into Portyngale; and there the kynge made every man to swere and to promyse, that after his dyssease they sholde take his doughter, the lady Beautryce, who was as then but fyve yeres of aege, for herytoure of the royalme of Portyngale: every man sware whether they wolde or not. Howbeit, the moost parte of them that were there knewe ryght well that she was but a bastarde, and borne in advoutrye: for her moders husbande was styll lyvynge, called syr John Laurence of Coygne, who lyved in Castell with the kynge there as longe as kynge Ferant of Portyngale lyved, and lengar. Howbeit, syr, I thynke surely yf the kynges doughter had ben a sone, that all the comonaltye of Portyngale wolde soner have agreed to hym then to his doughter; for to her, they sayd, they wolde

CAP. XLIII

Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

CAP. XLIII never agree, but had rather dye then to be under the subjectyon of the royalme of Castell.

Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

For as yet the royalme of Portyngale and the royalme of Castell never loved parfytely togyder, but hathe often tymes haryed and made warre eche with other, in lykewyse as the royalme of Scotlande dothe with the royalme of Englonde.

Then the duke of Lancastre demaunded of Laurence Fongase where kynge John that nowe is, broder to kynge Ferrant, was in kynge Ferrantes dayes. Syr, sayd the squyer, he was in the royalme of Portyngale, in a house of relygyon, wherin be knyghtes of an ordre in whyte habytes with a reed crosse; and he was soverayne of that house, and was called mayster Denyce. The kynge set lytell by his broder, but made hym ruler of that house of Denyce;[1] nor also kynge John that nowe is medled nothynge with the busynes of the royalme, nor thought nothyng of the crowne therof. For yf kynge Ferrant of Portyngale had thought ony thynge of that is fallen syth, he [so] loved his lady Elyanoure and the lady Beautryce her doughter, he wolde have slayne his broder, who is nowe kynge. But bycause he sawe that he kepte his house with the bretherne of his ordre so mekely and duely, he had no suspecte in hym, but so let hym lyve in peas. And, syr, as for the dyssencyon that is nowe bytwene Portyngale and Castell, surely, syr, to saye the trouthe therin, the Spanyardes are cause therof. Why so? sayd the duke. I shal shewe you, sayd the squyer. The Castellyans, when they sawe that kynge Ferrant had maryed his doughter to theyr kynge, then they began to be prowde, and began to speke grete wordes, whiche sore greved the Portyngales: for the Spanyardes wolde say, O ye Portyngales, rude people lyke beestes, the tyme nowe is come that we shall have a good market of you, for ye have ben and shall be ours, we shall devyde and set you in companyes, as we do the Jues who dwelleth by truage under us; ye shall be our subjectes; with other venymous wordes; often tymes they sayd thus when they met the Portyngales. And whyle kynge Ferrant lyved, and had maryed his doughter into Castell, they engendred suche an hate, that they murmured and sayd, It were better to be deed then to be under the daunger and subjeccyon of the Castellyans.

[1] i.e. *Master of the Knights of St. Benedict of Aviz.*

CAP. XLIII
Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

And so kynge Ferrant fell syke, whiche endured a hole yere. And when he was deed and buryed in the chyrche of saynt Fraunces, a relygyous house of Freers in the cyte of Lyxbone, then the cytees, good townes, and castelles in Portyngale closed theyr gates, and they sente for the kynge that nowe is to Lyxbone, who knewe ryght well the ententes of the iii. other cytees, as Connymbres, Porte, and Eure.

Then they sayd, Mayster Denyce, so he was called as then, we wyll make you kynge of this royalme, thoughe ye be a bastarde; but we say that your cosyn the lady Beautryce, quene of Castell, is borne rather a basterde than you, for as yet lyveth her moders fyrst husbande. And syth it is so that the crowne of Portyngale is fallen in two wayes, we wyll take for us the moost profytable; and also the moost parte of the royalme enclyneth to make you our kynge, and that the crowne of Portyngale shall not go to a woman, nor we wyll not be under the subjeccyon of the kynge of Castell, nor of the Castellyans; we had rather ye sholde take all that we have, to ayde and to maynteyne us and our fraunches, then the Castellyans sholde be maysters over us; wherfore, syr, receyve our gyfte, for we wyl it shal be thus. Then this mayster Denyce, who is as nowe kynge, wolde not receyve theyr offre at the fyrst nor seconde request, but answered and sayd, Good people, I knowe well of good affeccyon and entyer love ye offre me the crowne of Portyngale, whiche is a grete thynge: and where as ye saye that I have as grete ryght or more to the crowne as my cosyn the quene of Castell, in lykewyse I thynke the same: for true it is she is a basterde, for as yet lyveth her moders husbande, and is in Castell; but there is one poynte, ye all alone can not do this matter, it behoveth that al the nobles or grete parte of them agre therto. Then they of Lyxbone answered and sayd, Syr, we have ynowe; we knowe all redy the courage of dyvers, and also the oppynyon of them of the iii. chefe cytees of this royalme besyde us, as Connymbres, Porte, and Eure. Then the kyng sayd, Let it be as ye wyl, I am content; ye know well that this lady Elyanoure, who is called quene of this royalme, is as yet here in this cyte, and her counsaylloure with her, syr John Ferrant Andere, who wyll kepe the crowne of Portyngale and the

CAP. XLIII herytage therof for the quene of Castell; for he made fyrst the maryage to make peas bytwene Castell and Portyngale: and peradventure the kynge of Castell wyll sende for hym hastely, to helpe to subdue his rebelles. Wherfore nowe, at the obsequye of my broder, whiche shal be shortely, wherat most parte of the nobles of this royalme and cytees wyl be, it were good to provyde for remedy in that behalfe. Then they that were presente sayd, Syr, that ye saye is true; we shall provyde therfore, as we shall here syr John Ferrant speke. And so as then theyr counsayle ended.

Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

It was not longe after but that the obsequye was kepte at Lyxbone in the Freers, where as kynge Ferrant lyeth; and there were many of the nobles of Portyngale, for they were desyred so to be by the quene and by syr John Ferrant Andere, who governed the quene; and there was the kynge that nowe is, with a grete nombre of the comons of the countrey, and specyally of the thre cytees, Connymbres, Eure, and the Porte of Portyngale, for they all agreed and consented to them of Lyxbone. And when the obyte was done, syr John Ferrant Andere desyred, in the quenes name, the nobles that were there presente, that they sholde not departe thens that daye nor the nexte, saynge howe the quene wolde have theyr counsayles what sholde be done to sende into Castel for kyng John and his wyfe, the lady Beautryce theyr lady, who was herytoure by ryght to the royalme of Portyngale. All the nobles, or a grete parte of them that herde his wordes, made lytel therof, for they doubted sore the comons that were there essembled, for they had herde dyvers of them murmure, saynge how they wolde crowne to be theyr kynge mayster Denyce. Also syr John Ferrant Andere had herde lyke wordes. Therfore he desyred the nobles of the royalme to abyde there with hym, to ayde and susteyne his opynyon; but they fayled hym, for as sone as the kynges obyte was done in the foresayd Freers, and that quene Elyanour was retourned to her lodgyng, then every man cryed To horse, and so al or the moost parte mounted on theyr horses, and so departed fro Lyxbone. Some taryed styll, suche as were on the kynges partye that nowe is, and they wente to theyr lodgynges, and kepte themselfe pryvely and dyssymuled the

CAP. XLIII

Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

matter, for they well ymagyned the matter to fall as it fell, as I shall shewe you howe. When the kynges obyte was done, the comons of Lyxbone and of the other thre cytees, suche as were there, retourned not shortely to theyr lodgynges, but wente to the cathedral chyrche of Lyxbone, called saynt Domynycke, and there they assembled, and mayster Denyce with them; there they had grete counsayle togyder, whiche counsayle endured not longe. For the kynge that nowe is sayd unto them: All ye good people, I understande ye wolde make me your kynge. And, surely, I saye it is my ryght. And yf ye wyll perceyver in that purpose, it is tyme to sette a worke, and to shewe your dede and puyssaunce, for ye knowe ryght well that syr John Ferrant Andere dothe procure the nobles of the royalme to sende for the kynge of Castell, and he sayth and maynteyneth that the crowne of Portyngale perteyneth to the kynge of Castel by the ryght of my cosyne his wyfe; and I saye, yf ye wyll ayde me, it is my ryght rather then hers; ye knowe all the maner, for I am a man, and broder to kynge Ferrant, and sone to good kynge Peter of Portyngale, who governed you valyauntly. True it is, my cosyne the quene of Castell was doughter to kynge Ferrant, but that was not by lawfull maryage. Then they of Lyxbone sayd unto hym, Syr, all this is true; we wyll have none other kynge but you, and we wyll make you our kynge, loke theron who wyll; but ye shall swere unto us, that ye shall be good to us and kepe justyce, and ye shall not flatter no more with the grete lordes then with the small people, and ye shall kepe and susteyne with good herte, with the ayde that we shall gyve you, all the ryght perteynynge to Portyngale. Then the kynge answered and sayd, Syrs, all this I swere; but pryncypally I requyre you to go with me to the lodgynge called the Monnoy,[1] where syr John Ferrant Andere is with Elyanoure of Coygne; for I wyll that he be slayne, for he hath deserved it agaynst me, and agaynste you, when he susteyneth and maynteyneth other quarelles agaynst your wylles. Thenne they all with one voyce answered, We wyll that this be done, for surely he is disobeysaunt and a rebell agaynst you; wherfore lette hym be put to dethe, and all the other that be rebellyous agaynst you; wherby other of the

[1] *The Mint, the old palace at Lisbon, now Limoeiro.*

CAP. XLIII

Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

royalme shall take ensample. Then they departed togyder from the mynstre of saynt Domynycke to the nombre of xv. C. all of one oppynyon, and the kynge that now is with them: and soo they wente thrughe the towne to the lodgynge called the Monnoy, where the quene and syr John Ferrant Andere were: and when they came there, they brake up the gates of the lodgynge, and entred therin perforce, and they wente into the chambre where as the quene was, who was ryght sore afrayde when she sawe so moche people comynge upon her. Then incontynent she fell downe on her knees before this mayster Denyce, and prayed hym to have pyte and compassyon upon her, saynge unto hym, that she knewe nothynge of ony dyspleasure that she hadde done agaynst hym or agaynst ony other. And also she sayd unto hym, howe that as touchynge the crowne and herytage of Portyngale she claymed no parte; But mayster Denyce, I requyre you and all the people here present, to consydre how kynge Ferrant made me quene agaynst my wyl. Then this mayster Denyce sayd, Fayre lady, doubte ye nothynge, for ye shall have no hurte, for we be not come therfore; but for this traytoure, John Ferrant Andere, he shall dye to begyn withall, and then lette the kynge of Castell revenge his deth yf he can; he hath ben to longe his proctoure in this countrey. With that worde avaunced forth suche as was ordeyned therto, who toke the knyght and put hym to dethe; and more hurte they dyd not to no persone, but so retourned to theyr lodgynge, and the kynge that nowe is wente to his.

And after the dethe of John Ferrant, the lady Elyanoure, who had ben quene of Portyngale, toke counsayle and determyned herselfe to go out of Portyngale into Castell to the kynge there, and to the quene her doughter, for she was in suche fray by the dethe of her knyght, syr John Ferrant Andere, that she thought no lenger to abyde in Portyngale, for she sawe she coulde have there nother honoure nor rest. Then she caused mayster Denyce, now kynge, to be desyred to suffre her to departe: and he lyghtly agreed therto, and sayd, howe that it pleased hym well that she sholde departe, for he sayd she had good cause soo to do. The lady departed fro Lyxbone with all her company, and she rode so

CAP. XLIII

Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

longe by her journeys that she came to Syvyll, where the kynge of Castell and the quene laye. And the same season that this lady came thyder, there were assembled nere all the nobles of Castell, for there they had a grete counsayle on the busynes for Portyngale: for kynge John there toke counsayle howe he myght do, seynge the royalme of Portyngale was fallen to hym by successyon, by the dethe of kynge Ferrant, fader to the quene his wyfe, who agreed or he dyed that it sholde so be, and all the countrey in lyke wyse. This lady Elyanoure was receyved with the kynge and with the quene her doughter ryght honourably, as it was reason. Then she was examyned of all the busynes in Portyngale, and she shewed them the trouthe of that she hadde sene and knowen; and also she sayd, howe that it well appered that by all lykelyhode the comons of Portyngale wolde crowne to theyr kynge mayster Denyce, without the kynge of Castell there agaynst made resystence and defence; and for that cause they hadde slayne her knyght, syr John Ferrant of Andere, bycause he susteyned, and alwayes he had done, the kynge of Castelles quarell. And in all that this lady sayd she was wel byleved, for they sawe it well apparent. And also certayne barons and knyghtes of the royalme of Portyngale, suche as hadde better affeccyon to the kynge of Castell thenne to the kynge that nowe is, bycause of kynge Ferrantes doughter, and for to accomplysshe and fulfyll theyr othes that they had made to the kynge of Castell, at the desyre of theyr kynge John Ferrant when he gave his doughter in maryage to the kynge of Castell; therfore, to acquyte theyr promyse, they departed out of the royalme of Portyngale and wente into Castell, and lefte theyr owne landes and herytages on the adventure to recover them agayne, as the erle Alphons Seroll, the grete pryour of sayntJohns[1] in Portyngale, syr Delagare[2] his broder, Ange Sylvaste of Geneull,[3] John Aussall, and dyvers other to the nombre of xxv.; wherby the royalme of Portyngale was sore febled, and the royalme of Castell enforced. Then the kynge of Castell made his somons thrugheout all his royalme, that all noble men and all other able to bere armure bytwene xv. and xl. sholde in all hast come to hym into the felde of Sevyll;[4] for he sayd he wolde with puyssaunce entre into the

[1] *Jhñs* P.
[2] *Diogo Alvares.*
[3] *Gonçalo Vasques de Azevedo.*
[4] *Sebyll* P.

CAP. XLIII
Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

royalme of Portyngale, and conquere it as his owne herytage. At his commaundement every man obeyed, as it was reason for suche as helde of hym, and so they came to the felde of Sevyll, and there assembled to the nombre of lx. M. men of one and other.

And when syr Laurence of Coygne, husbande to the lady Elyanoure, whome kynge Ferrant of Portyngale toke to his wyfe, and was quene of Portyngale, understode that she was come out of Portyngale into Castell, then he wente to certayne of the kynge of Castelles counsayle, and sayd to them, as in demaundynge of them counsayle: My lordes and my grete frendes, howe shall I do with Elyanoure my wyfe, who is come out of Portyngale into this countrey? I knowe ryght well kynge Ferrant toke her by force agaynst her wyll; and nowe kynge Ferrant is deed, and ye knowe well by reason I ought to have my wyfe agayne: what counsayle wyll ye gyve me therin? And suche as he spake unto gave hym counsayle, and sayd, John, we counsayle you to make no semblaunt therof, nor demaunde her not agayne, nor take her not; for if ye do ye shall gretely abate the honoure of the lady, and also blemyssheth the honoure of the quene of Castell her doughter, for then ye sholde make her worse then a basterde: ye se how the kyng of Castell wyll demaunde and thynke to conquere the royalme of Portyngale, as his owne ryghtfull herytage by the ryght of his wyfe. Thus ye sholde open clerely whiche is nowe somwhat in doubte and trouble; and without ye take good hede it wyll cost you your lyfe, yf ye make the quene of Castel a bastarde: for they of this countrey[1] susteyne her quarell, and say that she was borne in just maryage by dyspensacyon of the Pope. Well, sayd the knyght, then what is it best for me to do? We shal shewe you, sayd they; the best that we thynke is, that as sone as ye can gete you out of Castell, and go agayne to your enherytaunce into Portyngale, and leve the lady Elyanoure here with her doughter: we se none other saufegarde for you but this. By my fayth, sayd the knyght, I byleve you well, for ye counsayle me truely, and lyke good frendes. So this syr John Laurence of Coygne taryed not longe after in Castell, but departed and wente to Lyxbone, and there he founde mayster Denyce,

[1] *countreys* P.

now kynge, and sayd, how he was come to serve hym, and wolde be under his obeysaunce, for he wolde take hym for his kynge. Mayster Denyce had grete joye, and sayd howe he was welcome to hym, and so gave hym agayne all his herytage, and made hym capytayne of Lyxbone. Thus syr, as I have shewed you, fell the busynes bytwene Portyngale and Castell.

CAP. XLIII
Howe they of Portyngale sent out messageres into Englonde.

CAP. XLIIII

Howe Laurence Fongase, ambassadoure fro the kynge of Portyngale into Englonde, shewed to the duke of Lancastre the maner of the dyscorde that was bytwene the royalmes of Castell and Portyngale.

THE duke of Lancastre toke grete pleasure to here Laurence Fongase speke, he spake so attemperatly, and so good Frensshe, and also bycause the matter touched hym nere. And to the entent that he wolde come to the botom of his desyre, he sayd, Laurence, speke on hardely, I have harde no straunger speke this two yere, that I had rather here speke then you, for ye go to the trouthe of the matter; also the letters that ye have brought to me fro the kynge of Portyngale, testefyeth howe there is nothynge that hath ben done bytwene Portyngale and Castell, but that ye can justly informe me therof. Syr, sayd the squyer, lytell thynge hath there ben done as in dedes of armes, but that I have ben at them, wherfore I can well speke of them; and syth it is your pleasure and volante that I shall pursewe my wordes, I shall shewe you every thynge as I knowe. Thus as I shewed you before, kynge John of Castel assembled his people as soone as he myght, and so came with a grete puyssaunce and strength towardes Lyxbone, or the kynge of Portyngale that nowe is was crowned, to put the Portyngales in feare, and to shewe howe he hadde ryght to the herytage of Portyngale; and so fyrst he came before Saynt Yrayne, whiche was the entre of Portyngale, and there he rested two dayes. They of the towne

CAP. XLIIII

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the maner of the dyscorde that was bytwene Castell and Portyngale.

with the governours therof were in grete feare with his comynge, bycause of the grete nombre of men of warre that were with hym, and soo they yelded up theyr towne to hym. And after he had taken theyr possessyon, and lefte men of armes to kepe the towne for feare of rebellyon, then he departed with all his oost, and soo wente tyll he came before the towne of Tuy, whiche was ryght stronge; there he layde his syege. And a grete parte of them of Tuy helde with the quene of Castell, for the lady Elyanoure had it lymytted to her for her dowry, wherfore lyghtely they yelded them to the kynge of Castell, and became his subjectes, and was under his obeysaunce. And when the kynge of Castell hadde taken possessyon there, he lefte men of armes to kepe it. And when he hadde soo done, he passed the ryver and wente to the towne of Valencennes, in Portyngale, and thereto layde his syege, and he sente his messangere unto them that were whithin, that they sholde yelde them and theyr towne unto hym. And they of Valence answered and sayd, Let the kynge of Castell passe forth and go to Lixbone; and as soone as they myght knowe that he hath wonne that cyte outher by love, feare, or perforce, that then incontynente they wolde delyver up the keyes of theyr towne to hym. This answere pleased ryght well the kynge of Castell, and so departed fro Valence: in lykewyse dyd they of another cyte, called Serpe, whiche was stronge and fayre. The kyng thought to have gone thyder; but when he knewe theyr composycyon, he was content and came not there, but so toke the waye to Lyxbone, for he knewe yf he myght subdue that cyte, he sholde have all the resydue of the countrey at his ease. And where soever he wente he had with hym the quene his wyfe, to shewe therby to the Portyngales that the ryght was his, and that by good and just cause he wolde conquere his wyves herytage.

Thus kyng John of Castell came with all his oost before Lyxbone, and there layde a grete syege, and shewed well by his syege that he wolde not departe thens tyll he had that cyte at his pleasure, and gretly thretened mayster Denyce, who was within the cyte, and sayd howe that yf he myght gete hym, he sholde dye an evyll dethe, and all the rebelles with hym. The kynge of Castelles oost was grete, for he

had moche people; for the Spanyardes and Frensshemen that were there closed so the cyte aboute, that none coulde yssue out nor entre, without he were taken or slayne. And somtyme it fell by skyrmysshes and otherwyse that the Spanyardes toke some Portyngales: then the Spanyardes wolde put out theyr eyen, or stryke of a fote or an arme, or some other membre, and so sente them in agayne into the cyte, commaundynge them to saye, that they dyd, they dyd in dyspyte of the Lysbonoys, and of theyr mayster Denyce, whom they wolde make theyr kynge: and also shewe them playnly that we shal holde this syege here so longe that we shall have them perforce, by famyne or otherwyse, and then they shall all dye an evyll dethe, and set fyre on the cyte without mercy or pyte. And when the Lysbonoys toke ony of them, they dyd not so: for the kynge that nowe is of Portyngale made them to be well kepte at theyr ease, and so sent them agayne into the oost without ony hurte or domage of theyr persones, wherfore some sayd in the oost that it was done of a grete gentylnes, for he rendred good for yvell. And syr, whyle this syege endured, whiche was a hole yere and more, every weke there was one or two skyrmysshes and dedes of armes done, and some hurte and slayne on the one parte or on the other. The kynge of Castell helde as well his syege by water as by lande, and had plente of vytaylles, for it came to his oost from all partyes out of Castell. And on a day it happened at a skrymysshe that was made at one of the gates, syr John Laurence of Coygne, who was capytayne of the cyte, yssued out of the barryers with his penon of the armes of Coygne before hym, and with hym a good nombre of propre men of warre: and at that skirmysshe there was done many a propre feate of armes, and many a darte cast. By my fayth, sayd the duke of Lancastre, of all the feates of armes that the Castellyans and they of your countrey dothe use, the castynge of theyr dartes best pleaseth me, and gladly I wolde se it; for as I here say, yf they stryke one aryght, without he be well armed, the darte wyll perce hym thrughe. By my fayth syr, sayd the squyer, ye saye trouthe, for I have sene many a grete stroke gyven with them, whiche at one tyme cost us derely, and was to us grete dyspleasure: for at the sayd skyrmysshe syr John Laurence

CAP. XLIIII

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the maner of the dyscorde that was bytwene Castell and Portyngale.

CAP. XLIIII Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the maner of the dyscorde that was bytwene Castell and Portyngale.

of Coygne was stryken with a darte in suche wyse, that the heed perced all the plates of his cote of mayle, and a jacke stopped with sylke, and passed thrughe his body, so that he fel downe deed. And therwith seased the skyrmysshe, bycause of the dethe of the knyght; and so was the lady Elyanoure a wydowe in one yere of bothe her husbandes.

For this syr Johan Laurence of Cygne was made grete mone, for he was a valyaunt knyght, and full of good counsayle: and after his dethe there was chosen to be capytayne of Lyxbone a cosyne of his, a ryght valyaunt man, called Pouvasse of Coyne: he made agaynst the Spanyardes thre or foure yssues, and dyd to them grete domage.

Thus contynued the syege at Lyxbone, and surely often tymes they within the towne were sore abasshed, for they coulde se no comforte come to them frome ony parte; and when they sawe that none came out of Englonde, wheron lay all theyr trust, then the kynge that nowe is was counsayled to have taken a shyp, and so to have come hyder into Englonde. For syr John Vadigothz[1] of Passe, syr John Tete Dore, and the archedeacon of Lyxbone, whom they had sent hyther into Englonde to the kynge here, and to you, and to the erle of Cambrydge your broder, for to have some comforte and ayde, when they retourned into Lyxbone, they brought tydynges howe that ye wolde have comforted them. In the name of God, sayd the duke, all that is of trouthe, and so had I done, and was redy and at the poynte to have departed, but as then the warre of Flaundres and of Gaunte dyd let me: for the Gauntoys came hyder for ayde and helpe, and so all suche or the moost parte of them that sholde have gone with me into Portyngale wente into Flaundres with the bysshop of Norwyche, syr Henry Percy:[2] and so that letted my journey into Portyngale. In the name of God, sayd the squyer, it was thought amonge us that there was some grete let in Englonde, so that you coulde not come hyder; howbeit, we dyd as well as we myght, and maynteyned ourselfe valyauntly agaynst the kyng of Castell and all his puyssaunce, whiche was no small thynge, for he had mo then lx. M. men by see and by lande, and thretened to byrne, and to exyle us without mercy. And syr, thus whyle this syege endured, an erle of our countrey of Portyn-

[1] *Rodrigues.*

[2] *l'évesque de Nordvich, Messire Henry de Persy, et autres.*

gale, called the erle of Angouse, dyd us on a day grete socour, wherby he attayned grete honoure. For he with xx. galeys, aryved at the porte of Portyngale, with a good nombre of men of armes and provysyon, and so came saylynge by the see before Valence,[1] and thrughe the grace of God he came by the kynge of Castelles army, as they lay at ancre before Lixbone, who were mo then a C. grete vesselles; howbeit, he dyd his entrepryse so gracyously, and had the wynde at so good a poynte, that in dyspyte of all his enemyes, he entred saufely without peryll with all his galeys into the haven of Lyxbone, and at his comynge in, conquered iiii. shyppes of his enemyes, and brought them with hym into the haven; of whose comynge all that were in Lyxbone were ryght joyous, for it comforted them gretely. By my fayth, sayd the duke of Lancastre, the erle of Angouse at that tyme dyd you a fayre servyce. But nowe fayre Laurence, shewe me howe was this syege raysed, and by what maner: I wolde gladly here you speke therof. Syr, sayd the squyer, I shall shewe you with ryght a good wyll.

CAP. XLIIII

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the maner of the dyscorde that was bytwene Castell and Portyngale.

[1] *par la grâce de Dieu et par sa vaillance.*

As I have shewed you, the syege endured more then a yere before Lyxbone, and the kynge of Castell had sworne and avowed that he wolde not departe frome the syege tyll he had the cyte under his obeysaunce, without the puyssaunce of a gretter kynge then he was raysed hym therfro by force. And truly al thynges consydered, the kynge of Castel kepte wel his avowe, for the puyssaunce of a gretter kyng then he was raysed hym, and caused hym to departe; I shall shewe you howe. A pestylence and mortalyte mervaylous ferefull fell in his oost, in suche wyse, that men dyed sodeynly, spekyng one to another; there dyed mo then xx. M. persones, wherof the kyng was sore afrayde, wherfore it was counsayled hym to departe thens, and to drawe to Saynt Yrayne, or to some other parte, and breke up the syege, and to gyve leve to his people to departe tyll the pestylence was seased, whiche he dyd sore agaynst his wyll, bycause he had sworne so solemply to kepe the syege; howbeit, of necessyte he was fayne to departe. Therfore syr, we say, and hath ben sayd in Portyngale, and it is the comon opynyon, that God dyd sende that pestylence into the kyng of Castelles oost to ayde us and our kynge that nowe is, for

CAP. XLIIII

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the maner of the dyscorde that was bytwene Castell and Portyngale.

in the cyte wherin we were closed, there dyed nother man nor woman of that sykenes: this grace God dyd for us. And when the kynge of Castell dyslodged fro Lyxbone, the kynge of Portyngale that nowe is caused all suche as were within the cyte to be armed, and to lepe on theyr horses, and to folowe the trayne of the kynge of Castelles oost; and there we dyd then grete domage, for they dyslodged not in good aray, wherby they lost parte of theyr men and provisyon.[1] But the kyng of Portyngale made a crye, that on payne of dethe no man to take ony thynge that they founde in the felde, nor to brynge ony thyng therof into the cyte, but commaunded every thynge to be brente, to the entent that it sholde brynge no infeccyon into the cyte: so provysyon and every thynge was converted into flame of fyre; howbeit, I thynke suche as founde other golde or sylver in money or place brent it not, but saved it as well as they myght. So thus the kyng of Castel wente to Saynt Yrayne at the entre of his countrey, and there taryed a season, and sent for more socour into Fraunce, and specyally into Gascoyne and Byerne, and into the landes of the erle of Foys; and he sent thyder iii. somers laden with nobles of Castel and floreyns, to gyve in prest to knyghtes and squyers, for he knewe well otherwyse he sholde not have them come out of theyr houses. And when the barons and knyghtes of the royalme of Portyngale, on the partye of the kyng that nowe is, sawe howe the kynge of Castell had raysed his syege, whiche had endured more then a yere, they toke then grete courage, and so dyd all the comons of the countrey, and specyally they of Porte, Ewre, and Connymbres. Then they toke counsayle togyder shortely to crowne to theyr kyng mayster Denyce, whom they had chosen and gyven hym theyr love, and sayd how that it was Goddes wyll that he sholde be theyr kynge, for he had shewed his vertue agaynst the Spanyardes. Then a commaundement was made thrughout all Portyngale, every man to come to Connimbres, at a certayne daye lymytted, to the coronacyon of mayster Denyce: all suche as toke his parte came thyder, and accordynge to the puyssaunce of that royalme there was moche people. There kynge John of Portyngale was crowned by the bysshoppes and prelates

[1] *promocyon* P.

of the royalme with grete solempnyte as it aperteyned, on Trynyte Sondaye, the yere of our Lorde God M.CCC.lxxx. and iiii. in the cathedrall chyrche of Connymbres, called saynt Maries, whiche daye the kyng made newe knyghtes, what of his owne countrey as of straungers, to the nombre of lx. There was kepte a grete feest ii. or iii. dayes; and there the kynge renewed all homages of erles, barons, knyghtes, and squyers, and suche as helde of hym; and there the kyng sware to kepe the royalme in ryght and justyce, and to maynteyne al theyr jurysdyccyons, and every man sware to take hym for theyr kynge, and his heyres comynge of hym, male, or female, that to dye in the payne never to forsake them. Thus kynge John of Portyngale was crowned kynge.

CAP. XLIIII

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the maner of the dyscorde that was bytwene Castell and Portyngale.

When the kynge of Castell knewe how the comons of Portyngale had crowned mayster Denyce to theyr kynge, and had sworne to hym faythe and homage, then he was more dyspleased then he was before, for he had thought they wolde not have done it so sodeynly, bycause he had many of the nobles of Portyngale with hym; then he sayd, I se well it behoveth me perforce to conquere that is myne, yf I wyll have it: there shall never be peace bytwene Castell and Portyngale, tyll the Portyngales have amended that they have done. And so after the kynge was crowned he came to Lyxbone, and there taryed and toke grete dylygence to set in a good way the busynes of his royalme, and to gete therby the grace, good wyl and love of his people, and sent his knyghtes and men of warre into dyvers garysons, into townes and castelles on the fronters of Spayne, for the kynge of Castell lay at Syvyll. The kyng of Portyngale sent in garyson to Trencouse,[1] syr John Ferant Perteler,[2] an experte man of armes, a valyaunt knyght, and of hyghe entrepryse, and with hym syr Martyn Vas of Coygne, and his broder syr Wyllyam Vas, two experte knyghtes, and they had under them CC. speres of good men of warre well horsed. And to the castell of Lerie[3] towarde Juberoth, was sente syr John Radygos, with a l. speres; and to the cyte of Valence in Portyngale, was sente syr John James of Saulles, to lye in garyson agaynst the stronge towne of Tuy, whiche was as then yelden to the kynge of Castell when he

[1] *Trancoso.*
[2] *Pacheco.*
[3] *Leiria. Lene* P.

CAP. XLIIII came towarde Lyxbone; and in Tuy there lay in a garyson a grete nombre of men of armes, Frensshe and Castellyans. And to the cyte of Serpe, was sente syr Nondech Radygo, a noble knyght, with l. speres; but to Porte, to Ewre, and to Connymbres, was sente no men of warre, for the kynge thought them stronge ynoughe of themselfe, and true and faythfull to hym. Thus, syr, in the same yere that the kyng was thus crowned, the garysons were well provyded for, and often tymes there were encountrynges, skyrmysshes, and assawtes, on bothe partyes; one tyme our men wanne, and another tyme they lost, as the adventure of armes falleth, but specyally there was a sore encountre by them of the garyson of Trencouse, agaynst the Castellyans. A, Laurence, sayd the duke of Lancastre, passe not the matter so brevely, but let me knowe howe it was, and what was done when they mette in the feldes, for I wolde gladly here spekyng of dedes of armes. Syr, sayd the squyer, I shall shewe you what was there done, for at the same rencountre I was present, and bare that day the baner of syr John Ferant Perteler, by whom the busynes began, for he was as then capytayne of Trencouse.

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the maner of the dyscorde that was bytwene Castell and Portyngale.

The kynge of Castell had provyded men of warre on the fronters of Portyngale, who somtyme to do[1] us domage, assembled themselfe togyder and toke the feldes, and somtyme lost and somtyme wanne. And so on a season a vii. capytaynes of Spanyardes, good knyghtes, and of hyghe lygnage, assembled them togyder with the nombre of iii. C. speres well horsed, havynge grete desyre to do us domage, as they well shewed: for they came and entred into Portyngale, and toke a grete praye, and many prysoners, and yf they had wolde they myght have entred agayne into Castell without ony encountrynge. But they were soo hyghe mynded and prowde, that they sayd they wolde goo and se the garyson of Trencouse; they of the playne countrey fledde before them, soo that tydynges of them came into Trencouse. And when syr John Ferrant Partelere knewe the Castellyans rode abrode, he called for his harneys, and caused the trompettes to be sowned, and so awoke all the knyghtes and squyres in the towne: every man armed hym in grete haste, and mounted on theyr horses, and yssued out of Trencouse. And

[1] *do to* P.

CAP. XLIIII

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the maner of the dyscorde that was bytwene Castell and Portyngale.

when they were in the feldes they were a CC. and so put themselfe in good ordre, and shewed howe they had grete affeccyon to fynde theyr enemyes, and demaunded of them that came flyenge into the towne where theyr enemyes were. And they answered and sayd, howe they were not farre thens, and howe they rode but a softe pace, bycause of the grete praye that they caryed with them. With those tydynges syr John Ferrant Partelere was ryght joyouse, and sayd to his company, as to syr John Martyne of Vas, and syr Wyllyam Vas, his broder, Syrs, I requyre you let us avaunce forwarde; I wyll not entre into ony towne or castell in Portyngale, tyll I have sene our enemyes, and fyght with them, and put to my payne and travayle to recover the praye and prysoners that they leede with them. And then he sayd to me, Laurence, dysplay my baner, for it is tyme, we shall fynde shortely our enemyes. Then I dyd as he commaunded me; and so we rode forthe a good pace, and at the last we sawe where the dust rose with the horses of our enemyes; then we toke the vauntage of the sone, and came on them. And when the Castellyans sawe us, they helde themselfe close togyder, and ordred themselfe, and set theyr prysoners and pray on theyr one syde. And we approched so nere togyder that we myght speke to them, and they to us; and then we sawe howe they had iii. baners, and iiii. penons, and to our judgement a CCC. horse: fyrst, there was syr John Radigos de Castenans,[1] knyght and baron in Castell, syr Sylvegrefye of Albenes,[2] syr Adjoutall of Tolet, [syr Adjoutall] of Castell,[3] syr John Radigo of Eure, and Diostenses of Angouse. And when we were before them we lyghted on foote, and in lykewyse soo dyd they, and delyvered theyr horses to pages and varlettes. And or we began to cast dartes, or to doo ony feate of armes, the capytaynes spake eche to other. I that was there present herde all the wordes that were spoken on bothe partyes, for my mayster, syr John Ferrant Portelere, whose baner I bare, was one of the formest, and the wordes that were spoken were by hym and to hym. Fyrst, he demaunded why they rode in Portyngale, ledynge away suche prayes and prysoners as they had taken. Then syr Adjoutall of Tolet answered and sayd, they wolde

1 *Castañeda.*
2 *Alvaro Garcia de Albornoz.*
3 *Cassell* P.

CAP. XLIIII Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the maner of the dyscorde that was bytwene Castell and Portyngale.

ryde as they lyst, to punysshe them that be dysobeysaunt to the kynge of Castell, to whom the herytage of Portyngale perteyned; and bycause they founde them rebelles, therfore they sayd they over rynne the countrey, and take prayes and prysoners. Well syrs, sayd syr John Ferrant, ye shall not lede them longe, for we wyll rescue them, ye have noo ryght to come and to over rynne this countrey: ye knowe wel ynoughe we have a kynge all redy, who wyll kepe his royalme in ryght, and kepe justyce, and punysshe theves and robbers; therfore we saye unto you in his behalfe, all that ye have taken in the royalme of Portyngale, leve it behynde you and departe hens, or elles in our ryght and just quarell we wyll fyght with you. Then the Spanyardes answered, The prysoners that we have taken we wyll not delyver agayne, but as for the other praye we wyll take advyse. Then the vii. capytaynes of Castell drewe them togyder, and shewed that for all that they were come to se the garyson of Trencouse, yet they wolde have ben glad to have departed without batayle; and when they had counsayled, then they sayd howe they wolde leve theyr pray behynde them, but the prysoners they wolde lede with them. Nay, not so, sayd the Portyngales, for we wyll ye leve all, or elles ye shall have batayle; and so wente togyder, and there was a sore batayle, for there were on bothe partyes good men of warre, and the felde where as they fought was fayre and playne; they cast eche at other dartes so sore that who soo ever was stryken, without he were wel armed, was slayne or sore hurte; there were many propre feates of armes done: and there syr John Ferrant Partelere fought with an axe ryght valyauntly, and so dyd his ii. companyons: on the other partye the Spanyardes fought ryght valyauntly. Thus they fought the space of iii. houres, whiche was mervayle that men coulde endure so longe in theyr armure fyghtynge: but the grete desyre that eyther partye had to wynne honoure caused them to endure the more payne: and syr, surely Spanyardes and Portyngales are harde men in batayle, and specyally when they se it is of necessyte. Thus they fought longe that no man knewe who had the better, theyr batayle was so egall. And syr, thanked be God, there was nother baner nor penon on our syde that day overthrowen; but fynally

theyr syde began to open, and were beten downe on every syde, so that the dyscomfyture fell on them; then theyr pages fled awaye to save themselfe; and of the vii. capytaynes that were there present, there scaped away but one, and that was by the meanes of his page, who brought hym his horse; he dyd his mayster good servyce that day, and that was Adyentall Castell: all the other vi. were slayne, for there was never a man taken to raunsome. Thus syr John Ferrant Portelere and his company obtayned the vyctory of theyr enemyes, who were thre agaynst two, and this was on a Tuysday, in the moneth of Octobre, nere to Trencouse, in the yere of our Lorde M.CCC.lxxx. and iiii.

CAP. XLIIII

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the maner of the dyscorde that was bytwene Castell and Portyngale.

CAP. XLV

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth, bytwene the kynge of Castel, and the kynge of Portyngale.

AND after this dyscomfyture on our enemyes, our men mounted on theyr horses; and there we delyvered suche prysoners as the Castellyans had taken before, and also gave them suche pyllage as theyr enemyes had gotten, excepte the beestes, whiche were in nombre an viii. hundreth; all those we drave into the garyson of Trencouse, for vytayllynge of the towne, as it was reason. And there we were receyved with grete joye; they wyst not what chere to make us, bycause we had delyvered the countrey of theyr enemyes, and rescued that they had lost, wherby we had grete prayse thrughe all the townes of Portyngale. And, syr, in the same yere our men had another fayre journey on theyr enemyes in the felde of Syvylle. But, syr, fyrst I shall shewe you the moost happyest journey that the kynge of Portyngale had, or ony kynge before hym in CC. yere before, whiche was done within iiii. monethes before that the kynge sente us hyther. Our enemyes were iiii. agaynst one, of good men of warre, and of hyghe empryse, wherfore our journey ought to be the more praysed: but

CAP. XLV
Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth.

syr, I thinke ye have herde therof al redy, wherfore I thynke best to speke not therof. Nay, sayd the duke, ye shall not leve so, ye shall shewe me the hole processe, for I wolde gladly here you speke therof; yet of trouthe I have an heraulte here with me, called Derby, who was there at the batayle, as he sayth, and he shewed me that suche Englysshemen as were there dyd mervaylles in armes, and more by his reporte then I bileve was of trouth. For there was no grete nombre of them wherby ony grete feate sholde be done by them, for my broder the erle of Cambrydge, when he came out of Portyngale, brought agayne with hym suche Englysshmen as wente thyder. But there be many of these heraultes be suche lyers, that they wyll exalte suche as they lyst beyonde measure; but for all that, the noblenes of them that be good is not lost nor enpayred, thoughe it be not shewed by them; therfore it is good to knowe it by the reporte of other that knoweth it.

Syr, sayd Laurence, of all the straungers that were at the batayle of Juberoth with the kynge of Portyngale, there passed not a two hundred men, Englysshe, Gascoynes, and Almaynes: and the grettest capytaynes that were there of the straungers were two Gascoynes, and one of Almayne, of the duchy of Guerles. The Gascoynes were called syr Wyllyam of Mountferrant, and Bernardon, and the Almayne, Albert. Of Englysshmen there were a certayne archers, but I herde none named, but ii. squyers, Northbery and Hartecell, and they were called to counsayle with the kynge and other lordes, before the batayle. Well, sayd the duke, prosede forthe, and tell me of that journey, and howe it was fought, I requyre you. Syr, sayd the squyer, with ryght a good wyl; for syr, to shewe you and other howe it was, I am sente hyther fro the kynge my mayster.

Then Laurence Fongase renewed his tale, and spake of the busynes of Juberoth, and sayd thus: Syr, ye have herde by me, and also by other, that after the coronacyon of the kynge of Portyngale at Connymbres, the kyng of Castell, who had raysed his syege fro Lyxbone, for the dethe of pestylence that fell in his oost, and so wente to Yrayne. And it was sayd, howe it greved hym sore when he was enfourmed of the coronacyon of my redoubted lorde kynge

CAP. XLV

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth.

John of Portyngale; for the kynge of Castell claymed, and yet dothe, ryght in the herytage and crowne of Portyngale, by the tytle of his wyfe, doughter to kynge Ferrant, whiche we denyed, and yet do, for suche cause as I have shewed you before. So thus the kynge of Castell was counsayled to sende for men of war where he myght gete them, and specyally into Fraunce, for the Frensshmen had alwayes ayded hym and susteyned his quarell, and the kynge his fader in lykewyse. And it was sayd to hym by his counsayle, Ye nede nothynge but one journey agaynst them of Portyngale, for by puyssaunce if ye may kepe the felde and fyght with them, then ye shal come to your entente: for there is grete varyaunce allredy in Portyngale, as ye se and perceyve well: for there is here with you of the noblest persones of the royalme, and they have submytted themselfe under your obeysaunce, whiche thynge gretely furdereth your warre; if ye avaunce yourselfe with puyssaunce to fyght with this bastarde of Portyngale, whom the comons have crowned to theyr kynge, or he gete ayde of the Englysshemen, ye are lyke to overthrowe hym; and yf ye wynne the journey, all the royalme is yours, for it is no grete matter to wyn it after. Soo by suche counsayle and other thynges, John of Castell avaunced hymselfe to sende letters and messangeres into Fraunce, Poictou, Bretayne, Normandy, Borgon, and into dyvers other places, where as he thought to have men of armes, knyghtes and squyres, for his money, or for love, or suche as helde ony thynge of hym. And specyally there came many knyghtes and squyres to hym out of Byerne: and so on a daye as he was at Saynt Yrayne, he avewed his people to the nombre of vi. or vii. C. speres, and xxx. M. Spanyardes, all on horsbacke, all havynge desyre to do us domage.

Tidynges came into Portyngale to the kynge, and to the lordes there, and to them of the good townes and cytees, suche as were of the kynges partye, and it was shewed there what nombre and puyssaunce the kynge of Castell was of, and howe he was fully determyned to come and lay syege agayne to Lyxbone. Then the kynge of Portyngale and his counsayle assembled togyder, and there the most notablest persones of his royalme sayd, that the kyng were best to go

CAP. XLV

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth.

out of the cyte, and to mete with his enemyes, rather then to be enclosed in ony cyte or towne in Portyngale: for yf they were besyeged, they sholde have moche busynes to defende them and theyr cyte, and in the meane season the Castellyans myght ryde abrode at theyr ease where as they lyst, and conquere townes, cytees, and castelles, outher by force or by love, and dystroy all the playne countrey, and peradventure at lengthe them within the cyte. Wherfore they sayd to the kynge, Syr, yf we go out agaynst them, and take a place convenyent to fyght, we thynke this were best and moost profytable; for syr, we knowe well ye shall not peasybly enjoy the crowne of Portyngale, wherwith we have crowned you, without it be by batayle, and that at the leest ones or twyse to overthrowe your adversary the kynge of Castell and his puyssaunce. And yf we may dyscomfyte hym, then we shal be lordes of the country. And yf we be overcome, the royalme is in adventure; but better it were for us to seke batayle then to be sought on, and more honourable it were for us; for syr, it hathe ben often tymes sene that the setters on hath avauntage of the defenders; therfore syr, we wyll counsayle you to sende forthe your letters and messangers to all suche as ye thynke wyll serve you. Then the kynge answered and sayd, Syrs, ye speke wel, and I wyl do as ye have ordeyned. Then the kynge set his clarkes on warke to wryte letters, and wrote to every man that they sholde come to the porte of Portyngale, or nere there aboute, at a certayne day lymytted. Howbeit, all suche as were wryten unto came not thyder, for as then all the royalme toke not full parte with hym, but dyssymuled, and taryed to se howe the matters sholde frame at lengthe: and some were gone out of theyr owne countrey to the kynge of Castell, bycause they sayd that the kynge of Castell had more ryght to the crowne of Portyngale then our kynge had. Howbeit, for all that, the kynge my soverayne lorde wente to Connymbres, and there made his assemble of suche men of warre as he coulde gete, and truely he had with hym the choyse men of all Portyngale, and of moost auctoryte, as of erles, barons, knyghtes and squyers, and also he had a xxv. hundred speres of squyers, and a xii. M. foote men. Then he ordeyned a

CAP. XLV

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth.

constable and marshall. The constable was the erle of Navare,[1] the marshall syr Alve[2] Perriere, bothe ryght sage knyghtes to conduyte men of warre. Then they departed fro Connymbres, and toke the waye to Cabase, that is Juberoth, and rode fayre and easely to ease themselfe and theyr horses, and that theyr provysyon might folowe them in good ordre; and they had fore ryders, one before, to avewe the demeanynge of the Castellyans. At this tyme syr John Ferrant Pertelere was not come to the kynge, he was at the garyson of Dorech,[3] a v. legges fro Juberoth, and I thynke he knewe not as then that the kynge sholde fyght with his enemyes.

[1] *D. Nuno Alvares.*
[2] *Alne* P.
[3] *Ourem.*

I suppose the kynge of Castell was wel enfourmed howe the kynge of Portyngale was comynge to hymwarde with his puyssaunce, and when he knewe it he had therof grete joy, and so had all his men as they shewed, and anone they determyned to come on agaynst us, and to fyght with us: and specially the Gascoynes of Byerne that were there sore desyred to fyght with us, for they desyred to have the fyrst batayle, and so they had: and syr Wyllyam of Mounferrant, a Gascoyne, who was there on our partye, sayd surely howe we sholde have batayle, bycause they of Byerne were agaynst us, who ever desyreth nothynge but batayle.

Then the kynge of Castell, with all his batayle, came the nexte daye and lodged at the castell of Lerre, a two legges fro Juberoth, and the nexte day we came to the Cabase, and lodged there, and that nyght the kynge of Castel lodged but a lytell legge fro Juberoth, for he knewe well what way we toke, and howe we lodged at Juberoth.

Syr, the Portyngales hath had alwayes grete trust and confydence in God, and in the good fortune of that place of Juberoth, and therfore they at that tyme rested there. Why, sayd the duke, have they so good hope in that place rather then in another? Syr, sayd the squyer, auncyently the grete Charlemayne, who was kynge of Fraunce, and of Almayne, and emperoure of Rome, who was in his tyme a grete conqueroure, at this place of Juberoth he dyscomfyted vii. kynges of the myscreauntes, and there were slayne of the infydelles a C. M. This, syr, is auncyently founde in hystoryes and cronycles, and by reason of that batayle he

CAP. XLV
Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth.

conquered Connymbres, and all the countrey of Portyngale, and brought it into crysten fayth: and bycause of the grete victore that he had there agaynst Goddes enemyes he founded there an abbaye of blacke monkes, and gave them grete rente in Portyngale, and in Castell. And also syr, aboute a CC. yere past, there was at the same place a grete batayle and fayre journey acheved by a lorde that was at that tyme broder to the kyng of Castell; for before that tyme there was never kynge in Portyngale: it was called the countye of Portyngale. And so it was that these ii. bretherne, the kynge of Castell and the erle of Portyngale, had mortall warre togyder for partycyon of landes, so that there coulde be founde no peas bytwene them but mortall warre togyder. The matter touched soo moche the erle of Portyngale and the Portyngales, that they had rather to have ben deed, then to have ben under the subjeccyon of the kynge of Castel; and so they toke a day of batayle, and there the kynge of Castell was so puyssaunt, that he was x. agaynst one, so that he set nothynge by the Portyngales, so at the Cabase of Juberoth was theyr batayle ryght cruell. And fynally the Portyngales obteyned the vyctory, and the Castellyans dyscomfyted, and the kynge of Castell taken, by whose takynge the erle of Portyngale had peas as he lyst. Then the boundes were set of the departyng of Castell and Portyngale.

And then bycause the Portyngales saw that God had sente them the vyctory with so smal a nombre agaynst so grete a puyssaunce, then they thought to augment theyr lande and to make it a royalme; so the prelates and nobles of the countrey crowned theyr fyrst kynge at Connymbres, and made hym to ryde thrughout his royalme with a crowne of lawrell on his heed, sygnyfyenge honoure and vyctory, as auncyently kynges were wonte to do; and so ever syth the royalme hath had a kynge. For syr, surely rather then the Portyngales wolde be under the subjeccyon of the Castellyans, they wolde take one or other that were ferre of fro the blood of the kynge of Portyngale, and the kynge were deed without yssue male. And syr, when the kynge of Portyngale that nowe is came to the place of Juberoth, all these matters were shewed hym. And thus whyles that

CAP. XLV

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth.

the constable and marshall were orderynge of theyr batayles, there came to the kynge syr John Ferrant Partelere, who came the same morenynge fro his garyson of Dorech, and brought with hym xl. speres: the kynge had grete joye of his comynge. And when all our batayIles were ordeyned, and that we abode for nothynge but for our enemyes, and that our fore ryders were sente forth to aspye theyr dealynge, the kynge then my soverayne lorde came in amonge his men, and caused sylence to be made, and then he sayd, Syrs, ye have crowned me kynge: shewe nowe your trouth and faythfulnes, for syth I am so forwarde, and specyally in this place of Juberoth, I shal never retourne agayne into Portyngale without I fyght with myne enemyes. Then every man answered and sayd, Syr, we shall all abyde with you, and knowe for trouthe we shall not flye this daye.

Thus the batayles approched, for the Castellyans had grete desyre to fynde us, and to fyght, as they well shewed. And we sente forthe our fore ryders, to se and knowe what our enemyes dyd, and they taryed fro us more then iii. houres, and that we herde no tydynges of them, so that we thought we had lost them. Howbeit, at the last they retourned and brought us sure worde of them, and what nombre they were of by all lykelyhode, and they shewed us howe theyr vowarde were a vii. M. men of armes, armed cap a pee, as fresshe and as well horsed as coulde be devysed; and in the kynge of Castelles rerewarde, there were a xxx. M. horse, of good men of armes. And when our kynge and his company knewe the nombre of theyr enemyes, and howe that theyr vowarde were a ii. legges before the kynge, for the Gascoynes and straungers were not well of accorde with the Castellyans, then we determyned to kepe us close togyder in our strength, and to make ii. wynges to our batayle, and our men of armes, wherof we had but ii. M. and CCCCC. speres, to be bytwene the ii. wynges. Syr, there myght well have ben sene good ordre of batayle, and people well recomforted. And then it was commaunded by the kyng on payne of dethe, that no man take that daye no prysoner; this was determyned amonge us for the best: for as the lordes and capytaynes sayd, if we sholde en-

CAP. XLV

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth.

tende to take prysoners, it sholde deceyve us, and make us take no hede of that we sholde do, for it was sayd that it were better for us to fyght wel, then to take hede of takynge of prysoners, and to sel our lyves derely as good people ought to do. This worde was upholden and observed. Then our enemyes came before us close togyder lyke good men of warre, and then alyghted on foote and trymmed theyr harneys, and let theyr horses go, and so came and approched us fyersly. Surely there was the flour of chyvalry, and that they shewed well: bytwene us and them there was a lytell dyke, no gretter but that a knyght armed myght well passe over. Howbeit, to us it was a lytell avauntage, for in the passynge therof, our men that were on bothe wynges with theyr dartes dyd hurte and mayme dyvers, and dyd sore trouble them. And when they were over the dyke, then they assembled them agaynst us, for they thought that the kynge of Castell with his grete batayle had folowed them at hande, but it was not so, for they were all dyscomfyted and slayne or the kynge of Castell came nere hande us. I shal shewe you by what meanes they were closed in bytwene us. And the comons of our countrey, who layde on behynde them with axes, and other wepons, without sparynge, and our men of armes who were fresshe, came on agaynst them, and caused them to recule backe, and to fall in the dyke one upon another: syr, al this was done in lesse then halfe an houre, and there was slayne in the felde of men of armes mo then iiii. M., and none taken to raunsome; for when ony knyght or spere of ours wolde have taken ony prysoner, other of theyr company wolde slee them in theyr handes.

Thus clerely without recovery the vowarde of our enemyes were dyscomfyted: then came the kynge of Castel with his batayle, wherin he had xxx. M. men, well horsed. But when they approched it was nere nyght, and they knewe nothynge what myschefe was fallen on theyr vowarde, and then they came and mustred themselfe before us, and a CCCCC. of them lepte with theyr horses over the dike; but syr, al suche as passed over never repassed agayne, for there was slayne a grete parte of the noble men, suche as desyred feates of armes, and a grete nombre of the barons and

knyghtes of Portyngale, suche as were there with the kynge of Castell agaynst us. And when our people sawe our enemyes so dyscomfyted, then we passed over the dyke, for in xl. places the dyke was stopped with deed men, and toke our horses and folowed the chase. But that was not ferre, for it was nyght; we wolde not folysshly go ferre for doubte of busshmentes, nor also we were not so well horsed as the Castellyans: for surely yf we had, they had receyved more domage then they dyd, and the kynge of Castell taken or slayne; but the nyght came on so darke, saved hym and many other. Syr, I shall shewe you the names of the moost parte of the noble men of Fraunce, Gascoynes, and Portyngales, that dyed in the felde at the batayle of Juberoth.

CAP. XLV

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth.

First, the erle Don John Alphons Serole, of Portyngale, the grete pryour of saynt Johns in Portyngale, Don Dilgaures his broder, Ange Salvace of Geneve, Don John Ausalle, syr Dangoues Mendrich,[1] Dricho Persement, Peter Resermant, Lugares of Versaunt, the grete mayster of Calestrave, and his broder, called Don Dygo Dygares, Peter Goussart[2] of Seball, John Radigo of Herciers, the grete mayster of saynt Jaques. And of Frensshmen, syr John of Rys, syr Jeffrey Ricon, syr Godfrey Pertenay, syr Espaynolet of Spayne, syr Reynolde of Solyere, a knyght called Lymosyn,[3] marshall of the kynge of Castelles oost. And of Gascoyns of Bierne, the lorde of Bierne, the lorde of Mortan, the lorde of Bryngoles, syr Raymonde Durach, syr Bertram of Baruge,[4] syr John of Asolguie, syr Raymonde of Valentyne, syr Adam of Mourase, syr Mennent of Sarement, syr Peter of Sarembiere, and dyvers other, mo then xii. C. knyghtes and squyers, all gentyll men. Nowe syr I shall shewe you the names of them that were slayne[5] on our party: Fyrst, the erle of Navare, constable of Portyngale, Galopes Porteke, Peter Porteke, and Agalype Ferrant Porteke, his broder, Pouvase[6] of Coygne, Egeas Toille of Podich Dassue[7] and Vasse Martyne of Mielx, and his sone Vasse Martyne, who was stryken with a darte clene thrughe his body. Also there was slayne[5] Goussalenas[8] of Merlo, Alve Porie, marshall of the oost, a good knyght, Radigos Perriere, John James of Salves, John Radigo, cosyn to the kynge of Aminoudesque, Radigo[9]

[1] *Diego Gomez Manrique.*

[2] *Gonzalez.*

[3] *messire Reginault du Solier, dit Limousin.*

[4] *Varuge* P.

[5] *This is a list of those present, not of slain.*

[6] *Pōnase* P.

[7] *Egas Coelho, Lopo Dias de Azevedo.*

[8] *Gonsalves.*

[9] *damp Mondesque Radigo.*

CAP. XLV

Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth.

Radiges Valeronceaux,[1] Mendignes of Valconseaux.[1] Then the duke of Lancastre began to laughe, and Laurence Fongase demaunded and sayd, Syr, why do you laughe? Why, sayd the duke, there is good cause why; I never herde so straunge names as I have herde you reherce. Syr, sayd he, by my fayth all these names we have in our countrey, and more straunger. I byleve you well, sayd the duke. But, Laurence, what became of the kynge of Castell after this dyscomfyture; made he ony recovery, or dyd he close hymselfe in ony of his townes, or dyd the kynge of Portyngale folowe hym the nexte day. Nay, surely syr, sayd Laurence, we folowed them no furder, but abode styl in the same place where the felde was, all nyght, and the nexte daye tyll noone; then we retourned to the castell of Alerne,[2] a ii. lytel legges fro Juberoth, and so fro thens to Connymbres; and the kynge of Castel went to Saynt Yrayne, and there toke a barge, and xiiii. with hym, and rowed to a grete shyp, and so wente by the see to Syvyll,[3] where the quene was. And his men wente some one way and some another, lyke people dysmayde without recovery, for they lost moche; and of theyr domage they are not lyke to recover it of a grete season, without it be by the puyssaunce of the Frensshe kynge. And bycause the kynge of Portyngale and his counsayle knowe well that the Castellyans wyll pourchace ayde out of Fraunce, bycause they be alyened togyder, therfore we be sent into this countrey to the kynge of Englande, and to you. Then the duke sayd, Laurence, ye shal not departe hens tyl ye bere with you good tidinges; but I pray you shewe me of the other encountrynge that your men had in the felde of Syvyll, as ye spake of ryght nowe, for I wolde gladly here of dedes of armes, thoughe I be no good knyght myselfe. Syr, sayd the squyer, with ryght a good wyll I shall shewe you.

[1] *Vasconcellos.*

[2] *Leiria.*

[3] *Sybyll* P. *passim.*

After the fayre and honourable journey that kynge John of Portyngale had at the Cabase of Juberoth, and that he was retourned with grete tryumphe to the cyte of Lyxbone, and that there was no tydynges of ony newe assembly of the Castellyans or Frensshmen, but helde them in garysons, then the kynge of Castel departed fro Syvyl, and the quene his wyfe with hym, and wente to Burgus in Castell. And so

CAP. XLV
Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth.

our men and theyrs made warre togyder by garysons. And so on a tyme the erle of Navare,[1] constable of Portyngale, entred into Castell, into the feldes of Syvyl, with xl. speres, and came before a towne called Valewyde,[2] within whiche there was a CC. men of armes of Castell. The erle of Navare came to the baryeres, and shewed wel howe he demaunded batayle of them within, who made no semblaunt to yssue out; howbeit, they armed them. And when our men had ben there as longe as it pleased them, then they retourned, and they had not rydden past a legge of that countrey, but that they saw them of the garyson of Valewyde come galopyng after them, and the capytaynes of them was Diogenes[3] of Padillo, an experte man of armes, and the grete mayster of saynt Jaques in Galyce. And when our men saw them so comynge, they lyghted on fote, and delyvered theyr horses to theyr pages. And the Spanyardes, who were a grete nombre, wolde have set on the pages and varlettes to have taken theyr horses fro them; some sayd Let us wyn theyr horses, we can not do them a gretter dyspleasure, nor put them to more payne then to make them retourne on foote. Then the mayster of saynt Jaques sayd, Naye, let us not do so, for if we wyn the maysters, we shal soone have the horses, let us alyght afote, and fight with them, they shall not endure agaynst us. And thus whyle the Castellyans were arguynge, our men passed over a lytell water that was behynde them, and there toke a grete grounde and fortefyed it, and made semblaunt as though they caryed nothyng for theyr horses. And when the Castellyans sawe that they were passed the water, then they repented them that they had not set on soner then they dyd; howbeit, they thought soone to overcome our men, and so came on them and began to cast dartes. And when the Castellyans had enployed al theyr artyllery, and had no mo dartes to cast, and had soo contynued theyr assaulte fro noone tyll it was nere nyght; when our men sawe that theyr enemyes had spente all theyr artyllery, then the erle of Navare made his baner to passe the water, and all his company, and so dasshed in amonge the Castellyans, who anone began to open, for they were sore travayled, weryed, and chafed[4] in theyr harneys, so that they coulde not helpe themselfe, but were all overthrowne

[1] i.e. *the Count Nuno Alvares.*
[2] *Valverde.*
[3] *Diego Yanez.*
[4] *chased* P.

CAP. XLV Howe Laurence Fongase shewed the duke of Lancastre the maner of the batayle of Juberoth.

and dyscomfyted, and the mayster of saynt Jaques slayne, and mo then lx. with hym, and the other fled. And so they saved theyr horses, and wan many other fro the Castellyans. How say you syr, had not our men that day a fayre adventure? Yes, by my faythe, sayd the duke of Lancastre.

CAP. XLVI

Howe the ambassadours of Portyngale had answere of the kynge of Englande, and grete gyftes; and howe they toke theyr leve and wente into theyr countreys.

AND syr, bycause of suche rencountres and dedes of armes that our men have had on theyr enemyes syth the electyon of kyng John of Portyngale, the Portyngales are entred into grete joy, and most comonly say that God is for them and theyr ryght; and syr, they say not moche amys to say that God is with them, for in every thynge as touchyng ony dede of armes lytell or moche, ever syth the dethe of kynge Ferrant, they have had the vyctory. And the erle of Foys that nowe is, one of the gretest lordes of the worlde, and full of hyghe prudence, as we knowe by them of this countrey, he sayd, that fortune was with us of Portyngale, and yf the knyghtes of Byerne had byleved hym whan they departed out of his countrey, they sholde not have armed themselfe agaynst the kynge of Portyngale that nowe is, a wyse and a dyscrete man, and fereth God, and loveth Holy Chyrche, and exalteth it as moche as he may, and is often tymes in his oratory on his knees in herynge of devyne servyce; he hath ordeyned that for what so ever busynes it be, that none speke to hym tyll he be out of his oratory, and is a grete clerke, and taketh lytell hede of ony grete sermones, and specyally he wyll have justyce kepte in all his royalme, and poore men maynteyned in theyr ryght.

Thus syr at your request I have shewed you the maner of our countrey, and all that I knowe of the kynge and all

his counsayle, and by them I was commaunded at my departyng fro them to shewe you every thynge that I knewe. Wherfore syr, it maye please you that I myght have an answere. Laurence, sayd the duke, or this tyme I have shewed you, and yet agayne I say it, that your comynge and these tydynges doth me grete pleasure; and ye shall not departe fro me tyll ye be satysfyed of all your requestes, and well answered in that ye be come for. Syr, sayd the squyer, I thanke you. Then the duke called for wyne and spyces, and so toke theyr leve and wente to theyr lodgynge to Arcorch, to the house of the Fawcon[1] in London; there they were lodged with Thomelyn of Colebrunque.

CAP. XLVI

Howe the ambassadours of Portyngale had answere of the kynge of Englande.

[1] *à leur hostel au Faulcon.*

And it was not longe after but that the duke of Lancastre and the erle of Cambrydge his broder had counsayle togyder of the busynes of Castell and Portyngale, wherof the erle of Cambrydge was well contente, for he had ben in that countrey before more than a yere; and he was glad to here of the condycyons and tytles of the kynge of Portyngale, and of the quene of Castell, and sayd to his broder, Syr, when kynge Ferrant lyved, the Chanon Robsart and syr Wyllyam Wyndesore, and dyvers other knyghtes that were there with me, shewed me as it is nowe fallen: for they sayd how they had herde dyvers of the same countrey murmure on the quene of Castelles tytle to Portyngale; therfore I toke away with me my sone, and had no grete affeccyon to that maryage. In the name of God, sayd the duke, the squyer that is here of Portyngale hathe declared all the matter; and I thynke we can not have so fayre an entre into Castell as by Portyngale, for the royalme of Aragon is ferre of, and also the kynge there and his chyldren have alwayes ben more favourable to the Frensshe party thenne to us. Therfore it were not good, syth the kynge of Portyngale maketh for us this good offre, to refuse it. So on a day for this matter there was a parlyament holden at Westmynstre, and there it was accorded, that the duke of Lancastre sholde have at the costes of the royalme bitwene a M. and xii. C. speres of chosen men, and ii. M. archers, and a M. of other yomen; and they were all payde in hande for halfe a yere. And therwith all the kynges uncles were well contente, and specyally the duke of Lancastre, to whom

CAP. XLVI

Howe the ambassadours of Portyngale had answere of the kynge of Englande.

pryncypally that matter touched, and as he that sholde be chefe of that armye. And to dyspatche these ambassadours of Portyngale, the kynge of Englande wrote to the kynge of Portyngale lovynge letters, conteynyng grete amyte that he wolde bere to Portyngale, and grete gyftes were gyven to the mayster of saynt Jaques in Portyngale, and to Laurence Fongase, who was alwayes with the duke of Lancastre and with the erle of Cambrydge. And so on a day these ambassadours toke theyr leve of the kyng and his counsayle, and dyned that daye with the duke of Lancastre and the erle of Cambrydge, and the nexte day they were delyvered; and, as I understode, the duke of Lancastre sente letters to the kynge of Portyngale, and also by credence, that he sholde sende a vii. galeys, and an xviii. or xx. other vesselles, to the porte of Brystowe, on the fronters of Wales, for hym and his company to passe into Portyngale. So the ambassadoures departed and wente to Hampton, and there founde theyr shyp that taryed for them, and so entred into the see, and had wynde at theyr wyll, and so entred into the hygh Spaynysshe see, and within v. dayes they were in the haven of the porte of Portyngale, at whiche tyme the kynge was there, and was ryght joyfull of theyr comynge.

And there the grete mayster of saynt Jaques in Portyngale and Laurence Fongase shewed the kynge and his counsayle al that they had sene and herde in Englande, as well of the kynge as of his uncles, and delyvered theyr letters, whiche certefyed al theyr saynges: then anone after the kynge of Portyngale, who gretely desyred the ayde out of Englande, to the entente to cause his enemyes to have the more fere, determyned with his counsayle that mayster Alphons Vietat, chefe patron and mayster of all his shyppes and galeys in Portyngale, that he sholde prepayre redy vii. galeys and xviii. other grete shyppes, and to sayle into Englande to fetche the duke of Lancastre and his company. And so Alphons was commaunded thus to do; and he incontynent dyd so, and so on a daye departed fro the porte of Portyngale, and in vi. dayes he arryved at Brystowe, at whiche season the lordes of Englande for the moost parte were aboute the marches of Wales, for the kynge was there. When the duke of Lancastre knewe of the comynge of these

shyppes, he was ryght joyfull. Then knyghtes and squyers, and al suche as sholde go with hym, were sente for; so that in the porte of Brystowe there were CC. vesselles, with the flete of Portyngale redy apparelled for the duke and his company. And the dukes entencyon was to have with hym his wyfe and his chyldren, and to make with them some good maryages in Castel and in Portyngale or his retourne agayne into Englande, for he thought not shortely to retourne: for he saw the busynes in Englande lykely to be harde and sharpe, and how the kyng his nevewe was yonge, and had aboute hym peryllous counsayle, wherfore he was the gladder to be gone. And or he departed, in the presence of his bretherne, he ordeyned his sone, the lorde Henry, erle of Darby, his lieutenaunt of all that he had in Englande, and set aboute hym wyse and sad counsayle; he was a lusty yonge knyght, and was sone to the duches of Lancastre, the lady Blaunche, doughter to quene Phylyp of Englande.[1] I never sawe ii. better ladyes, nor of more noble condycyon, nor never shal, thoughe I sholde lyve this thousande yeres, whiche is impossyble.

CAP. XLVI
Howe the ambassadours of Portyngale had answere of the kynge of Englande.

[1] *fils de madame Blanche, la bonne duchesse de Lancastre: aussi estoit la très bonne madame Phelippe d'Angleterre sa mère* (i.e. *grandmother*).

When duke John of Lancastre had ordred all his busynes in Englonde, then he toke leve of the kyng and of his bretherne, and so he wente to Brystowe, and there taryed a xv. dayes, and shypped all his horses and bagages, mo than ii. M., with hay, lytter, and fresshe water for them. Then the duke entred into a galey, well apparelled, and had by hym a grete shyp yf nede were for hym, and for the duches Constaunce his wyfe, who wente in this journey with a good courage, for she trusted then to recover her herytage of Castell, and to be quene there, or she retourned agayne. And she had with her a doughter, called Katheryne; and by her fyrst husbande, ii. other doughters, Izabel and Phylyp, whiche Phylyp was maryed to syr John Holande, who was constable of that oost. And the marshall was syr Thomas Moriaux, who had also in maryage one of his doughters; howbeit, she was a bastarde, and was moder to the lady Mereell, damoysel Mary of saynt Hyllary of Hauman.[2] And admyral of the dukes navy was syr Thomas Percy. Also there was syr Yon Fytzwaren,[3] the lorde of Lucy, syr Henry Beaumonde, [the lorde] de Poumins,[4] syr John of Burnvell, the lorde Talbot, the lorde Basset, syr Wyllyam Beauchamp,

[2] *Haynnau.*

[3] *fythwaren* P.

[4] *Poynings.*

CAP. XLVI

Howe the ambassadours of Portyngale had answere of the kynge of Englande.

syr Wyllyam Wyndesore, syr Thomas Tracon,[1] syr Hughe Spenser, the lorde Wylloughby, the lorde Braston, syr Wyllyam Ferinton, syr John Dambricourt, syr Hughe Hastynges, syr Thomas Wancestre, syr Mauburyn Liniers, syr Loys of Rochestre, syr John Soustre, syr Phylyp Tacyel, syr John Bouboufer, syr Robert Clycon, syr Nycholas Trenton, Hugyn of Caurele, Davyd Houlegiar,[2] Thomas Allerey, Hobequyn Beaucestre, and dyvers other, all with penons. Besyde the barons, they were a M. speres of knyghtes and squyers of good men of armes, and ii. M. archers, and a M. of other tawle yomen. They had a fayre season as in the moneth of May, whiche is lyghtly pleasaunt and peasyble; and so they sayled, coostynge the Ile of Wyght and Gernsey, tyll they came open on the coost of Normandy. They were CC. sayles, and it was a grete beautye to se the galeys glyde on the see approchyng the lande, full of men of armes and archers, sekynge for some adventures, for it was sayd to them that the armye of Normandy was on the see; and truely so they were, tyll the Englysshe flete appered before the boundes of Quarentyne; but they knewe by theyr balengers that the armye of Englande was comynge, and therfore they withdrewe themselfe into the haven of Harflewe.

[1] *Drayton.*
[2] *Holegrave.*

There is lyghtely nothynge but that it is knowen, and specyally of dedes of armes; for lordes, knyghtes, and squyers, wyll gladly talke togyder therof. When the dyscomfyture was at Juberoth, where as the kynge of Castell toke suche losse as ye have herde, tydynges therof came into Fraunce, as it was reason, for there were many there that had lost at that batayle theyr frendes and kynsmen, and as then there was no warre so lykely to be as in Castell; also they herde true reporte howe the duke of Lancastre claymed as his ryght enherytaunce the herytage of Castell, and howe he had raysed in Englonde a grete armye, to the entente to drawe into Castell or into Portyngale. So then knyghtes and squyers of the low marches, to avaunce theyr honoure, drewe and sente eche to other to determyne howe they myght best drawe into Castell; some counsayled to go thyder by lande, to eschewe the perylles of the see, and also to scape fro the encountrynge of the Englysshe navye, and some sayd nay therto, for they sayd the passage by lande was over

longe. And also they thought that the kynge of Navare was not clerely favourable to the Frensshe partye, for the Frensshmen and he loved but smally togyder: for it was sayd, and true it was, the Frensshemen had taken fro hym all his enherytaunce in Normandy; howbeit, I can not tell yf his quarel were just or not: lo thus these companyons doubted gretely the perylles that myght fall by goynge by lande, as well for the kynge of Navare as for other, and they thought they sholde never come there by the way thrugh Aragon; so at last they concluded to go to Rochell as they dyd, and there to take the se. There they rygged an xviii. vesselles, and toke but fewe horses with them; and when they were all redy, and had wynde at theyr wyll, they entred into theyr vesselles and so sayled towarde Bayon, for that waye, or nere therto, they must nedes passe. And in that company there was the lorde of Coursey, syr John Handoy, the vycount of Verliere, syr Peter of Vellamines, syr Guy of Baveux, syr John of Castell Morant, the lorde of saynt Liger, syr James of Fougeres, the lorde of Bellannes, syr Trystram of Langurant, the lorde Barroys of Barres, and dyvers other, so that they were a CCC. knyghtes and squyers of chosen men desyrynge armes. Thus they sayled by the see, and had wynde and wether as they wolde wysshe, and so aryved without peryl or domage at the porte of saynt Andrewe in Bysquay, in the yere of our Lorde M. iii. C.lxxx. and vi. the xiiii. day of the moneth of May.

CAP. XLVI

Howe the ambassadours of Portyngale had answere of the kynge of Englande.

When these knyghtes and squyers of Fraunce were aryved at saynt Andrewes,[1] there they refresshed them ii. dayes, and in that space they drew out of theyr shyppes theyr horses and bagages; then they set forthe and demaunded where they sholde fynde the kynge of Castell. And it was shewed them howe they sholde fynde hym in the cyte of Burgus in Spayne, where as then he had a grete counsayle for the busynes of his royalme. These knyghtes and squyers toke theyr way to Burgus, and so came thyder, and the kynge of Castell was ryght joyfull of theyr comynge, and demaunded of them tydynges of Fraunce, and what way they came thyder. They answered howe they came by the see fro Rochel, and how it was sayd in Fraunce that the duke of Lancastre had a grete army of

[1] *Santander.*

CAP. XLVI

Howe the ambassadours of Portyngale had answere of the kynge of Englande.

men of armes and archers to come the same season into Castell or elles into Portyngale; and also howe the kynge of Portyngale had sent a nombre of galeys and other shyppes into Englande for hym. Of these tydynges the kyng of Spayne was more pensyve then he was before; howbeit, he made no semblaunt, but well he thought he sholde have sore warre in that season; howbeit, he made good chere to these knyghtes and squyers of Fraunce, and thanked them gretely of theyr comynge. And then he sayd to syr Robert of Braquemont, and to syr John his broder, Syrs, when ye departed fro me the yere that is past, I desyred you that whensoever ye retourned agayne hyder, that ye sholde brynge with you tenyse balles of Parys for us to play togyder; howbeit, it had ben better I hadde charged you to have brought good bassenetes and good harneys, for I thynke we shall fynde the season well to enploye them. Syr, sayd the knyght, we have brought of bothe; syr, alwayes we can not be armed nor alwayes play. Thus the kynge of Castell made them ryght good chere. Then they had affeccyon to goo on pylgrymage to saynt James syth they were in that countrey, and some of them had avowed so to do; so they rode all togyder for company, and trussed with them all theyr harneys as thoughe they sholde have gone to batayle; and they dyd wysely in theyr so doynge, for it stode them in good stede or they retourned agayne, as ye shall here after. Nowe let us retourne to the duke of Lancastres armye, who were on the coost of Normandy.

In lyke maner as by comparyson as fawcons pelegrynes, that have stande and rested longe on the perche hath grete desyre to flye abrode, in lyke maner the knyghtes and squyers of Englonde desyred to fynde dedes of armes to avaunce themselfe, and sayd eche to other: Why do ye not aryve and go se the boundes and portes of Normandy? There be knyghtes and squyers to awake us, and to fyght with us. These wordes multyplyed that it came to the dukes eyres, and the duke, or he departed out of Englonde, knewe that syr John of Malestroyt, and the lorde of Cambor[1] and Morfouace, and a grete nombre of knyghtes and squyers of Bretayne, lay at the syege in bastydes before the castell of Brest, by the commaundement of the constable of Fraunce. So

[1] *Combourg.*

when the duke herde of the grete desyre that his men had to fynde some dedes of armes, then he sayd to his admyrall, syr Thomas Percy, and to the constable of his armye, syr John Holande, commaundynge them to addresse theyr navey towarde Bretayne, sayenge howe he wolde goo and se the castell of Brest, to vysyte and comforte the companyons therin, and to loke on them that be without in the bastydes: of these tydynges the Englysshemen were joyful. Then Alphons Vietat, chefe patron of the navey of Portyngale, who knew ryght well the way and the entrees into Bretayne, whiche were ryght peryllous and daungerous, he made his galey to lede the trace, and shewed the way to other. The season was fayre and pleasaunt, and the see peasyble, soo they sayled towarde the haven of Brest, and then taryed for the tyde, for they knewe well with the fludde they sholde into the haven of Brest: grete pleasure it was to here the trompettes and claryons. The same season syr John of Malestroyt, the vycount of Combor and Morfouace, were syttynge at dyner, when tydynges came to them how the Englysshe armye was come: then they rose and armed them, for they knewe wel that when the duke of Lancastre had taken lande, he wolde fyght with them and rayse theyr bastydes; soo they were all well armed, and of good mynde to defende them yf they were assaylled: they were a CCC. knyghtes and squyers. The Englysshemen were ryght joyful when they were in the haven of Brest, and understode howe the Bretons helde theyr bastydes, and sayd howe they wolde go and se them and fyght with them, for they had grete desyre to doo some dedes of armes.

CAP. XLVI

Howe the ambassadours of Portyngale had answere of the kynge of Englande.

CAP. XLVII

Howe the duke of Lancastre assayled the lordes, knyghtes, and squyers, that were in the bastydes before Brest in Bretayne, and howe they defended themselfe.

THUS the duke of Lancastre and his company toke lande a lytell besyde the castell of Brest, and lefte all theyr horses and provysyon styl in theyr shyppes; but all the ladyes and damoyselles toke lande to refresshe them. The fyrst day they dyd nothynge, but apparelled themselfe to lodge on the erthe for ii. or iii. dayes in pavylyons along the see syde; and so there they lay all that day and that nyght. And the nexte mornyng the constable and marshall of the army sowned theyr trompettes to cause every man to be armed: and so they dyd, and in good ordre wente towarde the castell to the bastydes, whiche were strongely made, in maner to have endured a ix. or x. yeres; and aboute the bastydes there were dykes, gates, towres, and good walles, all made of grete tymbre. Then the knyghtes and squyers of Englonde, suche as desyred dedes of armes, came to the barryers of the bastides, and there began to skyrmysshe with fervent wyl to wyn the bastydes; and the Bretons, knyghtes and squyers that were within the bastydes were redy to defende them; and to the entente to fyght more at large hande to hande, they dyd put away the barryers of theyr defences, wherin they dyd grete foly, but they trusted to moche in theyr owne chyvalry; there was doone many a goodly feate of armes, and herde rencountrynges, and sore foynynge with speres, and they dyd best that had best breth; howbeit, there were many of the Englysshmen, and therfore they gave the Bretons moche ado. And so by clene force of armes the Englysshmen wanne the baylles, so that within the closure of the towne there were mo then C. men of armes, so that the Bretons were at the poynte to have lost all. And when syr John of Malestroyte and the vycount of Combor sawe the maner, then he cryed his crye, and sayd, What, how

syrs, shall we lose all thus? On forwarde; in fyghtynge we sholde not faynte, but outher dethe or honoure. Then the Bretons closed togyder with grete courage, and pytched theyr speres and glayves in the erthe, and helde strongly theyr place, and fought couragyously; there were many fayre dedes of armes done, so that by force the Englysshemen were fayne to recule backe, for they were soo wel resysted that they coulde gete no grounde on them, so that they were clene beten out of the baylles, and so, as on that day, they coulde not wyn it agayne. And at another corner of theyr bastydes they had a towre of stone descendynge downe from a rocke, whiche the Bretons helde to theyr advauntage for kepynge of theyr bastydes. Therat was made a grete assaulte with archers and other, in the meane season, whyle the other men of armes were fyghtyng at the barryers: and there the Englysshemen passed over a lytell dyke that was there, and so came to the foote of the towre with pycke axes and mattockes in theyr handes, and so began to myne sore the towre; and suche as were within defended themselfe and theyr towre valyauntly, but the Englysshe archers shotte soo hooly togyder, that none durst appere at theyr defence without they were sore pavessed. And the Englysshemen undermyned so sore the foundacyon of the towre, that it rave clene in sondre, and the one parte fel downe; and they that were within, when they sawe it wolde fall, they drewe them all into the parte that stode. Then the Englysshemen made a grete showte, and by that tyme it was late; then they sowned the retrayte, for they sayd they had done ynoughe for that daye. So then the Englysshemen departed, and sayd to the Bretons, Syrs, abyde there al nyght, and make good watche, for to morow we wyll come and loke on you agayne; ye se well ynoughe what case ye be in, there is nothyng before you to shadowe you from us.

CAP. XLVII

Howe the duke of Lancastre assayled the lordes that were before Brest.

The entente of the Englysshemen was the nexte daye to retourne agayne to assayle the bastydes, and to conquere them and all suche as were within them, whiche was ryght well in theyr puyssaunce soo to have done. So thus the Englysshemen passed the nyght. It is often tymes sayd, Moche thynges sholde fall of mennes thoughtes yf there were no countre thoughtes there agaynst. I say it, bycause

CAP. XLVII

Howe the duke of Lancastre assayled the lordes that were before Brest.

thoughe there were in the Englysshe oost subtyll and wyse men of warre, yet the Bretons that were within the bastydes were suffycyently provyded with wysdome, and wel consydered what thynge myght avayle them, and what thynge was for theyr domage; they sawe well they must nedes departe thens, or elles to be taken or slayne; then they determyned to trusse that they myght, and to departe and leve theyr bastyde. As they ordeyned so they dyd, and lepte on theyr horses, and lefte theyr bastydes and toke the feldes, and so toke the way to Hanibont, a iiii. myle thens; they dyd wysely therin, for they feared no pursute of the Englysshemen, bycause theyr horses were not alande. Thus syr John Malestroyte and his company rode the same nyght to Hannybont; they founde it open; then they feared but lytell the Englysshemen. The nexte daye the trōmpettes blewe, and every man in the oost armed hym, and drewe towarde the assaulte of the bastyde: then they herde tydynges how the Bretons were departed, and had lefte the bastyde voyde. Then the Englysshmen repented them in that they had not layde a busshment for them, wherby they sholde not have lost so theyr pray; then they brake downe the bastyde, and set fyre theron. Thus by the duke of Lancastre the bastydes were raysed before Brest; and the same day the duke and syr John Holande, and certayne other lordes, wente to se the castell of Brest, and the ladyes with them, and there they ete and dranke and made chere, and so wente agayne to theyr lodgynges. And the nexte day, whiche was the iii. day, they refresshed theyr shyppes with fresshe water, and the iiii. daye toke shyppynge and so departed.

The fourthe day after, the duke and his company and the maryners toke counsayle togyder, whiche waye they sholde drawe, and whether they sholde take lande at Lyxbone, or at the porte of Portyngale, or in Bysquay, or at Coulongne:[1] and longe they were in counsayle or they were fully determyned. And Alphons Vietat, patron of the galeys of Portyngale, was sente for to them, and the questyon was demaunded of hym: and he answered and sayd, Syrs, for this cause I was sente to you out of Portyngale fro the kynge my mayster; and, syr, knowe for trouthe, that wheresoever

[1] *Corunna.*

CAP. XLVII

Howe the duke of Lancastre assayled the lordes that were before Brest.

ye aryve in his countrey, ye shall be ryght welcome to hym, and it shall be ryght joyfull to hym, for gretely he desyreth your comynge and to se you. So thus the space of an houre they were at a poynte to have landed at the porte of Portyngale a xxx. myle from Lyxbone; howbeit, after, they chaunged theyr purpose, for it was sayd amonge them, that it were ferre more honourable for them to lande in the marches of theyr enemyes then in the lande of theyr frendes, saynge also, that yf theyr enemyes knowe that they be landed on them, they shal be the more feared. Then they rested to take lande at Coulongne in Galyce; the maryners set theyr course that way, and had wynde and wether at wyll; and so after they departed fro Brest, the v. daye they came to the haven of Coulongne and taryed for the fludde, wherfore they sholde not approche nere to the lande.

Nowe shall I shewe you of the knyghtes of Fraunce, as the lorde of Barroys, syr John Braquemont, syr John of Castell Morant, syr Peter of Bellanes, syr Trystram, and other that were come in pylgrymage to the towne of Compostella, where lyeth the body of saynt James. And when they had done theyr pylgrymage, and offered, and were in theyr lodgynges, tydynges came to them howe the Englysshemen were on that coost, and by lykelyhode to aryve at Coulongne or they coulde untrusse theyr harneys and discharge theyr mules. Then they armed them quyckely, and determyned to go thyder to defende the porte, castell, and towne there; and suche as knewe the countrey sayd, Syrs, avaunce forwarde shortely, for yf the Englysshemen happen to wynne the towne or castell of Coulongne, they wyll be lordes of all the countrey aboute. These knyghtes dyd suche dylygence, that they came the same nyght to the towne of Coulongne, whiche was a xiiii. longe myles thens, and a countrey full wylde to laboure in. They came so to the poynte, that they entred into the towne and castell the same season that the Englysshmen came into the haven; and of theyr comynge they of the towne and castell were ryght joyfull, and all that nyght came after them theyr caryages and somers. And in the mornyng it was grete beautye to beholde entrynge into the haven the galeys and shyppes, charged with men and provysyon, and to here the

CAP. XLVII

Howe the duke of Lancastre assayled the lordes that were before Brest.

trompettes and claryons sounde; and the trompettes and claryons of the towne and castell dyd sounde in lyke wyse agaynst them. Then the Englysshemen knew wel that men of warre were in the towne and castel: then they yssued out of theyr galeys and shyppes into the feldes, not as then approchynge the towne, for they sawe well the towne was stronge and well provyded of men of warre: and without the towne there were certayne fissher houses: there the Englysshe lordes made theyr lodgynges, and soo laye styll a iiii. dayes, doynge none other thynge but dyschargynge of theyr shyppes, they had so grete provysyon. And theyr horses were set a lande, whiche had ben on the see a xv. dayes, sore oppressed what with the furoure of the see and with the nombre of people in every shyppe, yet they had ben well kepte, and had haye, ootes, and fresshe water sufficyent. Whan every thynge was voyded out of the galeys and shyppes, then it was demaunded of the duke what he wolde have done with his navey. He answered and sayd, I wyll that all the maryners be payde of theyr wages, and then let every man do his owne profyte; I gyve them good leve, for I wyll that every man do knowe that I wyll never passe agayne the see into Englonde tyll I have my full pleasure of the royalme of Castell, or elles I wyll dye in the quarell. Then the maryners were payde, so that every man was contente, and so departed when they myght out of the haven of Coulongne; and some wente into Portyngale, and some to Lyxbone, and some to Bayon, or to Albay in Bretaygne,[1] or into Englande; soo that none abode there behynde. Thus the duke of Lancastre and his men lodged without Coulongne in suche lytell houses as they founde there, and abrode in the feldes, in bowers made of grene bowes, lyke men of warre.

[1] *ou à le Bay, ou en Bretaigne.*

Aboute the space of a moneth and more the duke laye at Coulongne, and remeved not, without it were a huntynge or a hawkynge, for the duke and other lordes of Englande had brought with them hawkes and houndes for theyr sporte, and sparowe hawkes for the ladyes; also they brought with them in the shyppes mylles to grynde corne and ovyns to bake in: theyr foragers wente dayly a foragynge where as they thought to spede; howbeit, they founde no grete plenty

of forage, for they were lodged in a poore countrey and a deserte, wherfore they were dryven to go ferre of for forage. And also they of the garyson of Coulongne, as the Barroys of Barres, who ryght well coulde take avauntage of his enemyes if nede were, and his other companyons, when they sawe the Englysshe foragers ryde forthe so folysshly, they thought on a daye to be before them, and to make them pay for all they had before. So on a daye they armed them a CC. and rode by guyde in the nyght aboute the woodes and mountaynes, and so at the brekyng of the day they came to a wood and to a mountayne called the Espynet, and there taryed. For it was shewed them howe the Englysshe foragers rode abrode, and true it was, to the nombre of iii. C. And when these foragers had ben abrode a ii. dayes, and gotten moche forage, then they retourned towarde theyr oost, and theyr waye laye to passe the pace of the Pynet. Then they of the busshment brake out on them, and cryed Barroys of Barres. Then the foragers were abasshed, for the moost parte of them were unarmed; they had a syxe score archers, who dyd put themselfe in good ordre of defence, and began to shote, and dyd hurte and wounde men and horses; and when theyr shot was past, they cast away theyr bowes, and fell to other defence with suche wepons as they had, and some hyd them to save themselfe. What sholde I make longe tale of these Englysshe foragers; there were slayne a CC. and the other saved themselfe as wel as they myght in busshes and hedges, where as horsmen coulde not come to them; and suche as fled came to Coulongne, and there shewed how the Barroys of Barres had overthrowen them. Then they of the oost began to styrre and to arme them, and syr Thomas Moreaux, marshal of the oost, with a CCCCC. mounted on theyr horses, with the penon of saynt George, and set forth with grete desyre to fynde the Frensshemen, and rode soo longe that they came to the Espynet, and there they founde theyr men lyenge deed, and no thynge elles, for the Frensshemen were departed; soo they retourned without doynge of ony thyng elles. And when they were within halfe a myle of theyr oost, they sawe where the Frensshmen entred into theyr garyson of Coulongne: wherwith they were sore dyspleased,

CAP. XLVII

Howe the duke of Lancastre assayled the lordes that were before Brest.

CAP. XLVII

Howe the duke of Lancastre assayled the lordes that were before Brest.

but they coulde not amende it. And that day the marshal was sore blamed of some of the oost in that he sente forthe or suffered to go forth ony foragers without sure conduyte, consyderynge theyr enemyes beynge lodged so nere them in a sure holde, and of suche nombre able to overthrowe v. or a vi. C. foragers; the duke of Lancastre and the constable so blamed hym, that he was sore ashamed therof; but he excused hymselfe, and sayd howe they had ben forth more then x. tymes before, and had no hurte. Well, sayd the duke, take better hede another tyme, for a case may fall in an houre or in a daye that peradventure shall not fall agayne in an hundreth dayes.

CAP. XLVIII

Howe the duke of Lancastre and his oost, when they had sojourned a moneth at Coulongne, then they departed and rode towarde saynt James in Galyce.

AND when the duke of Lancastre had sojourned at Coulongne the space of a moneth and more, then he was counsayled to dyslodge themselfe, and to drawe towardes saynt James in Galyce, where was a better countrey and a more plentyfull for men and horses; so he departed and rode in thre batayles; fyrst, the marshal with CCC. speres and vi. C. archers; then the duke, with CCCC. speres, and all the ladyes and damoyselles in his company; and in the arrere garde, the constable syr John Hollande, with a CCCC. speres and vii. C. archers. Thus they rode fayre and easely bytwene Coulongne and saynt James. The countrey of Galyce was sore afrayde of the dukes comynge thyder, for they fered greatly his puyssaunce. The marshall with his vowarde came to Compostella, where the body of saynt James lyeth, and the towne was closed agaynst hym; howbeit, there were no men of warre there in garyson, but men of the towne that kepte it for there were no Frensshmen wolde undertake to kepe the utteraunce, for it was not

stronge ynoughe to be kepte agaynst suche men of warre as the duke had brought thyder. The marshall of the oost sente thyder an heraulde of armes, to knowe theyr ententes what they wolde do: the heraulde came to the barryers, and there founde the capytayne of that warde, called Alphons of Sene.[1] Then the heraulde sayde, Syr capytayne, here a lytel besyde is the duke of Lancastres marshal, who hath sent me hyder, and he wolde gladly speke with you. Wel, sayd the capytayne, it pleseth me wel; let hym come hyder, and we shal speke with hym. The heraulde retourned, and shewed the marshall as they sayd. Then the marshall, with xx. speres with hym, wente thyder, and founde at the barryers the capytayne and certayne of the chefe heedes of the towne; then the marshal lyghted on fote, and iii. with hym, and the lorde Basset and syr Wyllyam Ferinyton. Then the marshall sayd, Ye capytayne and your men, my lorde the duke of Lancastre and my lady, and your lady of Lancastre, doughter to kynge Don Peter, your lorde and kynge, hath sent me hyder to speke with you, to know what ye wyll do or say, outher to receyve them as ye sholde do your soverayne lorde and lady, or elles they to assayle you and take you perforce; and surely knowe for trouth, if ye be taken perforce, al ye within the towne shall suffre dethe with the swerde, to gyve ensample to all other. Syr, sayd the capytayne, we wyl not use us but by reason: we wolde gladly acquyte us to them that we belonge; we knowe ryght well that my lady Constaunce of Lancastre was doughter to kynge Don Petero of Castel, so that if kynge Don Peter had abyden peasybly styl kyng, she had ben then ryghtfull enherytoure of Castell. But the matter chaunged otherwyse, for al the royalme of Castel abode peasybly to kynge Henry his brother, by reason of the batayle that was at Nantuel,[2] so that we al of the countrey sware to holde kynge Henry for our kyng: and he kepte it as longe as he lyved; and also we have sworne to holde kyng John his sone for our kyng. But, syr, shewe us what have they of Coulongne done or sayd to you, for it maye be so, syth ye have lyne there more than a moneth, that they have made some maner of treaty with you. That is true, sayd the marshal, we are at a treaty with them, or elles they had not scaped as they

CAP. XLVIII

Howe the duke of Lancastre and his oost rode towarde saynt James in Galyce.

[1] *Soria.*

[2] *Montiel.*

CAP. XLVIII

Howe the duke of Lancastre and his oost rode towarde saynt James in Galyce.

dyd, and yet the towne of Coulongne is twyse so stronge as is this towne. I shall shew you what treaty they have made with us: the men of the towne have pryvely made a composycyon with us, saynge how they wyll do every thyng accordynge as ye do; but though ye wyll suffre yourselfe to be assayled and dystroyed, yet soo wyll not they do; for yf the countrey of Galyce do yelde them to my lorde the duke and to my lady, they wyll do in lykewyse, and in this we have good pledges and suffycyent. That is well sayd, sayd the capytayne; we in lykewyse wyll holde the same treatye; there be in the royalme many mo good cytees and townes; ryde on forth, and leve us in pease, and we wyll do as they do, and in that we wyl delyver you good pledges and ostages. Nay, syr, not so, sayd the marshall: my lorde the duke nor my lady wyll not suffre that, for they wyl come and lodge here in this towne, and kepe theyr estates as they sholde do in theyr owne herytage; therfore answere us shortely what ye wyll do, outher to yelde, or to be assayled and taken by force and destroyed. Syr, sayd the capytayne, gyve us lytell leysure that we may speke togyder, and we shal answere you shortely. I am contente, sayd the marshall. Then the capytayne entred into the towne, and caused every man to come before hym: then wysely he shewed to them, frome poynte to poynte, as ye have harde before; and fynally they agreed to receyve the duke and the duches peasybly as theyr lorde and lady, and to abyde in theyr towne as longe as it pleased them, without the puyssaunce of kynge John dyd dryve them thens; and also that when they had taryed there as it pleased them a yere or ii. longer or shorter, and that when they departed out of the countrey, without they lefte there a suffycyent garyson to defende them fro theyr enemyes, elles they to rendre it agayne to kynge John or to his marshall, yf they were soo commaunded, and so they to be quyte of theyr faythe and promyse then made. This treatye the marsall, syr Thomas Moreaux, accepted, and sayd, how they sayd as they ought to do, and that the duke and the duches desyred nothynge elles of them. Then the marshall retourned to his men, and so to the duke, who taryed for hym in the feldes; there he shewed the duke this treaty, wherwith the duke was content, and so in

good ordre of batayle the duke rode to the towne of saynt James. CAP. XLVIII

Howe the duke of Lancastre and his oost rode towarde saynt James in Galyce.

Within ii. lytell Frensshe myles of saynt James in Galyce, there came in processyon all the clergy of the towne, with crosses and relykes, and men, women, and chyldren, to mete with the duke and the duches. And the men of the towne brought the keys with them, whiche they presented to the duke and to the duches, with their good wylles by all semblaunt; I can not say if they dyd it with theyr good hartes or no: there they kneled downe, and receyved theyr lorde and lady, and they entred into the towne of saynt James. And the fyrst voyage they made, they wente to the chyrche and all theyr chyldren, and made theyr prayers and offrynge with grete giftes, and it was shewed me that the duke and the duches and theyr ii. doughters, Phylyp and Katheryn, were lodged in an abbay, and there kept theyr house; and that other lordes, as syr John Holande and syr Thomas Moreaux and theyr wyves lodged in the towne, and al other barons and knightes lodged abrode in the felde, in houses, and bowres of bowes, for there were ynowe in the countrey. They founde there flesshe and strong wyne ynough, wherof the Englysshe archers dranke so moche that they were ofte tymes dronken, wherby they had the fevers, or elles in the mornyng theyr hedes were so evyl, that they coulde not helpe themselfe all the day after.

And when the Barroys of Barres and John of Castel Morant, and the other knyghtes and squyers as were in the castel of Coulongne herde how the duke and duches were entred peasybly into saynt James, and that they were there receyved, then they toke counsayle togyder what was best for them to do, and sayd it was but foly to tary there ony lenger; For here we can have no good adventure; let us go to Burgus to the kynge, and se what he wyll do; it can be none otherwyse but that he wyll go agaynst these Englysshmen; for yf he suffre them to lodge thus in rest, by lytell and lytell, they shall conquere and be lordes of Castell; wherfore it is more honourable for us to go thyder then to abyde here. This counsayle they helde for the best; so they made them redy to departe, and trussed that they had, and so yssued out of the castell of Coulongne, and toke

CAP. XLVIII

Howe the duke of Lancastre and his oost rode towarde saynt James in Galyce.

theyr leve of them that they founde there when they entred fyrst; and they toke gydes, suche as knew the countrey, elles they had ben encountred. So they rode thrugh Bysquay, costyng Galyce, and so came to Lyon in Spayne, and as then the kynge and the quene were there. The kynge there welcomed the Frensshe knyghtes, as it was reason, and demaunded of them tydynges; howbeit, he knew ynoughe alredy. They shewed hym how they entred into Coulongne the same tyme that the Englysshmen entred into the haven, and how the Englysshmen founde in the haven vii. galeys and other vesselles of Bysquay, laden with wynes, whiche the Englysshmen had to theyr profyte; the merchauntes had sone solde it. Ye, sayd the kynge, so it goth by the warre; they were not wyse to tary when they knew the army of Englonde on the se; they myght have gone into some other quarter. Syr, sayd the knyghtes, they were come thyder in trust of saufegarde, for they sayd the wynes and other marchaundyse that they had sholde go into Flaundres, for they had herde wel by the maryners of saynt Andrewes that the Englysshmen were on the see, and on the boundes and coost of Bysquay; and true it is, the kynge of Portyngale sent to them galeys and gret shyppes, thynkynge how they wolde have landed at the porte of Portyngale or at Lyxbone, but they dyd the contrary, as it appered, for they entred into Galyce by Coulongne. Well, syrs, sayd the kynge, among you knyghtes of Fraunce, who knoweth more of dedes of armes then men of this countrey, for ye have more haunted and used the warre then they have: how thynke you by the Englysshmen; how have they borne themselfe al this season. Syr, sayd they, they have borne themselfe lyke good men of warre, for they be so close and pryvy, that harde it is to knowe what they entende to do; but supposyng we thynke the duke of Lancastre wyl abyde all this nexte wynter in saynt James towne and his people theraboute, and over rynne the countrey of Galyce, and wyn the small holdes and gete vytayles and provysyons: and tyl somer come by lykelyhode there shall be some treatye made bytwene hym and the kynge of Portyngale, or elles never. There is one poynte that causeth us to byleve that some alyaunces shal be concluded bytwene them, and that is, the

duke hath brought out of Englande with hym al his doughters maryed and to mary; he hath ii. to mary, and we thynke the kyng of Portyngale, your adversary, shal have one of them. Wel, sayd the kyng, what thynge were best for me to do? Syr, sayd the knyght, we shal shew you: cause al your townes and castels on the fronter of Galyce to be wel kepte, suche as be of strength: and suche as be of no strength, cause them to be beten downe: it is shewed us how men of the countrey do fortefy minsters, chyrches, and steples, and bryng into them al theyr goodes. Syr, surely this shal be the losse and confusyon of your royalme; for when the Englysshmen ryde abrode, these small holdes, chyrches, and steples shal holde no while agaynst them, but they shal be refresshed and nourysshed with suche provysyon as they shall fynde in them, whiche shal helpe to further them to wynne all the resydue. Therfore, syr, we say, that and ye do wel, cause al suche holdes to be beten downe now whyle ye have leysure, and make a crye, that without every thyng be avoyded into the good townes and into stronge castelles bytwene this and the feest of All Sayntes, and elles let it be forfayte and abandon it to your men of warre, whosoever can catche it, or at the furthest by the feest of saynt Andrewe: it were better your owne men had the profyte therof rather then your enemyes. And, syr, sende specyally certayne persones of your counsayle to the Frensshe kyng, certefyeng hym what case you and your countrey is in: thus, syr, sende to the kyng and his uncles, the duke of Berrey and the duke of Borgoyne, shewyng them surely that by all lykelyhode in this nexte somer ye shal have the grettest war that ever was made in Spayne, other by the prynce or by ony other. Syr, wryte pyteous letters, desyrynge the kynge and his uncles to comforte you in this your grete nede with some good men of armes, to resyst your enemyes and to kepe and defende your royalme; there is grete alyaunces allredy bytwene the Frensshe kynge and you, and in lykewyse was by hym and your fader; and, syr, surely in no wyse the Frensshe kyng and the noble royalme of Fraunce, whiche may do more in dede then Englande and Portyngale joyned togyder, in this case wyll not fayle you. For when the Frensshe kyng and his counsayle be justly enfourmed of

CAP. XLVIII

Howe the duke of Lancastre and his oost rode towarde saynt James in Galyce.

CAP. XLVIII

Howe the duke of Lancastre and his oost rode towarde saynt James in Galyce.

every thynge, ye shal wel perceyve they wyll take suche regarde therto, that ye shal take but lytel domage by this war; for knightes and squyers of Fraunce desyring to avaunce theyr dedes, with a lytell worde or commaundement, wyll drawe into these partyes to fynde dedes of armes, for as nowe they wote not where to employ theyr tyme better, for Fraunce and Flaunders as now be accorded, whiche hath ben at war a long season, and also there is a truce bytwene Fraunce and Englande as beyonde the ryver of Loyre, to endure to the feest of saynt John Baptyst. Therfore, syr, ye shal se knyghtes and squyers of Fraunce come hyder in good nombres, as well to fynde dedes of armes as to se this countrey and to mete the Englysshmen. But, syr, we counsayle you for your profyte, that al these smal holdes, chyrches, mynsters, and steples abrode in the countrey, let them be put downe, if ye thynke to have joy of the resydue. Then the kyng of Castel sayd, Syrs, ye counsayle me truely, and thus wyll I do fro hens forwarde. Then, without takyng of ony further counsayle, he commaunded al suche holdes as were of no grete strength to be beten downe, and abandoned to the Frensshe knyghtes al that they founde in them, and to se that it were done as they had devysed. Syr, sayd they, that is wel sayd; syr, we shal se it accomplysshed, and shal helpe to save all the resydue. This worde that the kyng of Castel sayd to them of Fraunce, and the auctorite that he gave to them, was wel worth to them CC. M. frankes of profyte, and specyally to them that came fyrst into Castel, when the duke of Lancastre aryved at Coulongne. Thus thrughout al the royalme of Castel al smal holdes, chyrches, and steples, and such as were not sufficyent to be kepte, were put downe, and all the goodes in them abandoned to the men of warre; so the people of the countrey were atrapped and begyled, suche as had fortefyed suche places, and put in them theyr goodes, as wyne, corne, flesshe, and other thinges, thynkyng there to have kepte them sure; but it fell the contrary, for knyghtes and squyers sente thyder theyr men, and toke al, and brought suche provysyon as they founde there to theyr maysters lodgynges. But as for golde and sylver, suche as they founde, and suche money as they made the vylaynes to pay for theyr owne goodes,

that money never came to no knowledge, for that they kepte styll in theyr purses. And some of the poore companyons, suche as were more subtyl then other, moost adventured, and therby wan moost; often tymes, suche as cometh fro theyr owne howses moost porest, in suche cases be sonest mounted on good horses and genettes, v. or vi. in theyr stable, gyrdelles of chaynes of golde and sylver, and a M. or ii. M. frankes in theyr purse; and when they were in theyr owne countrey, were fayne to go afote or on a nagge. Thus the companyons that came fyrst into Castel wan moche ryches, and the poore men of the countrey payde for al, for they were robbed and ryfled with theyr owne men, for they wolde not that theyr enemyes sholde have had ony profyte therof. And when these tydynges came into Fraunce to other companyons how the pore knyghtes and squyers that were gone into Castell were made so ryche, they were the more eger to go out of theyr houses and to draw into Spayne, consideryng how they myght there as well pyll and robbe on theyr frendes as on theyr enemyes.

CAP. XLVIII

Howe the duke of Lancastre and his oost rode towarde saynt James in Galyce.

CAP. XLIX

Of the grete apparell and provysyon that generally was made in the royalme of Fraunce by the kyng there and by his counsayle, for a journey to be made into Englande; and also of the dethe of Frauncis Atreman.

THE Frensshe kyng and his counsayle were wel enfourmed of the voyage that the duke of Lancastre sholde make into Castel, or he departed. For the voyce flewe quyckely that the royalme of Castel sholde have moche ado that somer. And to fynde some remedy ther agaynst, the duke of Burgoyne made so lyghtly peas with the Gauntoyse, to the entente to ayde the necessyte of the kyng of Castel, wherto the Frensshe kyng and the royalme of Fraunce were bounde for dyvers reasons. For by the kyng of Castel, and his men and shyppes on the see, the busynes of the royalme of Fraunce were in good state; and

CAP. XLIX

Of the grete apparell and provysyon that was made in Fraunce for a journey into Englande.

also besyde that, the yonge kynge Charles of Fraunce had grete affeccyon to go with an army into the royalme of Englande: all knyghtes and squyers of Fraunce were well agreed therto, and specyally his uncle the duke of Burgoyne and the constable of Fraunce, for al that he had to his wyfe the syster of kyng Rycharde of Englande, and also the lorde of Coucy. These lordes and the most parte of the chyvalry of Fraunce sayd, Why sholde we not ones go into Englande to se the countrey and the people there, and teche them the way as they have done in Fraunce. And so in the yere of our Lorde M.CCC.lxxx.vi. what to the entente to breke the duke of Lancastres voyage, and to cause hym to retourne out of Castel, and to gyve feare to the Englysshmen, grete ordenaunce for that voyage was made in Fraunce, and taxes and tallages set and assysed in cytees and good townes, and in the playne countrey, that in a C. yere before there was none suche sene, and also grete apparel made by the see al the somer; tyll the moneth of Septembre they dyd no thyng elles on the see coost but grynde corne and bake bysket, and at Tournay, Lysle, Doway, Arras, Amyas, Bethune, Saynt Omers, and in all the townes aboute Sluse; for the Frensshe kynges entencyon and his counsayle was to take the see at Sluse, and so to entre into Englande to distroy the countrey. They that were ryche men in the royalme of Fraunce, to the ayde of this voyage were taxed and tayled to the iii. and iiii. parte of theyr goodes; and many payde more then they were worth besyde, to accomplysshe the payment for men of warre.

Fro Spayne and fro the porte of Syvyll to Pruce there was no grete shyp on the see that the Frensshemen coulde lay theyr handes on, nor under theyr owne obeysaunce, but were reteyned for the Frensshe kynge and his men: provysyon came fro al partyes and aryved in Flaunders, both wyne, salte, flesshe, hay in tonnes, otes, onyons, bysket, floure, egges in pypes, and of al maner of thynges that coulde be devysed; so that in tyme to come it coulde not be byleved but by them that sawe it. Lordes, knyghtes, squyers, and men of war were wryten unto, and desyred to come and serve the kyng in his journey, as out of Savoy, Almayne, and fro the sone goynge downe to the lande of the

erle of Armynacke.[1] And so these lordes of farre countreys, as the erle of Savoy, was reteyned with v. C. speres, also the erle of Armynacke, and the dolphyn of Awvergne. And these lordes, thoughe they were of farre countreys, and knew not what ende this warre sholde come to, yet they made theyr provysyons so grete and costly, that it was gret mervayle to thynke therof, and it was wonder to consyder fro whens all suche provysyon came, what by lande and by see into Flaunders, as to Bruges, to Dan, and to Sluse. And so there was sent for into Holande, Zelande, Meldebourge, Zerechyel,[2] Dourdrest, Stonehone, and to all other townes on the see coost, and to the ryvers entryng into the see for al maner of shyppes that coulde do ony servyce, and al were brought to Sluse; but the Holanders and the Zelanders sayd to them that reteyned them, Yf ye wyl have our servyce, pay us our wages clerely, or elles we wyl go to no parte; so they were payde, wherin they dyd wysely. I trowe, syth God created the worlde, there was never sene so many grete shyppes togyder as was that yere at Sluse and at Blanquerge; for in the moneth of Septembre in the sayd yere they were nombred a xii. C.lxxx.vii. shyppes at Sluse; there mastes semed in the se lyke a grete wood. And the constable of Fraunce shyp was apparelled at Lentregmer[3] in Bretagne; also the constable caused to be made in Bretaygne of tymbre a closure of a towne, or lyke a parke, that when they had taken lande in Englande, to close in theyr felde, to lodge therin more at theyr ease, without waking or skries. And whensoever they sholde remove theyr felde, the closure was so made, that they myght take it a sonder in peces. And a grete nombre of carpenters and other receyved in wages to atende theron. I herde not that the duke of Bretaygne made ony provysyon to go in this journey, nor the duke of Tourayne, the kynges yonger broder, nor the erle of Bloys; al myght not go, for some must abyde behynde, to kepe the royalme.

CAP. XLIX

Of the grete apparell and provysyon that was made in Fraunce for a journey into Englande.

[1] *et sur le soleil couchant jusques en la terre du conte d'Armeignach.*

[2] *Zierickzee.*

[3] *Treguier.*

Who so had ben that season at Bruges, at Dan, or at Sluse, and sene the busynes there in chargynge of shyppes with hay, sackyng of bysket, and ladyng in of onyons, peson, benes, barley, candelles, hosen, shoos, spurres, knyves, daggers, axes of war, axes to hew withal, mattockes, nayles, beddes,

CAP. XLIX

Of the grete apparell and provysyon that was made in Fraunce for a journey into Englande.

couches, horse shoos, pottes, pannes, candelstyckes, and al maner of necessaryes for kechyn, botery, and al other offyces, and of every thyng that coulde be thought of, necessary to serve man and horse; al was had into shyppes in one thyng or other: whosoever had sene it, if he had bene seke, I thynke he wolde clene have forgoten al the payne. The companyons of Fraunce rekened none otherwyse amonge themselfe, when they spake togyder, but that the royalme of Englande sholde clene have ben lost and exyled without recovery, and al the men, women, and chyldren therin slayne and taken and caryed into Fraunce in servytude.

Of this grete apparel thus made to come into Englande, the kyng of Englande and his counsayle were wel enfourmed therof; and it was surely affyrmed that the Frensshmen wolde come thyder, for so they had surely sworne. It was no mervayle, though this grete apparel somwhat at the begynnyng abasshed the Englysshmen; and also the matter was shewed moche more then it was in dede, and also the Englysshmen were in no sure certaynte whether this preparacyon was to come into Englande, or elles to lay syege to Caleys bothe by lande and by see. For the Englysshmen knewe wel, that of all the townes in the worlde, the Frensshmen most desyred to have Caleys; wherfore the kyng of Englande sent to Caleys grete provisyon of whete and other cornes, salte flesshe, fysshe, wyne, bere, and other thynges; and thyder was sent syr Thomas Holande erle of Kente, syr Hughe Caurell,[1] syr Wyllyam Helman,[2] syr Dangouses, syr Water of Vurnes,[3] syr Water Paulle, syr Wyllyam Toucet, syr Loys of Mountalban, syr Colars of Dambrychcourte, and v. C. men of armes, and v. C. archers. And the erle Rycharde of Arundel, and syr Henry Spenser, were ordeyned to kepe the see with xl. grete shyppes wel decked, with men of armes and archers, to the nombre of CCC. men of armes and vi. C. archers.

[1] *Calverley.*
[2] *Elmham.*
[3] *Devereux.*

On the other syde it was sayd in dyvers places in Fraunce, in Haynalte, and in Pycardy, that the Frensshe armye that was thus apparelled in Flaunders, was nother to go into Englande nor to Calays, but rather to retourne al the matter, and set on the towne of Gaunte; and as it was enfourmed, the towne of Gaunte the same season doubted gretely that

CAP. XLIX
Of the grete apparell and provysyon that was made in Fraunce for a journey into Englande.

all that apparell was for to come on them; but they were in a wronge byleve, for the duke of Borgoyne theyr lorde wolde nothyng to them but good rest and peas, thoughe that Frauncis Atreman were slayne anone after the makyng of the peas at Tournay. For of his deth the duke was nothyng to blame, nor the duke had none evyll wyl to hym, though in the season of war he dyd many feates of armes for the towne agaynst the duke, as it hath ben declared more playnly here before; for though he came to an evyl ende, it was his owne defaulte. For if he had byleved Peter du Boys, it had ben otherwyse with hym. For when the peas was made bytwene the duke of Borgoyne and them of Gaunt, when he retourned fro Tournay to Gaunt, and that Peter du Boys made hym redy to go into Englande with syr John Bourser, then Peter sayd to hym, Frauncis, what wyll ye do; wyll ye go into Englande with us. Then he sayd he wolde abyde styll in Gaunt. Why, sayd Peter, thynke you to abyde here in peas; there is grete hatred agaynst you and me; I wyll abyde for nothynge here; it is not to tryst in the comontye; ye have herde how they of Gaunt slue and murdred the valyaunt Jaques of Artvell, who had done so moche good to the towne bothe in counsayle and in armes: and for a lytell cause the vyllaynes slue hym, and the honest men of the towne dyd not save hym, but rather dyssymuled and was glad of his dethe: in lykewyse, Frauncis, wyll they do with you and me yf I abyde here; but as for me, I wyll not tary; therfore adue.

Why, sayd Frauncis, the duke of Borgoyne hath pardoned all thynges, and hath reteyned me, yf I wyll, to go with hym, to be as a squyer of his stable, with iiii. horses; and he, and also syr Guy of Tremoyll, sheweth me grete sygne of love. In the name of God, sayd Peter du Boys, I speke not of my lorde the duke of Borgoyne, nor of his knyghtes; I thynke they wyll kepe well the peas; but I speke of the comons of Gaunt; there be some that ye have not alwayes pleased; remembre ye not of the lorde of Sargelles,[1] whom ye made to be slayne, and other. Knowe for trouth, that these passed hatredes wyl contynue in theyr hartes yf ye abyde amonge them; yet it were better for you to go and dwell with the duke of Borgoyne. Well, sayd Frauncis, I

[1] *Herzeele.*

CAP. XLIX
Of the grete apparell and provysyon that was made in Fraunce for a journey into Englande.

shall take advyse; but into Englande I wyl not go. Thus Frauncis Atreman abode styll, and Peter du Boys wente with syr John Bourser. And anone after that, the peas was cryed and publysshed in all the partyes of Flaunders. Then there was made a crye that none sholde bere ony armure or sworde after hym: and Frauncis Atreman, who was styll in Gaunt, and had kepte a grete estate the warre durynge, thought to contynue somwhat his honestye; ever where he went he had a iii. or iiii. servauntes waytynge on hym, armed and beryng swordes and other wepons on them. And when this crye was made in the dukes name, he thought it sholde not rynne on hym nor none of his servauntes, he thought hymselfe soo well in favoure with them of the towne. But he was deceyved, for within a vii. or viii. dayes after the cry was proclamed the dukes baylyffe came personally to hym and sayd, Frauncis, ye put my lorde the dukes offycers in grete suspecte; why do you go aboute in the towne in harneys, and your servauntes, beryng swordes and wepons of defence, as thoughe it were in the tyme of war, whiche pleaseth not us; wherfore we commaunde you in the dukes name to lay them downe. Frauncis, who thought none evyll in that he dyd, but to maynteyne his estate, answered and sayd, Syr baylyffe, I wyll obey as it is reason, and I thanke God I hate no persone, nor wolde not that ony sholde have ony hurte for my sake; howbeit, I had thought to have had that advauntage in the towne of Gaunt, that I myght have had my servauntes were theyr swordes after me. Nay, sayd the baylyffe, not so; for suche of the towne as ye have done servyce unto speke ther agaynste, and have mervayle therof, and demaunde of me why I do suffre it: they saye it semeth that I wolde renewe agayne the olde warre, whiche they wyll not suffre; wherfore, Frauncis, I pray you do so that I here no more therof; for yf ye will not obey, I must repute you as an enemy to my lorde the duke and to my lady of Borgoyne. And so the baylyffe departed fro hym; and Frauncis wente to his lodgynge, and caused his servauntes to lay downe all theyr armure, and so entred into suche a fantasye, that moost parte after he wente in the towne all alone, or but one with hym, chylde or servaunt. So it was on a daye there was a feest kepte without the towne of Gaunt, in the

abbey of saynt Peters, and Frauncis Atreman wente thyder, and but one servaunt with hym, without armure or wepyn. He was spyed and poursued with a bastarde sone of the lorde of Harzelles, whom he had caused to be slayne before; wherfore then his sone thought to be revenged of his faders deth. This bastarde was provyded for the matter, and poursued Frauncis tyl he came out of the towne and farre fro ony company, and cryed on hym and sayd, A, thou Frauncis Atreman, thou shalte dye; thou caused my fader to be slayne, and I shall slee the. And as Frauncis tourned hym, the bastarde strake hym on the heed with his sworde so weyghty a stroke, that he clave his heed to the tethe, and so fell downe deed to the erthe; and the bastarde wente his way fayre and easely, no man poursued hym. So this Frauncis Atreman was wel worthy to dye, in that he wolde not byleve Peter du Boys. And when tydynges came into Englande, and that Peter du Boys knew therof, he toke but smal thought for hym, and sayd, Or I departed fro Gaunt I well advysed hym; let us se nowe who wyll amende it; not they that duryng the warre dyd gretely honoure hym: for suche doubtes I byleved syr John Bourser, and came into Englande.

CAP. XLIX
Of the grete apparell and provysyon that was made in Fraunce for a journey into Englande.

Nowe let us retourne to the provisyons that were made at this season at Dan and at Sluse. It is not had in remembraunce of man, nor by wrytynge, never none lyke sene nor herde of. Golde and sylver was no more spared then thoughe it had rayned out of the clowdes, or scomed out of the see. The grete lordes of Fraunce sent theyr servauntes to Sluse, to apparell and make redy theyr provysyons and shyppes, and to furnysshe them of every thynge nedeful; the kynge hymselfe, as yonge as he was, had more wyl to this journey then ony other, and that he alwayes shewed to the ende therof. Every man helped to make provysyon for other, and to garnysshe theyr shyppes, and to paynte them with theyr armes; paynters had as then a good season, for they wan and had whatsoever they desyred, and yet there coulde not ynow be goten for money. They made baners, penons, standerdes of sylke, soo goodly, that it was mervayle to beholde them; also they paynted theyr mastes of theyr shippes, fro the one ende to the other, glyteryng with golde

CAP. XLIX
Of the grete apparell and provysyon that was made in Fraunce for a journey into Englande.

and devyses and armes. And specyally it was shewed me, that the lorde Guy of Tremoyle garnysshed his shyp rychely; the paynt'ynges that were made cost more than ii. M. frankes; whatsoever ony lorde coulde devyse for theyr pleasure made in shyppes. And the pore people of the royalme payed for al, for the tallages were there so grete to fournysshe this voyage, that they that were most ryche sorewed for it, and the poore fled for it.

All that ever was done in Fraunce, in Flaunders, and other places for this voyage was wel knowen in Englande, and it was made moche gretter then it was in dede; wherof the people in dyvers places of the royalme were sore abasshed. And there were made generall processyons in every good towne and cyte by prelates and men of the chyrche iii. tymes every weke, whiche were made in grete devocyon with the hartes with holy prayers and orysons to God to delyver them fro that peryll. Howbeit, there were in Englande a C. M. that desyred hartely that the Frensshmen myght come and aryve in Englande; and suche lyght companyons, in comfortynge of themselfe and of them that were abasshed, sayd, Let these Frensshmen come; there shall not one tayle of them retourne agayne into Fraunce. And suche persons as were in det, and cared not for the payment therof, were gretely rejoysed of the comynge of the Frensshmen, and wolde say to theyr credytours, when they demaunded theyr det, Syrs, holde you styll, they forge in Fraunce new floreyns, wherwith ye shall be payde; and in the trust therof they lyved and spente largely. And when they myght not be trusted, they wolde say, What wolde ye have of us; it were better for you that we sholde spende frely the goodes of this royalme, rather then the Frensshmen sholde fynde it and have it. And so by that meanes there was spente in outrage in Englande a M. pounde sterlynge.

In this season the kyng of Englande was in the marches of Walles, and with hym the erle of Oxenforde, by whom every thynge was done in Englande, and without hym nothyng done. And chefe of the kynges counsayle were syr Symon Burle, syr Nicholas Braule,[1] syr Robert Tavylyon, syr Robert[2] Beauchamp, syr John Salwen,[3] and syr Mychel de la Polle; and also there was named the bysshop of Nor-

[1] *Brembre.*
[2] *John.*
[3] *Salisbury.*

wyche and syr Wyllyam Nevell, broder to the lorde Nevel. Al these, as it was sayd, dyd with the kyng what they lyst; as for the kynges uncles, the erle of Cambrydge and the erle of Buckyngham coulde do nothyng without it were agreable to the other before sayd. And this trouble and difference amonge themselfe was well knowen in Fraunce, whiche gretly avaunced theyr journey; they wolde have had the duke of Lancastre to have withdrawen his journey out of Castell, but he toke no hede therof to let his voyage. When the lordes of Englande and the prelates and the people of the good townes and cytees and comons of the royalme were justly and credybly enfourmed how the Frensshe kyng was redy to come into Englande to dystroy it, then they drew togider to counsayle; then the kyng was wryten unto by his uncles, that he sholde come to London, certefyeng hym how the comons of his royalme were not content with hym nor his counsayle. The kyng and his counsayle wolde not refuse the goynge thyder, but so departed fro the marches of Wales, where they had ben long and the quene also, and so came to Wyndesore, and there taryed a certayne dayes. And then the kyng lefte there the quene, and so went to Westmynstre to his palace and there taryed; and thyder came to hym al suche as had to do, and there they toke counsayle how they sholde be demeaned agaynst this journey of the Frensshe kyng. Then the erle of Salysbury, who was a ryght valyaunt and prudent knyght, sayd before the kyng and his uncles, and before al the prelates and lordes of Englande that were there present, Syr, my soverayn lorde, and al ye my lordes and other, it ought not to be mervayled if our adversary the Frensshe kyng wyll come and ryn upon us; for syth the deth of the last noble and puyssaunt kyng Edward, of noble memory, this royalme here hath ben in gret adventure to have ben lost and dystroyed with the vyllaynes of the same; and also it is well knowen in Fraunce how we be not al of one accorde; wherfore this trouble appereth, the whiche is not lytel, for he is but a foole that fereth not his enemyes. And as longe as the royalme of Englande was in unyte, the kyng with his people and they with hym, then we prospered and reygned vyctoryously, nor we sawe nor founde none that dyd us ony grete wronge;

CAP. XLIX

Of the grete apparell and provysyon that was made in Fraunce for a journey into Englande.

CAP. XLIX

Of the grete apparell and provysyon that was made in Fraunce for a journey into Englande.

wherfore it is now nedeful, never more nede appered in Englande, that we conferme ourselfe to rest [in] love and unyte, if we thynke to come to ony honour; and that we ordeyne at the portes and havens of Englande suche provysyon and defence that our countrey receyve no blame nor domage. This noble royalme of Englande hath ben a longe season in tryumphaunt floure, and every man knoweth well a thynge that is in floure hath more nede to be wel kepte then when it is tourned to parfyte fruyte; therfore we ought to se and consyder how this royalme is in his flourysshynge floure, for within this lx. yeres knyghtes and squyers therof, bothe within the royalme and without, have had more honoure then ony other nacyon; therfore let us put to our paynes that as long as we lyve we may kepe this honour. Then every man sayd, that it were good that it were so.

The erle of Salysburies wordes were wel herde and accepted as the wordes and counsayle of a noble, valyaunt, and sage knyght. All that was sayd by hym, and devysed among them, I wyl not long rest theron, for I thynke not to know al: but I know wel that the towne of Caleys was kepte as I sayd before. And they ordeyned to kepe the havyns and portes where as they supposed that the Frensshmen wolde aryve; the erle of Salysbury, bycause parte of his lande marched nere to the yle of Wyght, whiche is ryght over agaynst Normandy and the countrey of Caulx; therfore he was set there with his men and archers of the countrey; and the erle of Devynshyre to be at Hampton with CC. men of armes and vi. C. archers to kepe the havyn; the erle of Northumbrelande at Rye with CC. men of armes and vi. C. archers; the erle of Cambrydge at Dover with v. C. men of armes and xii. C. archers; and his broder, the erle of Buckyngham, at Sandwyche with vi. C. men of armes and xii. C. archers; the erle of Stafforde and the erle of Penbroke were sent to Orwel havyn with v. C. men of armes and xii. C. archers; and syr Henry Percy and Faulx[1] Percy were at Yarmouth with iii. C. men of armes and vi. C. archers; and syr Symon Burle was capytayne of Dover castel. Al the havyns and portes bytwene the ryver of Humbre and Cornewal were refresshed with men of war and archers. And on the mountaynes and hylles costyng the see on the

[1] *Ralph.*

fronters agaynst Flaunders and Fraunce were set watche men and watchers in dyvers maners, I can not tell how; they had empty pypes, fylled with sande, one set on another, and on the hyght of them were places for men to syt on, whiche nyght and day kepte watche lokynge into the see. And they were charged, that yf they saw the Frensshe navy aproche towarde the lande, then to make fyers alofte on the hylles to styre the countrey to drawe to that coost where the fyers apered. And it was ordeyned that they sholde suffre the Frensshe kyng peasybly to take lande and al his, and to suffre hym to entre into the lande a iii. or iiii. days, and so then fyrst to go to the see where he landed, and to fyght with the shyppes and to wyn them yf they colde, to dystroy them, and take al theyr provysyon, and then to folow the Frensshmen, not incontynent to fyght with them, but to hary them, and to kepe them wakynge, and to kepe them fro goynge a foragynge, and to dystroy them all that were abrode in the countrey, so that therby they sholde famysshe them. This was the opynyon and counsayle in Englande. And Rochestre brydge was broken, where is a grete ryver rynnynge fro Arundel into the countye of Essex, and entreth into the see and into Tamyse agaynst the yle of Tenet; this brydge they of London bet downe, to be the more surer. And whereas taxes and tallages were grete in Fraunce on the men of the townes, in lykewyse they were grete that season in Englande, so that the royalme sorowed it a grete season after; but they were glad to pay the sowdyours, to be therby defended. There were redy in Englande a C. M. archers and a x. M. men of armes, besyde the grete company that the duke of Lancastre had into Castel, of whom now we wyll speke somewhat, and shew of the aquayntaunce that was bytwene hym and the kyng of Portyngale, and then I shal retourne to speke agayne of Englande, for that matter requyreth to speke as wel of the one as of the other.

CAP. XLIX

Of the grete apparell and provysyon that was made in Fraunce for a journey into Englande.

CAP. L

How the kyng of Portyngale wrote amyably to the duke of Lancastre, when he knew that he was aryved at saynt James in Galyce; and of the socours that the kyng of Castel sent for into Fraunce; and how the towne of Ruelles in Galyce was taken by the Englysshemen.

YE have herde before in this hystory how the duke of Lancastre, with a fayre company of men of armes and archers, were aryved at Coulongne in Galyce; and how by composycyon the towne, not the castel, was yelden to hym: thus they sayd they wolde do as other townes in Galyce dyd, and so therby they were not assayled. And then the duke, his wyfe, and chyldren came to the towne of saynt James, called Compostella, and there laye, and was in purpose to do tyl he herde other tydynges fro the kyng of Portyngale, who knewe of a surty that the duke was at saynt James, wherof he had grete joy, thynkyng that bytwene them they sholde make a goodly war into Castel. Then he wrote letters ryght amyably with grete salutacyons, and sent them by certayne messagers to the duke and the duches, who receyved the letters ryght joyously, for the duke knew wel he sholde have gret nede of the kynge of Portyngale: for without hym or his comforte he saw well he sholde make but smal spede in his busynes in Portyngale or in Castel. Then the duke gave to the messagers grete gyftes, and wrote agayne letters with grete salutacyons and amytyes to the kyng of Portyngale, certefyeng hym in his letters that he desyred gretely to se and speke with hym. Thus in the meane season that letters and messagers wente bytwene the kyng of Portyngale and the duke of Lancastre, the tyme passed, and kyng John of Castel fortefyed hym in al that he myght, and sent often into Fraunce letters and messagers, desyrying to have ayde of men of war to defende and kepe his royalme of Castel: sayng, that in the somer folowyng he thought he sholde have grete war, bycause the

CAP. L

How the kyng of Portyngale wrote amyably to the duke of Lancastre.

kynge of Portyngale and the Englysshmen were joyned togyder in alyaunce, wherby they sholde be stronge ynoughe to over ryn the royalme of Castel, without they were withstanded. The Frensshe kyng and his counsayle wrote agayne to the kynge of Castel, byddyng hym to take no thought nor doubte, for within the moneth of January he wolde gyve Englande so moche a do, that they sholde not know what to do: saynge, that when they had dystroyed al Englande, then in the somer they wolde take the see agayne, and so passe into Galyce and into Portyngale, and that if the Englysshmen there and the Portyngales kept the felde, they wolde cause them to flee, so that within a yere they wolde make an ende of al the warres. So the kyng of Castel contented hymselfe with this answere, for he saw wel he coulde have none other as at that tyme. So there came none out of Fraunce to hym but suche as were there before, for al knyghtes and squyers farre and nere wente to Parys and into Pycardy, and so to Lysle, to Doway, and to Tournay; that countrey, iiii. myle of length, was ful of men of warre; the nombre was so grete, that suche as had the rule of the navy sayd that they coulde not passe at the fyrst passage but xl. M. men. Then it was ordeyned and advysed, that they sholde suffre no man passe without he were a propre man of armes, and that every knyght sholde have but one varlet, and a baron ii. squyers, and that no horse sholde passe but all onely for the lordes. And to execute this, there were men set at Sluse to se that none other sholde passe. Howbeit, there were such a nombre of rascalles in Flaundres and theraboute, that they ete up al in the countrey; and the pore men of the countrey payde for all theyr charges, for they durst not speke agaynst them; they were worse to the countrey then yf Englysshmen theyr enemyes had lyen there. And it was grete doubte that the kynge and the lordes ones passed over into Englande, and suche people to abyde behynde, lest they assembled togyder and dystroy al; and surely so they had done, if the journey had done amysse. Now let us retourne to the duke of Lancastre.

In the meane season, whyle the duke of Lancastre, the duches, and his chyldren, with his company, lay at saynt

CAP. L

How the kyng of Portyngale wrote amyably to the duke of Lancastre.

James, knyghtes and squyers of his company lyved at adventure where they might catche it. And on a day syr Thomas Moreaulx, marshal of the oost, and with hym syr Mauburne of Luners, syr John Dambrychcourte, Tyrry and Wyllyam of Sonnayne, and a CC. speres and v. C. archers, rode forth into Galyce, and so came to a walled towne, a vii. myles fro saynt James, called Ruelles.[1] For the vylaynes that dwelte therin wolde not tourne to the duke, but were rebell, and had often tymes overthrowen of the dukes foragers as they passed by the barryers of theyr towne, for they had broken so the wayes, that they coulde not repasse none other way but by theyr barryers; and when they sawe a vauntage, they wolde yssue out lyke theves and dystroy foragers or other that passed by; wherof the complayntes came to the marshal, that he sholde provyde some remedy acordyng to his offyce, wherfore he came before this towne of Ruelles. The watche of the towne had wel blowen theyr comyng, wherby they within closed fast theyr barryers and gates, so that none abode without, and so mounted upon the walles. The marshal, when he saw theyr demeanyng, saw well they wolde abyde the saulte; then he sayd to syr John Dambrychcourte and to Tyrry of Sonnayne, Syrs, take your horses, and ryde aboute the towne, and beholde wel where we may best assayle the towne with leest hurtynge of our men. So they mounted on theyr horses, and rode aboute the towne; it was of no grete cyrcute, wherfore they retourned agayne the soner, and had wel advysed every place, and so came to the marshal, and sayd, Syr, in all this towne there is but ii. gates, the one here before you, and the other ryght over agaynst it; syr, we thynke these ii. places are most easy for us to gyve ony assaulte, for rounde aboute the towne elles are grete dykes and depe, ryght evyll to go downe, and worse to mounte up agayne, for hedges and busshes of thorne that growe therin. I byleve it well, sayd the marshal: you, syr Mauburne, shal have a certayne company with you, and go to the other gate, and I shall abyde here, and let us give assaulte both at ones; I wote not what shal come to us; but gladly I wolde se yonder vyllaynes that are lenynge on the batylmentes of the walles of theyr towne; they loke on us to se what we wyll do; they are

[1] *Roales.*

lyke apes etynge of peres, and chyldren wolde take it fro them.

CAP. L

How the kyng of Portyngale wrote amyably to the duke of Lancastre.

Of the marshalles wordes his company laughed and loked up to the walles to beholde the vyllaynes. Then syr Maulburyne wente forth with his penon, and with hym C. speres and iii. C. archers, and wente to the gate and there taryed. So then anone the assaulte began in ii. partes right sharpe and fyers, and the men within the towne were over the gates, and threwe downe dartes so fyersly that it troubled the archers and crosbowes; but they hurte many of them with theyr shot, bycause there were none at the barriers to defende them, for they were al closed within the towne, and defended themselfe with shot and cast of dartes. So the Englisshmen brake up the barryers and came to the gate, and bet and rushed so therat, that they made the gate to trymble and shake. When they within saw theyr gates lykely to be broken up, they went downe fro the walles into the strete, and bare grete tymbre and wood to the gates. Then women, chyldren, and al maner of people bare stones and fylled empty tonnes and pypes, and set them agaynst theyr gates, and so set other above on them, and fylled them in lykewyse one upon another; and some were styll over the gates, and dyd cast downe grete barres of yron, so that none durst aproche nere the gate without he wolde be slayne. Thus the vylaynes of Ruel kepte theyr towne agaynst the Englysshmen, so that they lost but lytell that day. And so the Englysshmen retourned backe a longe myle of that countrey to a towne where was no persone abydynge, and there they lodged tyll the nexte mornyng. That nyght the men of Ruelles counsayled togyder, to know what they sholde do, and how they sholde maynteyne themselfe agaynst the Englysshmen; and they sent out theyr spyes to se where the Englysshmen were: suche as were sent forthe retourned agayne, and reported surely howe they were lodged at the bace towne of Fenace,[1] and that by al symylytude they wolde retourne agayne to the assaulte the nexte mornyng. Then they sayd among themselfe, Foly it was to begyn, and more foly to contynewe; we can have no blame though we yelde us to the duke of Lancastre or to his marshall, for we have defended our towne an hole daye amonge ourselfe, without counsayle or comforte of ony gentyll man or ony

[1] *La Bañeza.*

CAP. L

How the kyng of Portyngale wrote amyably to the duke of Lancastre.

man of warre, and at lengthe we can not endure agaynst them. Now, syth they know the waye thyder, and what we can do, it were better for us to yelde then to be ony more assayled; for if we be taken perforce, we shal lese our bodyes and goodes. So they were al of this opynyon, that yf the Englysshemen retourned the next day, they wolde treate with them, and yelde up theyr towne, theyr lyves and goodes saved.

The Englysshmen in the mornynge retourned, anone upon the sone rysynge, to go to the saulte. When they of the towne sawe that, they sent out iiii. of theyr men to make theyr treaty; and, as the marshal rode under his penon, he saw in the felde these iiii. men, and sayd, Yonder I thynke be of the men of Ruelles, comynge to speke with us; brynge them hyder. And when they were come before the marshal, they kneled downe, and sayd, Syr, the men of the towne of Ruelles have sent us hider to speke with you; pleaseth it you to here us. Yes, sayd the marshal, say what ye wyl. Syr, sayd they, we are redy to put you in possession of the towne of Ruelles, so that you wyl save our lyves and goodes, and we wyll accepte my lorde the duke of Lancastre and my lady the duches for our lorde and lady, in lyke maner as they of Coulongne and saynt James have done. Wel, sayd the marshal, I am content, and wyl assure you[1] of your provysyon, for it behoveth our men to lyve. Syr, sayd they, that is but ryght; there is provysyon ynough in this countrey: syr, pleseth you to tary here a lytell, and we shal retourne into the towne, and shewe what you have sayd; and, syr, we tryst ye wyll upholde this covenaunt. Ye, truely, sayd the marshall; therfore retourne agayne brevely. So they retourned to theyr towne, and shewed howe they had spoken with the dukes marshal, and how they had made with hym suche a treaty, that they sholde be in saufegarde of theyr bodyes and goodes, excepte vytayles. Then they of the towne sayd, God graunt it so to be. Then they dyd rydde theyr gates of the tonnes with stones and tymbre that they had set there, and opened the gate wyde, and so came to the barryers with the keyes in their handes, sayng, Syr, we know wel ye be hider sent fro my lorde the duke of Lancastre and fro my lady his wyfe; syr, we rendre to you the keyes of this towne,

[1] *mais je ne vous asseure.*

and put you in possyssyon therof on suche condycyons as our men have made reporte to us. On the same condycyon, sayd the marshal, I receyve it: so he entred into the towne, and he and all his men lodged here and there at theyr pleasure, and there taryed al a day. And or he departed, he sayd to syr Maulburyn, Syr, I delyver you this towne for you and your company; ye shal have here a fayre garyson. Syr, sayd he, that is true; and I take it with a good wyll, for the garyson pleaseth me well. Then syr Maulburyn of Luners abode in the garyson of Ruelles in Galyce, and had under hym a lx. speres and a C. archers; and syr Thomas Moreaulx retourned to the duke and to the duches to saynt James.

CAP. L

How the kyng of Portyngale wrote amyably to the duke of Lancastre.

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope,[1] in Galyce, whiche yelded by composycyon; and of the ambassadours that the duke sente to the kynge of Portyngale.

[1] *Vyeclope* P.

ANONE after that the marshal was retourned fro the towne of Ruelles, on a daye he rode forthe agayne with a iii. C. speres, and a vi. C. archers, and so rode a longe dayes journey and came to a towne called Vyleclope[2] whiche was kepte but by suche villaynes as dwelte in it. Then the marshal caused the towne to be avewed, to se if it were pregnable or not. And when they had wel advysed it, they sayd it myght be wel won by assaulte. Then they lyghted on fote, and sent theyr horses backe by theyr varlettes, and devyded themselfe in iiii. partes, and made themselfe redy lyke men of warre; syr Thomas Moreaulx had the guydynge of one company; the seconde had syr Yon Fytzwaren;[3] the thyrde syr John Dambrychcourte; and the fourthe had another knyght: and every partye had fourescore men of armes, and a vii. score archers. Then they approched to the towne, and wente downe into the dykes, for therin was no water, and then mounted up agayne on the other syde well pavessed, and the archers stode on

[2] *Villalobos.*

[3] *Fythwaren* P.

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

the syde of the dyke, and shot so fyersly that none durst appere at theyr defence; howbeit, for all theyr shot, they within defended themselfe valyauntly, for they were a grete nombre within: they cast out dartes with longe fethers and sharpe heddes, so rudely that who so ever was fully stryken with them, without they were well armed, they were outher slayne or sore hurte. Howbeit, knyghtes and squyers to avaunce themselfe came to the fote of the walles, for al the stones that fel on theyr basenettes, and on theyr bodyes; and the ii. squyers of Haynalte, Tyrrye, and Gyllyam of Somayne, dyd dyvers goodly fetes of armes, and made a grete hole thrughe the wall with suche helpe as they hadde, and fought sore hande to hande with them within; and these ii. bretherne wan a vii. dartes that were cast at them thrughe the hole: they pulled them out of theyr enemyes handes: these ii. brotherne were under the standarde of the lorde Fytzwaren. On the other parte, syr John Dambrychcourte shewed valyauntnes lyke a noble knyght, and he had at the foote of the walle his penon pytched in the erthe by hym, and he had a pykeaxe in his hande, and myned therwith to the best of his power to breke the wall. It ought to be mervayled howe these vylaynes were not abasshed to se themselfe soo assayled on al partes; howbeit, they coulde not so longe endure, but that they had many handes to defende themselfe withal: but at the last they advysed them, when they sawe that the assaulte seased not, to yelde themselfe. Then the baylyffe of the towne who had caused them so longe to contynue, came and sayd to the marshall, Syr, cause your assaulte to sease, for the men of this towne wyll treate with you. Well, sayd the marshall, I am contente. Then he caused an heraulde to ryde aboute the towne, who sayd to every man, Syrs, sease your assaulte tyl ye here the marshalles trompet blowe agayne to the assaulte, for he is in treaty with them of the towne. And with those wordes they seased and rested them, and some of them had nede therof, for they were very wery with assaylynge. Then they of the towne entred into theyr treaty, and sayd, howe they wolde yelde themselfe, lyves and goodes saved, as they of other townes had done in Galyce. Naye, sayd the marshall, ye shall not scape so good chepe as other have done,

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

for ye have put us in moche payne, and hurte dyvers of our men, and we se clerely that ye can not longe endure agaynst us; wherfore it must behove you to bye your pease and our love, or elles we wyll retourne agayne to the assaulte, and wynne you perforce. Why syr, sayd the baylyffe, what raunsome wyl ye aske of us. In Goddes name, sayd the marshall, x. M. frankes. Ye aske to grete a some syr, sayd the baylyffe: I shal, yf it please you, cause you to have ii. M. frankes, for, syr, this towne is but poore, and hathe ben sore charged with taxes. Nay, sayd the marshal, we wyl not of that, we wyl gyve you respyte to take counsayle togyder, for as for iii. or iiii. M. frankes ye shall not scape, for al is ours yf we lyst, and also I am blamed of my company to make ony treaty with you; therfore shortely determyne you, outher to do it or to leve it. Then the baylyffe wente into the towne, and called every man before hym, and sayd, Syrs, what wyll ye do; if we suffre ony mo assautes, the Englysshemen wyll conquere us perforce, so we shall all dye and lese al our goodes; they demaunded of us x. M. frankes, and I have offred them ii. M. I knowe well it is over lytell, for they wyl never agree therto, therfore we must exalte the raunsome a ii. or iii. M. frankes more. Then they of the towne, who doubted to lose all that they had, and theyr lyves also, sayd, Baylyffe, forsake not to marchaundyse with them, for rather then we wyl be ony more assayled, we wyl pay iiii. M. frankes. Than sayd the baylyffe, That is well sayd, yet I wyll treate with them. Then he came agayne to the marshall, and as I understande theyr pease was made by paynge of vi. M. frankes. Then the gates were set open, and every man entred, and were lodged where they lyst, and taryed there ii. dayes; and the marshall delyvered the towne to Yon Fytzwaren, with CC. speres, and CCCC. archers; and there he lay in garyson more then viii. monethes. But the raunsome of the towne wente to the duke of Lancasters profyte; and the marshall had a M. frankes.

And after that the towne of Vyleclope was yelden up to the dukes marshall, then he retourned to saynt James to the duke, for the duke wolde have hym aboute hym, and sometyme he rode to the fronters of Castell, and Spayne,

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

to gyve fere to the Frensshemen. But as longe as the Englysshemen kepte the felde in Galyce, there were none that came agaynst them, for the kynge of Castell was counsayled not to ryde forth with ony oost, but to kepe warre by garysons, and to abyde for socours out of Fraunce. Then the duke of Lancastre was counsayled, and it was sayd to hym, how that it were good that he and the kynge of Portyngale myght speke togyder; sayenge also, Syr, the wrytynge that rynneth thus bytwene you is good, but that is not ynoughe, for the Frensshemen be subtyle, and se ferther in theyr busynes then ony other people, yf covertly they happen to make a treaty with the kynge of Portyngale; and also, the kynge of Castell hathe aboute hym and of his counsayle dyvers lordes in Portyngale, as we be infourmed, and so peradventure by theyr meanes they myght make a pease by mariage or otherwyse, so that then by hym ye sholde have noo comforte; what sholde fall then? Ye sholde be then in worse case then ever ye were, for then the Castellyans wolde set lytell by us; the Castellyans are the moost subtylest people of the worlde: trowe you that the kynge of Portyngale wolde not be contente to be at rest of this busynes, yf the kynge of Castell wolde suffre hym to be kynge of Portyngale all his lyfe, and after hym the kyng of Castel. Syr, it is to be doubted thoughe he have sente for you, and so or ye coulde tourne backe agayne we myght be overthrowen. And also, syr, ye know the state of Englande, whiche hath as nowe ynoughe to doo to kepe themselfe agaynst theyr enemyes as wel Frensshemen as Skottes: therfore make as good warr as ye can with suche people as ye have, for trust not of no comforte nor ayde out of Englande, outher of men of armes or archers, for surely ye are not lyke to have ony. Ye were two yeres aboute, to gete that ye have; the kynge your nephewe seeth not all thynges, he is yonge and byleveth yong counsayle, wherby the royalme of Englande lyeth and is in peryll and grete adventure. Wherfore, syr, approche as soone as ye can to the kynge of Portyngale, and speke with hym; your worde shall do you more profyte then all the letters ye can wryte in iiii. monethes. The duke of Lancastre noted well these wordes, and knew wel that it was

truely counsayled; then the duke sayd to them that gave hym that counsayle, What wyll you that I sholde do. They answered and sayd, Syr, sende to the kynge of Portyngale v. or vi. of your knyghtes, and at the leest a baron, and let them shewe the kynge howe ye have grete desyre to se hym; let them be wyse that ye sende, and let them fynde the meanes that ye maye speke togyder shortly. I am content, sayd the duke. Then there was sente into Portyngale fro the duke, the lorde Poynynges, a grete baron of Englande, and syr John Abruell, syr John Dambrychcourte, and syr John Souster, bastarde brother[1] to syr John Holande constable of the oost; these departed fro saynt James with a C. speres, and CC. archers.

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

[1] *brethren* P.

And on a day, when al these letters were made and sealed, there came to the duke fro the kynge of Portyngale, a knyght and a squyer, with xii. speres, called syr Vase Martyne of Cougne,[2] and the squyer Ferrant Martyne of Merle. They were of the kynges hous, and nere to his persone, they were lodged at theyr ease in the towne of saynt James; then they were brought to the duke and to the duches, and so presented theyr letters, and also they presented to the duke and to the duches and to theyr doughters fayre whyte mules, well aumblynge, wherof they were glad. Howbeit, for all that the journey of the Englysshmen to the kynge of Portyngale was not broken, but they were stopped for a iiii. dayes, and on the v. daye departed, and this knyght and squyer all togyder in company; and the duke sente to the kynge of Portyngale in token of love ii. fawcons pelegrynes, as good as coulde be devysed, and vi. Englysshe greyhoundes good for all maner of beestes. So the Portyngales and the Englysshmen rode togyder over al the lande of Galyce. They were in no fere of the Castellyans, for they were ferre ynoughe of fro them. And on the waye as they rode, syr John Dambrychcourte and Martyn Ferrant of Merle fell in talkynge togyder, for before that season the squyer had ben in armes with syr Eustase Dambrychcourte, who was uncle to the sayd syr John, and was with hym when he dyed at Quarentyne. And as they talked togyder they rode behynde theyr company, they met an heraulde and a varlet comyng fro Connymbres, where the kynge laye, and was rydynge towarde

[2] *Vasco Martins da Cunha.*

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

saynt James, to the duke of Lancastre. This heraulte perteyned to the kynge of Portyngale, and was called Connymbres. The heraulte had spoken with the lordes and shewed them suche tydynges as he knewe. And when Ferrant Martyn of Merle saw hym comynge, he sayd to syr John Dambrychcourte, Beholde yonder cometh an heraulte of the kynge of Portyngales, it is longe syth he was in this countrey, I wyl demaunde of hym some tydynges. And when they met togyder, the squyer sayd, A Connymbres, where have you ben so longe; it is more then a yere syth I saw you, or that ye were in this countrey. Syr, sayd he, I have ben in Englande, and have sene the kynge and lordes there, and they have made me ryche with grete gyftes that I have had of them, and fro thens I retourned by the see into Bretayne, and was at the maryage of the duke of Bretayne, and at the grete feest that he kepte at the cyte of Nauntes aboute a ii. monethes past: he hath wedded the lady Jahan of Navare; and fro thens by the see I went into Irelande, and fro thens to the porte in Portyngale. And as they talked togyder, the squyer behelde a schochyn that the heraulte bare on his brest, wherin were graved and inamyled the kynge of Portyngales armes, and the armes of dyvers other lordes. Then the squyer set his fynger on one of the armes perteynynge to a knyght of Portyngale, and sayd, A, se here the armes of the gentyll knyght syr John Partelere:[1] by my fayth I am glad to se them, for they perteyne to a gentyll knyght, who on a tyme dyd me grete profyte: I ought well to remembre it; and therwith he toke iiii. floreyns of golde out of his purse, and gave them to the heraulte, who thanked hym. And syr John Dambrychcourte behelde well the armes, the felde sylver, an endenture gooles, with ii. chanders sables: and so the heraulte departed. Then the squyer sayde, Syr John, saw you never this knyght that bare the sayd armes, whom I prayse so moche. I can not tell, sayd syr John, but at the leest I praye you shewe me what was the courtesy that ones he dyd to you, I wolde be glad to here it, we have nothynge elles to talke of. I am contented, sayd the squyer to shewe you, for the knyght is well worthy to be spoken of. Then he began his tale thus:

[1] *Pacheco.*

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

So it fortuned a lytell before the batayle of Juberoth, when the kynge of Portyngale wente fro Connymbres thyderwarde, the kynge sent me into the countrey to warne certayne knyghtes to come to hym to be with hym at that journey; so I rode forth, and but one page with me. And as I rode I happened to mete a xxv. speres Gascoynes, and I was not ware tyl I was amonge them. Then they toke me and demaunded whether I wente, and I shewed them I was rydynge to the castell of Ronte.[1] And they demaunded What to do. And I sayd To go seke syr John Ferrant Partelere, to come to the kyng of Portyngale to Juberoth. Why, sayd they, is syr John Ferrant Parteler capytayne of the castel of Ronte, is he not all redy with the kyng of Portyngale. No, surely syrs, sayd I, but shortely he wyll be there, yf he ones knowe the kynges pleasure. Well, sayd they, he shall knowe it, for we wyll ryde thyder. So they toke the waye to the castell of Ronte, and when they were within the syght of the castell, the watche of the castell sayd he saw men of armes approchyng towarde the castell. Then syr John Ferrant demaunded fro what parte they were comynge: the watche sayd they were comyng towarde the porte. A, sayd he, they be then Castellyans,[2] and rydeth at adventure towarde Saynt Irayne, I wyl go and loke on them, they shall tell me tydynges where the kynge is. So he lepte on his horse, and a xx. with hym, and toke his penon before hym, and rode out of the castell a grete galop to come to the Castellyans, who as then were drawen into a busshment, and had made one of theyr company to ryde forthe on a genet. And when syr John Ferrant saw the geneture, he sayd to a squyer of his, Galop forth thy genet, and assaye to speke with yonder geneture. Then the squyer galopped forth, and folowed hym nere ever lykely to take hym, for he fled but softely before hym to the entente to brynge hym into the busshment. And when he was nere them the busshment brake out at hym, and then he tourned quyckely his backe, and they that chased hym cryed Castell. And syr John Ferrant beynge under his penon, seynge his squyer retourned in suche hast, sayd, They that chase my squyer be none of our company, they be Castellyans; set on them, crye Portyngale, for I wyll fyght with them. Then

[1] *Ourem.*

[2] *Portingallois.*

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

he toke his spere and ranne at them; the fyrst that he met withall wente to the erthe, and the seconde also; of xxv. Castellyans that were there, x. of them lay shortely on the grounde, and the other chased, and some were overtaken and slayne and hurte. And all this I was glad to se, for I saw my delyveraunce, and in a shorte season I was lefte all alone. Then I came to the knyght and saluted hym; and as soone as he saw me he knewe me, and demaunded of me fro whens I came, and what I dyd there. Then I shewed hym all myne adventure, and how the Castellyans chased me and toke me. Well, sayd he, and what knowe you of the kynge of Portyngale. By my fayth syr, sayd I, to morowe he shall have batayle at Juberoth agaynst the kynge of Castel, for he sente me into this countrey to gyve warnynge therof to the knyghtes and squyers that knoweth it not, to the entente that they sholde resorte to hym. To morow, sayd he. Ye truely, syr, sayd I, and yf ye byleve not me, demaunde of these Castellyans that ye have taken. Then he demaunded of them tydynges; they sayd howe surely the nexte day there sholde be batayle bytwene the ii. kynges; of whiche tydynges he was ryght glad, and sayd openly to the Castellyans, Syrs, for the good tydynges that ye shewe me, I quyte you of your raunsomes, departe when ye wyl, so ye acquyte this squyer. So thus he caused me to be quyted fro them, and so they departed, and we the same day retourned to Ronte. Then he made hym redy and departed thens at mydnyght, and I in his company; and fro thens to the Cabase of Juberoth, whiche was a vi. myles of that countrey. And to eschewe encountrynges we rode somwhat out of our waye, and in the mornynge we herde that there sholde be batayle the same daye or we sawe the batayles. And when we approched the batayles were raynged in the feldes, the kynge of Castell on the one partye, and the kynge of Portyngale on the other, and at the fyrst we knewe not whiche were Castellyans and whiche were Portyngales, tyll at the last syr John Ferrant Partelere sayd, I byleve surely the gretter oost be the Castellyans. Then we rode forth fayre and easely tyl we came nere, and then we sawe well it was the Castellyans, and I trowe some of the Gascoynes brake out agaynst us. Then syr John

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

Ferrant sayd, Let us avaunce forthe, we se yonder our enemyes comyng on us. Then we strake our horses with the spurres, and rode cryenge Portyngale, and they folowed us. Then when our company of Portyngales sawe us, they came forth and rescued us, and for al that the batayles brake not theyr aray. And so syr John Ferrant came to the kynge and acquyted hym that day with the best. Thus syr I have shewed you howe he dyd me grete courtesye, for he delyvered me out of pryson; and I had not ben at the batayle, and he had not ben; therfore syr, dyd he not me a goodly pleasure. Yes truely, sayd syr John Dambrychcourte, and also by you he knew of the batayle. That is true, sayd the squyer; and then they rode forth tyll they had overtaken theyr company, and came the same day to Connymbres.

And of the comynge of these Englysshe knyghtes the kynge of Portyngale was ryght joyfull, and commaunded that they sholde be well lodged at theyr ease. And when they were redy, then Martyn of Coygne, and Ferrant Martyn Merle, and the Englysshe knyghtes, wente to the kynge, who receyved them joyously. Then the Englysshmen dyd theyr message, and presented the kynge with the fawcons and greyhoundes, of the whiche the kynge had grete joy, for he loved houndes and hawkes; then they thanked the kynge on the dukes parte for the goodly mules that he had sente to the duke, and to the duches. Then he sayd That was but a small present, another tyme I wyll sende them gretter gyftes; this was but for aquayntaunce of love, as lordes ought to do one to another, to nourysshe love and amyte. Then wyne and spyces were brought, and the knyghtes of Englande dranke, and so toke theyr leve for that tyme, and retourned to theyr lodgynges to souper. The nexte day they dyned at the kynges palace, and the lorde Poynynges, and syr John Bancell, sate at the kynges table, and syr John Dambrychcourt, and syr John Soultyer, sate at another table with the barons of that countrey, suche as were there; and there was Laurence Fongase, a squyer of honoure of the kynges, who knewe ryght well all the knyghtes and squyers of Englande, for he had sene them in Englande; he made them the best chere he coulde, they were well served at this dyner, and after dyner they were

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

brought into the counsayle chambre. Then the Englysshe knyghtes began to speke to the kynge, and to ii. erles that were there present, the erle of Angose, and the erle of Navare, and sayd, Syr, and it lyke your grace besyde all the recommendacyons that the duke of Lancastre hath sente unto you, he gave us in charge to say to you that he desyreth sore to se you. Then the kynge sayd, And I as glad to se hym, and I requyre you that shortely we may se and speke togyder. Syr, sayd the erles, it were good that it were so, for tyll ye be togyder, ye shal not love parfytely, and then ye may take advyse togyder howe ye may maynteyne your warres agaynst the kynge of Castel; syr, this is true, sayd the knyghtes of Englande. Then sayd the kynge, Let it be done shortely, for if the duke desyre to se me, in lykewyse I desyre to se hym. So then they fell in other talkynge, for then the kyng charged his counsayle to agre and assygne a certayne daye when they sholde mete togyder, and to assure the Englysshe knyghtes therof; and so they dyd; and it was agreed that the kynge of Portyngale sholde come to a cyte in his countrey, called the Porte, and that the duke of Lancastre sholde ryde alonge by the frontere of Galyce, and so there at the partyng of bothe royalmes to mete and speke togyder. And so on that conclusyon the messagers departed and retourned towarde Galyce, and rode as they came tyll they came to saynt James, and there shewed to the duke and the duches howe they had sped; of whiche tydynges the duke was joyfull, and so he had cause, for his busynes began then to approche.

And when the season came that the duke of Lancastre sholde departe fro saynt James, he lefte there styll his marshall and al his company, excepte iii. C. speres, and vi. C. archers, and syr John Holande, who had wedded his eldest doughter, with hym, and many other knyghtes and squyers. And the duke rode the fronters of Galyce, and approched nere to Portyngale: and the kynge, who laye at the Porte, knewe well of his comynge, and so departed with vi. hundreth speres and came to the fronters of Portyngale, and lodged at a towne called Mouson,[1] the last towne of Portyngale on that syde, and the duke of Lancastre came to another towne, the fyrst towne of Galyce, joynyng to Portyngale, called

[1] *Monção.*

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

Margasse.[1] And bytwene Mouson and Margasse there was a ryver and fayre medowes, and a grete playne, and a brydge called the Mor Brydge.[2] And on a Thursday in the mornynge the kyng of Portyngale, and the duke of Lancastre, with all theyr companyes met togyder; there was a goodly and a lovyng metynge, and there were lodgynges made in the feldes of the kynges syde, and thyder went the duke of Lancastre to dyner, whiche dyner was well ordred. And there sate at the kynges table the bysshop of Connymbres, the bysshop of Porte, the archebysshop of Bargus[3] in Portyngale, and the duke of Lancastre; and a lytell byneth sate syr John of Holande, and syr Henry Beamonde of Englande, and there were plentye of mynstrelles, and so were in sporte tyll it was nyght. That daye the kynge of Portyngale was apparelled all in whyte, with a reed crosse of saynt George, for that is the habyte of the house called Mouson, otherwyse called Denyce in Portyngale, of the whiche ordre the kynge was. And or he was crowned was called mayster therof, but ever after he bare styll that devyse in the honoure of God and saynt George, and all his men were arayed in whyte and reed: then when it began to be late they retourned to theyr lodgynges tyll the nexte daye. The kynge wente to Mouson, and the duke to Margasse, and bytwene bothe there was no more but the medowe and the ryver to passe. Then on the Fryday when they had herde masse they toke theyr horses, and so rode agayne to Mor Brydge, and there they met agayne, there they had goodly lodgynge made; the kyng and the duke had theyr chambres hanged with tapyceryes and curteynes as well as and the kynge had ben at Lyxbone, and the duke at London; and before dyner they counsayled togyder on the state of theyr busynes, and howe they sholde maynteyne theyr war, and when they sholde set forth. Then it was determyned that all the wynter the kynge sholde tary in his owne countrey, and the duke at saynt James, and to let theyr marshal dele; and in Marche the kyng, and the duke, and theyr men, to assemble togyder, and to go and fyght with the kyng of Castel where soever he sholde be as then, for they sayd they sholde be Englysshe and Portyngales togyder a xxx. thousande. And when al this was concluded, then the kynges counsayle

[1] *Melgaço.*
[2] *Ponte do Mouro.*
[3] *Braga.*

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

comoned amonge themselfe for a maryage for theyr kynge, for it was tyme, and the royalme wolde that he were maryed to his honoure and profyte, and for to have good alyaunces in tyme to come; and they sayd they knewe not as then where he sholde mary more to his profyte, nor to the welthe of his comons, then in the house of Lancastre. And this they shewed to the duke. And when he sawe the kynges entencyon, and howe that he was in the kynges daunger, seynge he was come out of Englande into the fronters of Portyngale to demaunde his herytage of Castell, then he answered smylynge, and sayd to the kynge, who was there presente, Syr, I have in the towne of saynt James two doughters: I wyll gyve you one of them whome it pleaseth you to chose; syr, sende thyder your counsayle, and I shal sende her to you. Syr, sayd the kynge, I thanke you, ye offre me more then I desyre; as for my cosyn Katheryne I wyll leve her styll with you, but as for Phylyp your doughter, her I demaunde and wyl wedde her, and make her quene of Portyngale. And so brake up theyr counsayle and wente to dyner, and sate as they dyd the daye before: they were served notably accordynge to the usage of the countrey. And after dyner the duke retourned to Margasse, and the kynge to Mouson.

The Saterday after masse they met agayne at the sayd place, and that daye the duke of Lancastre made the dyner for the kynge of Portyngale and his company, and there were chambres and halles hanged with arras and enbrowdery, as rychely as thoughe they had ben at London, and the Portyngales praysed moche the Englysshe maner. And at that dyner there were thre archebysshoppes, and vii. bysshoppes syttynge at the hyghe table; the bysshop of Lyxbone, the bysshop of Porte, and the bysshop of Connymbres, the archebysshop of Bargus, and other; and the kynge sate in the myddes of the table, and the duke a lytell bynethe hym, and bynethe the duke the erle of Navare, and the erle of Angosse; and at another table sate fyrst the mayster Denyce, then the grete mayster of saynt James in Portyngale, and the pryour of saynt Johns, then Don Galopes Percler,[1] and John Ferrant his sone, the Pouvayse of Congne,[2] and Vas Martyn of Congne, the Podych of Senede,[3] Vas

[1] *Diogo Lopes Pacheco.*

[2] *Lopo Vasques da Cunha.*

[3] *Lopo Dias de Azevedo.*

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

Martyn of Merle, al barons; the abbot of the Cabase of Juberoth, the abbot of saynt Mary of Eure, syr Alve Perere[1] marshall of Portyngale, John Radygos de Sar,[2] and dyvers other knyghtes and squyers of Portyngale: for there sate that daye no Englysshmen, for all knyghtes and squyers of Englande served. And there were many mynstrelles, and the duke gave them a C. nobles, and the herauldes as moche: after dyner when all thynges was accomplysshed they toke leve amyably eche of other tyll another season; the kynge retourned to Porte, and the duke to Margasse, and toke his way into Galyce, and the erle of Navare conveyed the duke with a C. speres tyll he was out of all daunger. And then the erle toke his leve and retourned into Portyngale, and the duke rode to saynt James in Galyce.

[1] *Alvaro Pereiro.*

[2] *João Rodrigues de Sá.*

Moche desyred the duches of Lancastre the retourne of the duke her husbande, and to here tydynges what conclusyons were taken; and so the duke was well welcomed home, as it was reason, and the duches demaunded of hym howe he lyked the kynge of Portyngale. By my fayth, sayd the duke, he is a gracyous man, and is of body and maners lyke to be a valyaunt man, and I thynke he shall reygne in grete puyssaunce, for he is well byloved of his men; they say they had no kynge this C. yere that so wel pleased them as he, and he is of age not past a xxxvi. yere: he is a stronge knyght and a hardy accordynge to the nature of Portyngale, and he is well made of body to endure grete payne. Ye, but syr, sayd the lady, what sayth he to ony maryage. I have agreed to hym, sayd the duke, that he shall have one of my doughters; I dyd put hym to the choyse outher of Katheryne or Phylyp; wherof he gave me grete thanke; howbeit, he rested on Phylyp. He hath good reason, sayd the duches, for my doughter Katheryne is yet to yonge for hym. Thus the duke and the duches passed that daye, and so the tyme passed, for wynter approched; howbeit, in the countreys of Galyce and Portyngale there is but lytell wynter, for it is alwayes hote, and graynes and fruytes groweth there quyckely; for there be dyvers fruytes rype in Marche; benes, peson, and cheryes, and al fresshe erbes groweth in February; and in some place they make wyne by mydsomer, and by that tyme harvest is past.

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

And thoughe that the duke and the duches taryed in the towne of saynt James and laye styll, yet his men styred abrode, and conquered in the countrey of Galyce townes and castelles; and howe they were wonne I shal shewe you the trouthe and the names of them. For I was justely therof infourmed, both by knyghtes and squyers as wel of Englande as of Portyngale, suche as had ben present at all theyr conquestes, and specyally by the gentyl knyght of Portyngale, of whom I have spoken here before, who ryght amyably at Myddelbourge in Zelande, as he came fro his voyage out of Pruce, enfourmed me; I have here before named the knyght, and yet agayne I name hym; his name was syr John Ferrant Partelere. So it was syr Thomas Moreaulx, marshall of the duke of Lancastres oost, when the duke was retourned fro the fronters of Portyngale, and was come agayne to the towne of saynt James, he sayd he wolde not sytte styll syth he was in the countrey of conquest: but sayd he wolde ryde forthe and set his company aworke, whiche they sore desyred, and so made his assemble, and sayd he wolde entre further into Galyce, to brynge the townes and castelles under the dukes obeysaunce. And soo on a day he departed fro saynt James, with a vi. C. speres and xii. C. archers, and toke the way to a good towne in Galyce, called Poceveyed,[1] whiche was rebell agaynst them: they of the towne had knowledge of the Englysshmennes comyng, for all the comon people fled out of theyr countrey into the good townes. So they toke counsayle what they sholde doo, outher yelde or holde as longe as they coulde endure; so they were not all of one accorde; the comen people wolde have yelded, but the baylyffe, who was set there by the kyng of Castel, and the ryche men, wolde not yelde so sone, for they sayd they sholde nother have honoure nor profyte in theyr so doynge. So they were in counsaylynge togyder when the watche of the towne sowned and gave knowledge of the Englysshmens approchyng; then they brake up theyr counsayle, and every man went to his defence, and ran to the walles, and bare barres, stones, dartes, javelyns, and shewed well howe they wolde defende themselfe and not yelde so lyghtly.

[1] *Pontevedra.*

When the dukes marshall and his company were come

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

before the towne of Poncevayde, they lyghted on fote, and delyvered theyr horses to theyr varlettes, and then devyded theyr companyes to gyve assaulte, and the archers araynged themselfe aboute the towne with theyr bowes redy to shote, and men of armes, well pavessed and armed, entrynge into the dykes. Then the marshalles trompettes sowned to the sawte, and the men of armes then clame up the dykes, with pykeaxes and mattockes to wynne the walles. And the men of the towne within cast downe stones and other thynges that troubled the mynours sore, and had done more and the archers had not ben: but they shot so hooly togyder, that none durst appere on the walles; and they dyd hurte many of them within, and specyally the baylyffe of the towne was stryken with an arowe that persed his basenet and entred into his heed, so that he was fayne to be borne out of the place to his lodgynge. Yet the evyll people of the towne wolde not yelde, for all that the baylyffe was sore hurte, but were the rather more angry and more redy to defende them. Thus the saulte endured tyl it was nyght, then they sowned theyr retrayte. There were men hurte on bothe partyes; the Englysshmen retourned fro the saulte and wente to theyr lodgynges, and were of entencyon the nexte mornynge to retourne to the saulte, and not to leve tyll they had gotten it. The same nyght they of Poncevoyde toke counsayle togyder, and sayd amonge themselfe, We are but folysshe people thus to be hurte and troubled for nothynge; why do we not as Vylopes and they of Coulongne hath done; they are yelded to the duke of Lancastre, and to my lady Constaunce, doughter to kynge Don Peter; let us yelde lyke as other good townes have done, wherin they were wyse, for therby they sate in rest. Well, sayd other, let us do in lykewyse; but our baylyffe hath counsayled us the contrary; therfore he hath his payment, for he is lykely to dye. Then some of them sayd, Yet let us go to hym, and here what he wyll say, for certaynly to morowe the Englysshmen wyl retourne; they wyl not let us be in peas, they wyl outher have us perforce or by love.

To that counsayle they all agreed, and a xii. of the best of the towne wente to the baylyffes lodgynge, whose name

CAP. LI
Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

was Dyontable of Lyon, and there they founde hym on his bed, newely dressed of his wounde. And so he made to them that came to hym semblaunt of good chere, whatsoever he felte, and demaunded them of the assaulte, and how they perceyvered therin. Then they answered and sayd, how they dyd well, thanked be God; For, excepte your hurte, we have taken but small domage; but to morowe lyeth our doubte, for we are sure to have a new assaulte, and we be no men of defence; we are but symple people, and wote not what it meaneth; therfore we are come to have your counsayle what is best for us to do. The Englysshmen sore threteneth us, that yf we be taken perforce, we shall be put to the sworde, and lese lyves and all that we have. In the name of God, sayd the baylyffe, ye can have noo blame thoughe ye yelde; but make a wyse treaty, that they be no rulers in your towne; ye may saye, that ye wyll gladly be under the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre and of the duches, in lyke maner as they of Coulongne be, so that no Englysshmen come within the towne, but to sende them provysyon out of the towne for theyr money. Thus do, if ye can; I thynke they wyll be glad of the obeysaunce, for they have many moo townes to wynne in Galyce; wherfore I thynke they wyll the lyghtlyer go hens. Ye say well, syr, sayd they; we shall do thus, syth you counsayle us to do it. So they were determined on this purpose, and so passed the nyght as well as they myght. And in the mornyng at the sone rysynge they ordeyned certayne men to go out of the towne, instructed and charged what truce they sholde make with the marshal yf they coulde; there were vii. of them, and they came to the marshall, who was redy to retourne to the saulte, and kneled downe, salutynge hym, and sayd, Syr, we be sente hyder to you fro them of the towne of Poncevoyde, who have commaunded us to say in theyr names, that gladly they wyll put themselfe under the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre and of my lady the duches, in maner and fourme as they of Coulongne hath done; and as for provysyon, ye shall have ynoughe out of the towne, payenge courteysly therfore; and, syr, it is the entencyon of them that hathe sente us hyder, that ye sholde not enforce them ony further, nor you nor none other to entre

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

into the towne with ony army; but yf you and some of your company wyll entre symply, ye shall be welcome. The marshall had an Englysshman by hym that understode the speche of Galyce; he shewed the marshall in Englysshe the wordes that they had spoken. The marshall answered and sayd, Syrs, shortely retourne agayne to your towne, and cause to come to the barryers suche as sente you hyder to speke there with me; I wyll gyve them assuraunce this day, and to morowe the sone rysyng, without we be agreed. So they departed, and wente to theyr towne, and founde at the barryers the moost parte of them of the towne, and there they made relacyon of theyr message, sayenge, howe incontynent the marshall wolde come to the barryers to speke with them; and yf ye be not company ynowe, sende for suche mo as ye wyl have. So then all the notablest men of the towne drewe togyder. Then the marshall, with a xl. speres, came thyder, and alyghted and came to the barryers, and sayd thus:

Ye syrs of Poncevoyde, ye sente to us vii. of your men, and I byleve surely ye dyd put your trust in them, and they sayd howe ye wolde gladly knowledge my lorde the duke and my lady for your soveraynes, in maner and fourme as they of Coulongne hath done; but ye wyl not have none other governours but yourselfe within the towne. I pray you, what soveraynte sholde they have over you, without they had men set in the towne under them; elles when ye wyll, ye wyll be under hym, and when ye lyst, forsake hym. Surely it is myne entencyon, and al my company, to ordeyne you a good capytayne, true and wyse, to governe you and to mynystre true justyce, and to put out al offycers set there by the kynge of Castel; and yf ye wyll not do thus, answere me, for we are determyned what we wyll do. Then they desyred a lytell to take counsayle togyder, and so they dyd, and then sayd, Syr, we have good trust in you, but we doubte these pyllers and robbers, for we have ben sore beten with suche people in tyme past, when syr Bertram of Clesquy and the Bretons came fyrst into this countrey: for they lefte us nothynge, and therfore we fere. Nay, syrs, fere not that, sayd the marshall; there shall noo pyllers and robbers entre into your towne, nor ye shall lese nothynge by us, for

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

we desyre noo thynge but obeysaunce. And so with those wordes they were accorded. Then the marshall and certayne of his men entred into the towne, and the oost abode without in tentes and pavylyons; and there was sent out of the towne to the lordes iiii. somers, laded with good wyne, and as moche brede, polayne grete plenty. The marshal abode all that day in the towne, and set offycers there for the duke of Lancastre; and he made a capytayne there, a Galysyan, who had alwayes ben in Englande with the lady Constaunce, with whom they of the towne were well contented. And the nexte day the marshall retourned to the oost.

Vigo.

Then he determined to go to another towne, a vi. myles thens, in Galyce, called Dyghos,[1] and so rode forth thyderwarde. And when they were within ii. myles, they sent a messagere to the towne, to know whether they wolde rebel, or elles yelde them, as they of Poncevoyde have done; yf not, they sholde be saulted the nexte daye. They of Dyghos made no care for that message, and sayd, We care for none assaulte; we have ben assayled or this tyme, and lost nothynge. When that answere was sayd to the marshall, he sayd, By saynt George, and they shall be fyersly assayled; are these vyllaynes so proude to gyve suche an answere? So they passed that nyght, and toke theyr ease; the nexte mornynge at the sone rysyng they dyslodged, and soo came before the towne and lyghted a foote, and set them in ordre to go to the assaulte; and they within made them redy to defende them and theyr towne. This towne was not grete, but it was stronge, and I byleve yf they had had ony good men of warre in theyr towne, the Englysshmen had not so soone have had them. For as sone as they within the towne saw how they were assayled, and felte the arrowes of the archers of Englande, and sawe howe dyvers of them were sore hurte, for they were but evyl harneysed, then they began to be abasshed, and sayd, Why doo we suffre ourselfe thus to be slayne and hurte for the kynge of Castell; it were as good for us to have to our lorde the duke of Lancastre, syth he hath maryed the doughter of kyng Don Peter, as the sone of kyng Henry: we know well, yf we be taken perforce, we shall all dye, and we se no comforte fro no parte; it is more then a moneth syth we sent to the kynge of Castel to

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

Burgus in Spayne, and there it was shewed to his counsayle the peryl that we were in, for we knewe well the Englysshmen wolde come on us as they do; and the kyng then spake to the knyghtes of Fraunce, who are of his specyall counsayle, but they gave hym counsayle to sende noo garyson hyder, nor to noo parte of Galyce; by semynge, the kynge had as leve all Galyce were lost as saved. He answered to our messagers, Syrs, retourne to your towne, and do the best you can for yourselfe; wherby we may well understande that we nede not to suffre ourselfe to be slayne nor taken perforce. And therwith the men of the towne came to the gate, and mounted up to a wyndowe, and made sygne to speke and to treate. They were herde, and the marshall came thyder and demaunded what they wolde. They answered and sayd, Syr marshall, cause your men to cease the assaulte; we wolde yelde us to you in the name of the duke of Lancastre and of my lady Constaunce, in lyke maner as other townes in Galyce have done and shall do; and yf ye wyll have ony provysyon out of our towne, ye shall have ryght courteysly to refresshe you, but with an army there shall none entre: this is the treaty that we wyll desyre. The marshall then answered and sayd, I am agreed to upholde all that ye demaunde; but I wyll ordeyne you a good capytayne to defende you and to counsayle you in all your busynes. Then they answered and sayd, Wel, syr, we are content therwith. So the assaulte seased, and the marshall, syr Yon Fytzwaren, the lorde Talbot, syr John Aburnell, the lorde Poynynges, John Dambrychcourte, and certayne other knyghtes, entred into the towne to refresshe them, and there taryed al the day; and they that were without had brede and wyne and other vytayles ynoughe out of the towne. Thus after the takynge of the towne of Dyghos in Galyce, and that the lordes were well refresshed, then the marshall set there a capytayne, a squyer of Englande, called Thomas Albery,[1] a sage man and a valyaunt, and xii. archers with hym. And then the marshall departed, and entred into the countrey of Galyce, costynge Spayne and the mountaynes of Castell, to come to a grete towne called Bayon[2] in the Maroll. And when they were a ii. myle thens they lodged, and the nexte day in good araye they came nere to the towne, and then devyded them

[1] *Dalby.*

[2] *Bayona.*

CAP. LI

Howe the duke of Lancasters marshall and his men assayled the towne of Vyleclope.

in two bataylles, and sent an heraulte of armes to them of the towne to knowe what they wolde do, and whyder they wolde come to obeysaunce without assaylynge or no. The heraulte came to the barryers, and there founde a grete nombre of the vyllaynes evyll harneysed, and sayd to them in theyr language: the heraulte was of Portyngale, and was called Connymbres: Syrs, among you in this towne what thynge thynke you to doo; wyll ye be assayled, or elles yelde you, and be under the obeysaunce of my lorde the duke of Lancastre and of my lady. The marshall hath sent me hyder to knowe what ye wyll do. Then the men of the towne drewe to counsayle, and began to murmure, and sayd one to another, What shall we do, yelde ourselfe symply or defende us. Then an auncyent man, who had sene moo then many other, sayd, Syrs, it is nedeful to take shorte counsayle; the Englysshmen do us grete courtesy, syth they suffre us to take counsayle; ye se well there appereth none ayde fro no parte to comforte us; and also the kynge of Castell knoweth wel what case we stande in, and hath done ever syth the duke of Lancastre aryved fyrst at Coulongne, and he provydeth nothynge for us, nor is not aboute to provyde: yf we suffre to be assayled, it is of trouth this towne is grete in cyrcute and of small defence, it wyl be harde for us to attende to every place; the Englysshmen are subtyll in warre, and wyll do moche payne to wyn us, in tryst of pyllage, for they be covetous, and so be all men of warre, and this towne is reputed to be more rycher then it is indeed; wherfore I wolde counsayle you for the best, to put ourselfe and towne under the obeysaunce of the duke and of the duches; let us not be so rebel to cause ourselfe to be taken perforce, syth we maye come to peas by a meane: this is the counsayle that I gyve you. Then al the other answered and sayd, We wyl do thus; we byleve you, for ye are a man in this towne of grete parage, and may do moche; and we desyre you to make the answere to the heraulte. With a good wyll, sayd he; but it were reason ye gave the heraulte a rewarde; he wyll do us the more courtesye, and reporte good of us to the lordes that sente hym hyder.

CAP. LII

Howe they of Bayon yelded them to the duke of Lancastre, and how the marshall of his hoost entred into the towne and toke possessyon therof.

THEN this auncyent man came to the heraulte, and sayd, Syr, retourne to your maysters that sente you hyder, and saye to them fro us, that we wyl amyably put us under the obeysaunce of my lorde the duke of Lancastre and of my lady the duches his wyfe, in lyke maner and fourme as other townes in Galyce have done and wyll do; and we pray you to be our frende, and we wyll gyve you xx. moryskes of golde. When the heraulte herde hym say so, he sayd, Where be the floreyns. There they dyd gyve them to hym, and so he retourned to his lordes. Then the marshal demaunded of hym what tydynges; What saye yonder vyllaynes, wyll they be assayled. Nay, truely syr, sayd the heraulte, they have no wyll therto, but have sayd to me that ye sholde come thyder, and they wyll amyably receyve you, and put themselfe clerely under the obeysaunce of my lorde the duke and of my lady the duches, as other townes have done. Well, sayd the marshall, so be it; it is better for us this treaty then the saulte; at the leest our men shall not be hurte. Then the marshall, with all his company, came to the towne, and lyghted on foote, and at the barryers he founde moche people of the towne, but all theyr armure was not worth x. frankes; there they were to see the Englysshmen, and there was the auncyent man to make theyr treatye. As soone as the heraulte sawe hym, he sayd unto the duke, Syr, speke unto yonder auncyent man, who maketh courtesye to you, for he hathe the auctoryte of the towne in his handes. Then the marshall stepte forthe and sayd, Syr, what saye you; what wyll ye do; wyll ye yelde you to my lorde of Lancastre and to my lady as to your soverayne lorde and lady. Ye, syr, sayd he, we yelde us to you in the name of them, and put this towne under theyr obeysaunce, as other townes in Galyce have

CAP. LII

Howe they of Bayon yelded them to the duke of Lancastre.

done; and yf it please you to entre into the towne, ye shall be welcome, paynge for provysyon yf ye take ony. Wel, sayd the marshall, it suffyseth; we wyll nothyng but obeysaunce and love of the countrey; but ye shall swere that yf the kyng of Castel come hyder or sende hyder, that ye kepe you agaynst hym and his alyes. Then they answered and sayd, Syr, we wyl swere it with good wyll; and yf he come hyder with puyssaunce, or sende, we shal close our towne agaynst hym, and sende you worde therof; and yf ye be stronger than he, we wyll abyde styll under you, for ye shall fynde in us no maner of frawde. That is ynoughe, sayd the marshal; I aske no better: or it be a yere to an ende the matter shal be determyned; for the herytage and crowne of Castell, of Spayne, of Cordewayne, of Galyce, and of Syvyll shal abyde with hym that is strongest; for there shall be sene in these countreys or the ende of August many dedes of armes done, and as grete an armye appere in Castell as hathe ben sene there this C. yere past. Well, sayd the auncyent man, let it be as it wyll be, and let the ryght go to the ryght, we in this countrey of Galyce dare well abyde the adventure. Then the rebelles[1] were brought forth, and they of the towne sware to governe theyr towne well and truely, as subjectes sholde do to theyr soverayne lorde and lady, and to knowledge the duke of Lancastre and his wyfe for theyr lorde and lady, as other townes in Galyce had done. And the marshall in theyr names receyved their othes, and sware agayne to kepe and maynteyne them in peas and good justyce.

[1] *relics. A ces mots fut le saint apporté.*

And when al this matter was done, sworne, and promyse, then they opened theyr gates and barryers, and every man entred who wolde, and lodged all abrode in the towne, and were there a iiii. dayes to refresshe them and theyr horses, and to abyde for a fayre season, for in iiii. dayes before it never seased raynynge; wherfore they were loth to departe, for the ryvers were waxed so grete, that no man coulde passe without grete daunger. And also in that season they advysed themselfe whyder they wolde go to Bezanses[2] or to Rybadave,[3] another stronge towne, wherin were the moost prowdest people and moost traytours of al the countrey of Galyce. And on the fyrst day the marshal departed fro

[2] *Betanzos.*

[3] *Ribadavia.*

CAP. LII

Howe they of Bayon yelded them to the duke of Lancastre.

the towne of Bayon in Marol; and when they were in the feldes, they founde the ryvers withdrawen, wherof they were ryght joyful. Then they rode forth towardes Rybadave, and had with them grete caryage and moche provysyon, and rode all in peas; there were none that stopped them of theyr way, for there were no lordes of Galyce that styred, so they rode tyll they came nere to the towne, and then lodged them under the olyves, in a fayre playne, within halfe a legge of the towne, and there determyned to sende theyr heraulte to speke with them of Rybadave. The marshall had well herde howe they were the falsest people and of the merveylest condycyons that were in all the royalme, as grete a royalme as it was, for they dyd never set by the kynge, nor no man elles, but helde al onely of themselfe, for theyr towne was strong. So the heraulte was sent to them to knowe theyr entencyons: and when he came thyder, the barryers were closed and the gate also. Then he began to call and to knocke, but noo man wolde answere hym. Yet he sawe men go up and downe on the garettes of the gate and walles: but for nothyng that he coulde do, there was no creature wolde speke one worde to hym. So there he stode, callynge and makynge of sygnes more then an houre. Then he sayd to hymselfe, when he sawe he coulde have there nothynge elles, I trowe these men of Rybadave have spoken with them of Bayon, and are dyspleased that they gave me xx. floreynes, and dyd so lytell therfore; nowe they wyll make me bye it dere; I fere they wolde have me tary here tyll it were late, and then take and hange me. And so therwith retourned to the marshall, who demaunded what tydynges; whyder they wolde be assayled or yelde, as other townes had done. Syr, sayd the heraulte, surely I cannot tell; they be so prowde, that for ony cryenge and callynge that I coulde make, there was none that wolde gyve me ony answere. Then syr John Abaurell sayd, Sawest thou no persone there; peradventure they be fled awaye for fere of us. Fled away, sayd the heraulte; syr, savynge your grace, they thynke scorne therof; for or ye have that towne, they wyll put you to more payne then all the other townes in Galyce: syr, knowe for trouthe, therin be men ynowe, for I sawe grete nombre of them, and called to them on hyghe, and

CAP. LII

Howe they of Bayon yelded them to the duke of Lancastre.

sayd, Syrs, I am an heraulte sent to speke with you, therfore here me; but they helde theyr peas, and loked on me and laughed. A, sayd the marshall, the false vyllaynes shall well be chastysed, for I wyll not departe thens tyll I have brought them to obeysaunce, without my lorde the duke of Lancastre commaunde me the contrary: let us ete and drynke, and then go to the assaulte, for I wyll see them a lytell nerer, syth the vyllaynes be so prowde. And it was done as the marshall ordeyned.

And when they had eten and dronken, they lepte on theyr horses, and sowned theyr trompettes, makynge grete noyes; and within a whyle they came before the towne. And some knyghtes and squyers ran before the barryers, but there they founde no body, but over the gate there were many crosse bowes, and they began to shote, and dyd hurte dyvers horses: then the Englysshe archers araynged them before the barryers and on the dykes, and began to shote agaynst the crosse bowes; so there was a sore assaulte, whiche longe endured. True it is, the towne of Rybadave is ryght stronge; it coulde not be wonne on the one syde, for it standeth on a rocke, so that no man can mounte therto; on the other syde, where the saulte contynued, was playne grounde, but there were grete dykes, drye without ony water, but they were evyll to mounte upon. Knyghtes and squyers avayled downe, and then began to mounte agayne, with targes and pavaises over theyr heedes, for defence of stones that were cast downe; and the archers were raynged alonge on the dykes, who shot so hooly togyder that the defendauntes durst not appere abrode. That daye there was a grete assaulte, and dyvers hurte bothe within and without, and at nyght they sowned the retrayte. Then the saulte seased, and the Englysshmen drewe to theyr lodgynges, and toke theyr ease, and dressed them that were hurte. And the same daye Thyrry of Sonnayne[1] was stryken with a quarell in the arme, so that in a moneth after he coulde not ayde hymselfe with that arme, but bare it in a towell.

[1] *Sommaing.*

CAP. LIII

Howe the duke of Lancastre and the Duches helde them at saynt James in Galyce, and of the comforte that the Frensshe knyghtes gave unto the kynge of Castell.

THE same season that the duke of Lancastres marshal rode abrode in the countrey of Galyce, and made the countrey to tourne to the obeysaunce of the duke and duches, who lay at the towne of Compostella, otherwyse called saynt James in Galyce, often tymes they herde tydynges fro the kynge of Portyngale, and the kynge fro them, for they sente and wrote eche to other wekely. And on the other party, kyng John of Castell lay that season at Valeolyve,[1] and the knyghtes of Fraunce with hym, with whom he spake often tymes of his busynes, and demaunded of them counsayle; and somtyme he sayd to them, Syrs, I have grete mervayle that there cometh no more ayde to me out of Fraunce, for I lese my countrey, and am lyke to lose, without I fynde some other remedy; the Englysshmen kepeth the feldes, and I knowe well that the duke of Lancastre and the kynge of Portyngale have ben togyder, and myne adversary the kynge of Portyngale shall have in maryage one of the dukes doughters, and as sone as they be wedded, ye shal se bothe theyr puyssaunces joyne togyder and entre into my royalme, and so gyve me to moche to do. Then the Frensshe knyghtes answered, to comforte the kynge, and sayd, Syr, take no thought therfore; for yf the Englysshmen wyn on the one syde, they lese on the other; for we know surely that the Frensshe kynge, with mo then a C. M. men of warre, is as nowe in the royalme of Englande, and dystroyeth and conquereth the countrey; and when they have done, and brought al Englande in subjeccyon, then the Frensshe kynge wyl take agayne the se, and, or somer be past, aryve at Coulogne in Galyce, and wyn agayne more in a moneth then ye have lost in a hole yere; and the duke of Lancastre shal so be inclosed, that he shal be fayne to fle into Portyngale, and so ye shal take vengeaunce of your enemyes. For,

[1] *Valladolid.*

CAP. LIII

Howe the duke of Lancastre and the Duches helde them at saynt James in Galyce.

syr, know surely, that if the busynes of Fraunce had not ben so grete as it is for the voyage into Englande, ye sholde have had here or this iii. or iiii. M. speres of Frensshmen; for the Frensshe kynge, his uncles and counsayle, have grete affeccyon to comforte and ayde you to brynge your warres to an ende: Syr, care not though the Englysshmen nowe kepe the feldes, and wyn a lytel of your countrey: surely, syr, or it be the feest of saynt John Baptyst, they shal al be dryven away. The kyng toke these wordes for good, and toke comforte in them; and the Frensshe knyghtes sayd nothyng but as they thought was true, for they reputed surely as then the Frensshe kynge to be aryved in Englande; and so it was brewted in all Spayne, Galyce, and Portyngale. And surely the fourth parte of the tydynges that the Englysshmen herde of pylgrymes and merchauntes comynge fro Flaunders was not shewed to the duke of Lancastre; and also the kynge of Portyngale, for al that he wrote often tymes to the duke, yet he somwhat dyssymuled, and was not over hasty to sende for the lady Phylyp to be his wyfe, for his counsayle sayd to hym, Syr, surely there is tydynges come out of Fraunce and out of Flaunders that the royalme of Englande is in a grete adventure to be dystroyed, and yf that be so, what sholde it avayle you the comforte of the duke of Lancastre or to wedde his doughter; it sholde nothyng avayle you. Wherfore covertly he delayed his busynes, to the entente to se the ende of that matter; howbeit, by letters and messagers he reteyned styll the duke in love and favoure. Nowe let us leve a season to speke of the busynesses of Castell and Portyngale, and let us treate of the matters of Fraunce.

CAP. LIIII

Of the grete apparell of shyppes and galeys that the Frensshmen made on the see to passe into Englande.

THE apparel of shyppes, galeys, and vesselles that the Frensshe kyng made to passe into Englande was so grete and sumptuous, that the eldest man than lyvyng never saw nor herde of the lyke. The knyghtes and squyers rejoysed when they departed fro theyr houses to go with the Frensshe kynge into Englande, and sayd, Nowe let us go on these cursed Englysshmen, who have done so many evylles and persecucyons in Fraunce; nowe shall we be revenged for our faders, bretherne, and kynsmen, whom they have slayne and dyscomfyted. Surely it was more then xii. wekes a doynge, the pourveynge of suche provysyons as the Frensshe lordes made; it was so grete that it was merveyle to consyder it; and it was sayd in all Flaunders The kynge cometh to morowe: and also men came thyder out of Gascoyne, Armynacke, Comynges, Tholowsyn, and fro al the lymyttes of Fraunce, and all came and lodged in Flaunders and Artoys. And when it came to the myddes of August, and that the voyage sholde approche, and to the entente to make them of farre countreys to make the more hast, and to gyve ensample that the kynge toke his voyage with grete desyre, the kynge toke his leve of the quene his wyfe, and of quene Blaunche, and of the duches of Orlyaunce, and of the other ladyes of Fraunce, and herde masse solemply in Our Ladyes chyrche in Paris; and his entencyon was never to retourne agayne to Paris tyll he had ben fyrst in Englande. So the kynge rode to Senlyse. But al that season the duke of Berrey was styll in his countrey of Berre; howbeit, provysyon was made in Flaunders and at Sluse for hym as it was done for other; also the duke of Borgoyne was in his countrey, and so then he toke leve of the duches and of his chyldren, and determyned to take his leve of his grete aunte the duches of Brabant; so he departed out of Borgoyne, and rode in grete estate, and the admyrall of

CAP LIIII

Of the grete apparell of shyppes and galeys that the Frensshmen made on the see to passe into Englande.

Fraunce in his company and syr Guy of Tremoyle. And so they came to Bruzelles, and there founde the duches and other ladyes, who receyved hym with grete honour. And ii. dayes he taryed there with them, and then toke his leve, and fro thens he rode to Mons in Heynalte, and there he founde his doughter, the lady of Ostrevant, and duke Aubert, and his sone, syr Wyllyam of Heynalte, erle of Ostrevant, who receyved the duke with grete joy, and so brought hym to Valencennes. And the duke was lodged in the erles palace, and duke Aubert in the lodgynge of Vycongnet and the lady of Ostrevant; and fro thens the duke rode to Doway, and so to Arras, and there he founde the duches his wyfe taryenge for hym. Then the Frensshe kynge came to Compaygne and so to Noyon, and fro thens to Perone, and to Bapalmes, and so to Arras. And dayly there came downe people fro all partes, so grete nombre that the countrey was clene eten up; nothyng was lefte abrode in the countrey, but it was taken without payenge of ony thynge, so that the poore comon people that had gadered togyder theyr cornes had nothynge lefte them but strawe; and yf they spake therof, they were beten or slayne; theyr waters were fysshed, theyr houses beten downe for fyer wood. Yf the Englysshemen had aryved in the countrey, they coulde not nor wolde not have done so grete dystruccyon nor hurte then the Frensshmen themselfe dyd. And they sayd to the poore men, Syrs, we have as nowe no sylver to pay, but when we retourne we shal have ynoughe, and then ye shall be clerely payde. But the poore people, when they saw theyr goodes taken and spente away, and durst not speke ther agaynst, they cursed bytwene theyr tethe, sayenge, Go into Englande or to the Devyll, and never retourne agayne.

CAP. LV

Howe the Frensshe kynge and his uncles aryved at Sluse in Flaunders.

THE Frensshe kynge came to Lysle in Flaunders, and his two uncles with hym, the duke of Borgoyne and the duke of Borbon; for as then the duke of Berrey was behynde in his owne countrey, and ordeyned for his busynes. And with the kynge at Lysle there was the duke of Bare, the duke of Lorayne, the erle of Armynacke, the erle of Savoy, the erle Dalphyn of Awvergne, the erle of Geneve, the erle of saynt Poule, the erle of Ewe, the erle of Longuevyle, and other grete lordes of Fraunce, in suche nombre that I can never name them all. It was sayd there sholde passe into Englande xx. M. knyghtes and squyers, whiche, to say trouth, is a fayre company; and also xx. M. crosse bowes with the Geneways; and besyde them, other xx. M. of other men of warre. And as then syr Olyver Clysson was in Bretayne, and ordeyned therfore his busynes and navye, and sholde brynge with hym the closure of the felde made of tymbre, whiche they ordeyned to be set up every nyght when they were ones in Englande. And with syr Olyver Clysson, constable of Fraunce, sholde come out of Bretayne the best knyghtes and squyers therin, as the vycount of Rohan, the lorde of Rays, the lorde of Beawmanoyre, the lorde de la Vale, the lorde of Rochforte, the lorde of Malestroyt, syr John of Malestroyte, and a v. C. speres, Bretons, chosen men of warre; for it was the constables entencyon that no man sholde entre into Englande without he were a man of armes chosen. And he gave charge to the admyral, sayng, Take hede ye charge not our shyppes with varlettes and boyes, for they shall do us more domage then profyte; so that ii. or iii. knyghtes, without they were grete maysters, thoughe they hyred shyppes for theyr money, yet they sholde have but one horse over and one varlet. To say trouthe, they ordeyned al theyr busynesses in good ordre; and it was the opynyon of dyvers, that yf they myght aryve all togyder in Englande, where as they entended to lande,

CAP. LV
Howe the Frensshe kynge and his uncles aryved at Sluse in Flaunders.

and that was at Orwell Haven, howe they sholde sore abasshe the countrey. And so they sholde without doubte, for the grete lordes, spyrytuall and temporall, and the people of the good townes were in grete doubte, but the comons and poore companyons cared nothynge therfore, no more dyd pore knyghtes and squyers, for they desyred the warre outher to wynne or to lose all. And they sayd one to another, God hath sent to us a good season syth the Frensshe kynge wyll come into this countrey; he is a valyaunt kyng; we thynke this CCC. yere passed there was not in Fraunce a kyng of that courage as he is of; he maketh his men good men of warre: blessyd maye he be, syth he wyll come to vysyte us, for nowe we shall dye or elles be ryche, it can be none otherwyse.

CAP. LVI

Howe the Frensshe kynge taryed at Sluse with his grete oost, to the entente to entre into Englande.

IF the apparell for this voyage was grete and sumptuous in Flaunders and at Sluse, in lykewyse was it in Englande. I have shewed you somwhat therof here before, wherfore I passe it over brevely; yf the taxes and tallages were grete in Fraunce, in lykewyse they were in Englande, so that many a man sorowed longe after; but bycause the comons sawe it was nedefull, sayd, It is not agaynst reason thoughe we be taxed nowe, and to gyve of our goodes to knyghtes and squyers, to defende theyr herytages and ours. There was raysed the same tyme in Englande, for the defence of the countrey, more then ii. mylyons of floreyns; and receyvours therof were the archebysshop of Yorke, broder to the lorde Nevell, the erle of Oxenforde, syr Nycholas Brambre, syr Myghell Polle, syr Symon Burle, syr Peter Gauloufer, syr Robert Tryvylyen, syr John Beauchamp, syr John Salysbury, and other of the kynges pryvy counsayle. As for the kynges uncles, there was nothynge done by them, nor they wolde not medle therwith, nor brynge the royalme into trouble, but they toke good hede to maynteyne the

honoure of the royalme, and to kepe the passages and portes, for they byleved surely to have the same yere the Frensshe kyng with his puyssaunce to aryve in Englande. So these sayd lordes and knyghtes receyved the taxes and dyd what they lyst; and the chefe of them, and he that had moost profyte, was the erle of Oxenforde, for by hym every thynge was done, and without hym nothyng done; so that after, when theyr busynesses were passed, the people made trouble to knowe where the money became, and some of the cytees and good townes of Englande wolde have accomptes therof, with the ayde of the kynges uncles, as ye shal here after when tyme shall be to speke therof, for it shall not be forgotten out of the hystory.

CAP. LVI
Howe the Frensshe kynge taryed at Sluse with his grete oost.

CAP. LVII

Howe syr Symon Burle wolde have had by his counsayle saynt Thomas of Cauntorburyes shryne removed to the castell of Dover, wherby he acheved grete hate.

SIR SYMON BURLE was capytayne of the castel of Dover, and he herde often tymes newes out of Calays by the fysshers, for they kepte styll theyr custome of fysshynge, somtyme before Boloyne, and before the porte of Whytsande. And when other Frensshe fysshers met with them they wolde tel eche other tydynges, somtyme more then they knewe. For the fysshers of the see what soo ever warre was bytwene Englande and Fraunce, they dyd no hurte one to another, but were as frendes aydynge eche other, and bought and solde eche with other fysshe, if one sped better then another; for yf they sholde have made war one with another, there durst none have gone a fysshynge without conduyte of men of warre. Thus syr Symon Burle understode by the fysshers, that surely the Frensshe kynge wolde passe over into Englande, and take landyng at Dover, and at Sandwytche. Syr Symon byleved wel those wordes, and thought it was true, and so dyd all Englande: so on a daye he came to Cauntorbury, and wente to the abbaye, and

CAP. LVII

Howe syr Symon Burle wolde have had saynt Thomas of Cauntorburyes shryne removed to the castell of Dover.

there they demaunded of hym tydynges, and he shewed as moche as he knewe; and by his wordes he shewed that saynt Thomas shryne, whiche is goodly and ryche, was not there in surety, bycause the towne was not stronge; and he sayd that if the Frensshemen sholde come thyder, whiche by all lykelyhode they wolde do, for covetyse of wynnynge, the robbers and pyllers wolde robbe that towne and abbey, chyrche and all: And they wyll cary awaye with them the shryne yf they fynde it here: wherfore I wolde counsayle and advyse you to cary it to the castell of Dover; there it shal be in suretye, thoughe al Englande were lost. Then the abbot and all the convent toke his counsayle, though he ment well, in grete dyspyte and dyspleasure, sayenge, Syr Symon, wyll ye depose our chyrche fro our sygnory. Yf ye be afrayde make yourselfe sure, for thoughe ye close yourselfe within the castell of Dover for fere, yet the Frensshmen shall not be so hardy to come hyder to us. And so Symon Burle multyplyed so moche in wordes in maynteynynge his request, that the comons of the countrey were sore displeased with hym, and reputed hym not profytable for the countrey; and ryght well they shewed after theyr dyspleasure, as ye shall here in the story. So syr Symon Burley wente to Dover agayne.

The Frensshe kynge came to Lysle to shewe that the journey pleased hym, and to approche the soner to his passage. So the kyng approched, and it was sayd in Flaunders, and in Artoys, They shall take shyppyng outher on Satterday, Monday, or Tuysday, so that in every day in the weke it was sayd he sholde departe to morowe, or the nexte day after; and his broder the duke of Tourayne, and the bysshop of Beawvoys chauncellour of Fraunce, and dyvers other grete lordes, toke theyr leve of the kyng at Lysle, and they retourned to Parys. And it was shewed me howe the kynge had gyven the governyng of the royalme to his broder the duke of Tourayne tyll his retourne agayne, with the ayde of dyvers other lordes of Fraunce, suche as were not ordeyned to go into Englande, as the erle of Bloys, and other. And yet all the season the duke of Berry was behynde, and came but fayre and easely, for he had no grete appetyte to go into Englande; and his longe taryeng was

CAP. LVII

Howe syr Symon Burle wolde have had saynt Thomas of Cauntorburyes shryne removed to the castell of Dover.

dyspleasaunt to the kynge, and to the duke of Burgoyne, and to the other lordes: they wolde gladly he had ben come. Styll grete provysyon was made, whiche was costly and dere; a thynge not worth a franke was solde for iiii.; howebeit for all that, money was not spared, for every man desyred to be well stuffed of every thynge, in maner of envy every man to be better appoynted then other. And thoughe the grete lordes were well payde theyr wages, other poore companyons bought the bergayne, for they were owynge for a monethes wages, and yet coulde gete nothynge; the treasourer of the warres and clarkes of the chambre of accomptes sayd, Syrs, abyde tyll the nexte weke, and then ye shall be payde, and soo they were answered wekely: and yf ony payment were made to them, it was but for viii. dayes, and were owynge viii. wekes. Soo that some when they sawe the maner of dealynge, and howe they were soo evyll payde, they were sore dyspleased, and sayd, Surely this voyage shall be but of small effecte, for by all lykelyhode when the money is gadered of the taxes, then they wyl breke this journey and retourne home agayne into theyr owne countreys. Suche as dyd cast suche doubtes and provided therafter were wyse, but the poore knyghtes and companyons, suche as were reteyned by the grete lordes, spente all that they had: every thynge was so dere in Flaunders, that harde it was to gete outher brede or drynke, or yf they wolde sell theyr wages or armure, there was no money to gete. And yf ony were bought it was dere. There was soo moche people aboute Dan, Bruges, and Ardenbrughe, and specyally at Sluse, for when the kynge came thyder they wyst not where to lodge, the erle of saynt Poule, the lorde of Coucy, the dolphyn of Auvergne, the lorde Dantoygne, and dyvers other lordes of Fraunce, to lye more at theyr ease, lodgynge at Bruges, and somtyme went to Sluse to the kynge to know when they sholde departe. And ever it was sayd to them Within iii. or iiii. dayes, or When the duke of Berrey is come, and that we have wynde to serve us. So ever the tyme passed, and the day shortened, and began to be foule and colde, and the nyghtes longe, wherwith dyvers of the lordes were not contente to tary so longe, and also theyr provysyons mynysshed.

CAP. LVIII

Howe the kyng of Armony passed into Englande in trust to fynde some meane of peas or good appoyntment, bytwene the kyng of Englande, and the kynge of Fraunce.

THUS in abydynge for the duke of Berrey, and for the constable, who were behynde, then kynge Lyon of Armony, who was in Fraunce, and had assygned hym by the kynge vi. M. frankes by the yere to maynteyne his estate, he toke on hym for a good entente to go into Englande, to speke with the kyng there and his counsayle, to se if he myght fynde ony maner of peas to be had bytwene the two royalmes of Englande and Fraunce; and so he departed fro his lodgynge of saynt Albeyne,[1] besyde saynt Denyce, al onely with his owne company, and with no grete apparel. Soo he rode to Boloyne, and there he toke a shyp, and so sayled forth tyll he came to Dover, and there he founde the erle of Cambrydge, and the erle of Buckyngham, and mo then a C. men of armes, and a ii. M. archers, who laye there to kepe that passage, for the brute ranne that the Frensshmen sholde lande there, or at Sandwyche. And the kynge laye at London, and parte of his counsayle with hym, and dayly herde tydynges fro all the portes of Englande. When the kynge of Armony was aryved at Dover, he had there good chere, bycause he was a straunger, and so he came to the kynges uncles there, who swetely receyved hym, and at tyme convenyent they demaunded of hym fro whens he came, and whether he wolde. The kyng answered and sayd, that in trust of goodness he was come thyder to se the kynge of Englande and his counsayle, to treate for peas bytwene Englande and Fraunce: for he sayd, that he thought the warre was not mete; for he sayd, By reason of warre bytwene these ii. royalmes, whiche hath endured so longe, the Sarazyns, Jewes and Turkes are waxed proude, for there is none that maketh them ony warre, and by occasyon therof I have lost my lande and royalme, and am not lyke to recover it agayne without there were ferme peas in

[1] *Saint Ouen.*

CAP. LVIII
Howe the kyng of Armony passed into Englande.

all Crystendome: and I wolde gladly shewe the matter that toucheth all Crystendome, to the kynge of Englande, and to his counsayle, as I have done to the Frensshe kyng. Then the kynges uncles demaunded of hym yf the Frensshe kynge had sent hym thyder or noo. He answered and sayd, Nay, there is noo man that sent me, but I am come hyder by myne owne mocyon, to se yf the kynge of Englande and his counsayle wolde ony thynge leane to ony treatye of peas. Then he was demaunded where the Frensshe kynge was. He answered, I byleve he be at Sluse, I sawe hym not syth I toke leve of hym at Senlyze. Then he was demaunded howe he coulde make ony treaty of peas, and had no charge so to do. And syr, yf ye be convayed to the kynge our nephewe, and to his counsayle, and the Frensshe kynge in the meane season entre with his puyssaunce into Englande, ye may happen therby to receyve grete blame, and your persone to be in grete jeoperdy with them of the countrey. Then the kynge answered and sayd, I am in suretye of the Frensshe kynge, for I have sente to hym desyrynge that tyll I retourne agayne, not to remove fro Sluse, and I repute hym so noble and soo well advysed, that he wyll graunt my desyre and that he wyll not entre into the see tyl I be come agayne to hym; wherfore syrs, I praye you in the instaunce of love and peas, to convey me to speke with the kynge, for I desyre gretely to se hym, or elles ye that be his uncles, yf ye have auctoryte to gyve me answere to all my demaundes. Then the erle of Buckyngham sayd, Syr kynge of Armony, we be ordeyned here to kepe and defende this passage and the fronters of Englande, by the kynge and his counsayle, and we have no charge to medle ony further with the busynes of the royalme, without we be otherwyse commaunded by the kyng: but syth ye be come for a good entente into this countrey, ye be ryght welcome; but syr, as for ony ferme answere, ye can have none of us, for as nowe we be not of the counsayle, but we shall convey you to the kynge without peryll or domage. The kynge thanked them, and sayd, I desyre nothynge elles but to se the kynge, and to speke with hym.

CAP. LIX

Howe the kynge of Armony[1] retourned out of Englande, and of the answere that was made to hym.

[1] *Amony* P.

WHEN the kynge of Armony was refresshed at Dover a day, and had spoken with the kynges uncles at good leysure, then he departed towarde London with a good conduyte that the lordes appoynted to hym for fere of ony rencountres. So longe he rode that he came to London, and in his rydynge thrughe London he was well regarded, bycause he was a straunger, and he had good chere made hym, and so was brought to the kynge, who laye in the Ryall at the quenes warderobe, and his counsayle were in London at theyr lodgynges. The Londonners were sore fortefyenge of theyr cyte when the comynge of the kynge of Armony was knowen; the kynges counsayle drewe to the kyng, to here what tydynges the kyng brought in that troublous season. When the kynge of Armony was come into the kynges presence, he made his salutacyon, and then began his processe on the state howe he was come out of Fraunce pryncypally to se the kynge of Englande, whome he had never sene before, and sayd howe he was ryght joyous to be in his presence, trustynge that some goodnes sholde come therby; and there he shewed by his wordes that to withstande the grete pestylence that was lykely to be in Englande, therfore he was come of his owne good wyl to do some good therin if he myght, not sent fro the Frensshe kynge, wyllynge to set some accorde and peas bytwene the ii. royalmes, Englande and Fraunce. Many fayre plesaunt wordes the kynge of Armony spake to the kynge of Englande, and to his counsayle. Then he was shortly answered thus: Syr kyng, ye be welcome into this royalme, for the kynge our soverayne lorde, and all we are glad to se you here; but syr, we saye that the kynge hath not here all his counsayle, but shortely they shall be here, and then ye shall be answered. The kyng of Armony was contente therwith, and so retourned to his lodgynge.

CAP. LIX

Howe the kynge of Armony retourned out of Englande.

Within iiii. dayes after the kynge was counsayled, and I thynke he had sente to his uncles to knowe theyr ententes, but they were not present at the answere gyvynge, to go to the palays of Westmynstre, and his counsayle with hym, suche as were aboute hym, and to sende for the kynge of Armony to come thyder. And when he was come into the presence of the kynge of Englande and his counsayle, the kynge sate downe, and the kynge of Armony by hym, and then the prelates and other of his counsayle. There the kynge of Armony rehersed agayne his requestes that he made, and also shewed wysely howe all Crystendome was sore decayed and feblysshed, by occasyon of the warres bytwene Englande and Fraunce, and howe that al the knyghtes and squyers of bothe royalmes entended to nothynge elles, but alwayes to be on the one parte, or of the other, Wherby the empyre of Constantynoble leseth, and is lyke to lese, for before this warre the knyghtes and squyers were wonte to adventure themselfe. And also the kynge of Armony shewed that by occasyon of this war he had lost his royalme of Armony, wherfore he desyred for Goddes sake that there myght be some treatye of peas had bytwene the ii. royalmes of Englande and Fraunce. To these wordes answered the archebysshop of Cauntorbury, for he had charge so to do, and he sayd, Syr kynge of Armony, it is not the maner, nor never was sene bytwene ii. suche enemyes as the kynge of Englande and the Frensshe kynge, that the kynge my soverayne lorde sholde be requyred of peas, and to entre his landes with a puyssaunt army; wherfore syr, we say to you, that yf it please you ye maye retourne to the Frensshe kynge, and cause hym and all his puyssaunce to retourne backe into theyr owne countreys; and when every man is at home, then yf it please you ye maye retourne agayne hyder, and then we shall gladly entende to your treatye. This was all the answere the kynge of Armony coulde gete there, and so he dyned with the kynge of Englande, and hadde as grete honoure as coulde be devysed; and the kynge offered hym many grete gyftes of golde and sylver; but he wolde take noone, though he had nede therof, but al onely a rynge to the value of a C. frankes. After dyner he toke his leve and retourned unto his lodgynge, and the nexte daye de-

CAP. LIX
Howe the kynge of Armony retourned out of Englande.

parted, and was in two dayes at Dover, and there toke his leve of suche lordes as were there, and so toke the see in a passagere, and aryved at Calays; and fro thens wente to Sluse, and there he spake with the Frensshe kynge, and with his uncles, and shewed them howe he hadde ben in Englande, and what answere he had. The Frensshe kyng and his uncles toke no regarde to his sayenge, but sente hym agayne backe into Fraunce, for theyr full entencyon was to entre into Englande as soone as they myght have wynde and wether, and the duke of Berre and the constable came to them: the wynde was sore contrary to them, for therwith they coulde never entre into Englande, but the wynde was good to goo into Scotlande.

CAP. LX

Howe the duke of Berre departed from Parys to come to Sluse; and howe the constable of Fraunce toke the see; and of the wynde that was contrary to hym.

THUS the duke of Berre herde masse in Our Lady chyrche in Parys, and there toke his leve, and sayd howe he wolde never entre there agayne tyll he hadde ben in Englande. Howbeit, for all his wordes he thought the contrary, for he had no desyre therto, for the wynter season was sore come on, and all the waye as he came he had letters fro the kynge, and fro the duke of Borgoyne, in hastynge of hym, certefyenge hym howe they taryed for noo thynge elles but for his comynge. Soo the duke of Berre rode alwayes forwarde, but it was but by small journeys.

And the constable of Fraunce departed fro the cyte of Lentryngyer,[1] standynge on the see syde in Bretayne, with grete nombre of men of armes and provysyon: he had a lxxii. shyppes, and with hym he hadde the closure of the felde made of tymbre. The constable and his company had good wynde at the begynnynge, but when they approched nere to Englande, the wynde rose fyerse and grete; and at

[1] *Landriguier, Tréguier.*

CAP. LX

Howe the duke of Berre departed from Parys to come to Sluse.

the entre of Margate at Tames mouthe, the wynde was so grete that whether they wolde or not theyr shyppes departed, soo that xx. abode not togyder. And some were dryven perforce into Tames, and there were taken by the Englysshmen; and specyally there was taken iii. or iiii. shyppes laden with parte of the closure of tymbre ordeyned to close in the felde, and certayne maysters, carpenters, and artificers, with them, and so they were brought to London, wherof the kynge had grete joye, and so hadde all the Londonners. And vii. of the constables shyppes were dryven with the wynde, with all the provysyon, and taken in Zelande; and the constable and other lordes with grete payne came to Sluse to the Frensshe kynge.

Of the constables comynge and his company the Frensshe kynge was ryght joyfull, and the kynge sayd to hym, Syr constable, when shall we departe; certaynly we have grete desyre to se Englande, wherfore I pray you avaunce forth all our busynes in hasty maner, and let us entre into the see shortely: myne uncle the duke of Berre wyll be here with us within these two dayes, he is at Lysle. Syr, sayd the constable, we can not departe tyll the wynde serve us, for the wynde is so sore agaynst us, and soo straynable, that the maryners saye they have herde none suche of a grete season before. Constable, sayd the kynge, I have ben in my vessell, and it pleaseth me gretely the ayre of the see, I byleve I shall be a good maryner, for the see dyd me no hurte. In the name of God, sayd the constable, it hath done hurte to me, for syr, we were in grete peryll comynge fro Brytayne hyder. The kynge demaunded Howe soo. Then the constable sayd, By fortune of the see, and grete wyndes that rose agaynst us in the fronters of Englande; and syr, we have lost of our shyppes and men, wherof I am ryght sory, yf I myght amende it; but syr, it is without remedy for this tyme. Thus the kynge and the constable devysed togyder in wordes, and alwayes the tyme passed, and the wynter approched, and the lordes laye there in grete colde and peryll.

The Flemynges gladly wolde not have hadde them retourne agayne thrughe theyr countrey, and they sayd one to another, Why the Devyll dothe not the Frensshe kynge passe over

CAP. LX

Howe the duke of Berre departed from Parys to come to Sluse.

into Englande, why taryeth he so longe in this countrey; are we not in povertye ynoughe, thoughe the Frensshemen make us no poorer. We thynke they wyll not passe into Englande this yere, for the royalme of Englande is not so easy to be wonne; Englysshmen be not of the condycyon of Frensshemen; what wyl they do in Englande. When the Englysshmen were in Fraunce, and over rode theyr countreys, then they hyd themselfe in theyr fortresses, and fled before them as the larke dothe before the hawke. And in the towne of Bruges, where as moost resorte was of the Frensshmen, they murmured, and were redy for waggyng of a rysshe to make debate and stryfe; and al began by the Frensshe lakeys, who had beten and hurte some of the Flemynges: so that yf the honest men of the towne had not armed them, and drawen into the market place to appease the ryot, there had not a lorde, knyght, nor squyer of Fraunce have scaped unslayne; for the comon people of the towne bare a grudge in theyr myndes for the batayle of Rosebeque, where theyr faders, bretherne, and frendes were slayne by the Frensshmen. God sent thyder at that tyme for the Frensshmen the lorde of Guystell, who as then was at Bruges. When he understode howe the comons wente to harneys, he fered all sholde be lost without remedy; howbeit, he lepte on his hors, with v. or vi. with hym, and rode into the stretes, and as he met with ony armed goynge to the market place warde, he sayd to them, Syrs, whether goo you; wyll you lose yourselfe; have ye not had warre ynoughe, so that ye have moche a do to gete your lyvynge. Retourne into your houses, there is nothynge to do, ye may put yourselfe and your towne in suche jeoperdy that all shall be lost; do you not knowe how the Frenssh kynge and all his puyssaunce and armye is here in this countrey? Soo with fayre wordes he appeased theym, and caused theym to retourne into theyr houses, whiche hadde not so lyghtly have ben done yf he had not ben there. The Frensshmen there were in suche fere that they closed themselfe in theyr lodgynges, there to abyde theyr adventure.

CAP. LXI

Howe the voyage into Englande was broken by reason of the wyndes and of wynter, and by counsayle of the duke of Berre.

SO fynally the duke of Berre came to Sluse to the kynge, and the kynge sayd to hym, A, fayre uncle, how gretely I have desyred to se you; why have you taryed so long; we had ben as nowe in Englande and fought with our enemyes, if ye had ben come. The duke began to smyle and to excuse hymselfe, and shewed not incontynent what laye in his harte; fyrst he thought he wolde se what provysyon and ordenaunce was made, and to se the navey that was named so goodly. Soo they were there a vii. dayes, that every daye it was sayd We shall departe to morowe; howbeit, surely the wynde was soo contrary that in no wyse they coulde sayle into Englande: wynter was well on, it was past saynt Andrewes tyde, it was no good season for so many noble men to take the see. And many of theyr shyppes were redy crossed in a redynes to departe; some were in theyr shyppes to be the formest sholde passe, as syr Robert, and syr Phylyp Artoys, syr Henry of Bare, syr Peter of Navare, and dyvers other. Then the kynges counsayle drewe togyder to se howe they sholde perceyver in theyr journey. But the duke of Berre brake all, and shewed so many reasons reasonable, that suche as had moost desyre to goo were gretely dyscouraged. He sayd it was a grete foly to counsayle the Frensshe kynge, who in a maner was but a chylde, to take the see in that season of the yere, and to go fyght with suche people as we knowe not theyr condycyon, nor the way thyder: And as it is sayd it is an evyll countrey to make warre in; for thoughe we were al there a lande, yet they wolde not fyght with us but when they lyst, and we dare not then leve our provysyon behynde us, for yf we do it wyl be lost; and they that wyl make suche a voyage so ferre of, hath nede to begyn in the harte of the yere, and not in wynter; call all the maryners togyder, and loke yf they wyl not saye that my wordes be

CAP. LXI
Howe the voyage into Englande was broken by reason of the wyndes and of wynter.

good; for thoughe we be as nowe a thousande and v. hundred shyppes, yet or we come there we shal not be iii. hundred; then beholde what peryll we sholde put ourselfe in. I saye it not bycause I wolde have the journey lefte, but I speke it by waye of counsayle; and syth that the moost parte of the royalme enclyneth to this journey, therfore fayre broder of Borgoyne, I wolde that you and I sholde go, but I wolde not counsayle that the kynge sholde goo, for yf ony mysfortune sholde fall, it shal be layde to us. Well, sayd the Frensshe kynge, who was present at all those wordes, yf none wyll go, I wyll go. Then the lordes began to smyle, and sayd, The kynge hath a couragyous wyll; howbeit, they toke counsayle to deferre that voyage tyll Aprell or May nexte after, and theyr provysyons, as bysquet, powdred flesshe and wyne, sholde be kepte saufely tyll then: and there they ordeyned that the lordes and theyr companyes sholde retourne thyder agayne in the moneth of Marche. Anone this was knowen, and so brake the voyage for that season, the whiche cost the royalme of Fraunce a C. M. frankes xxx. tyme tolde.

CAP. LXII

Howe kynge Charles of Fraunce and the Frensshe lordes retourned evyll contente fro Sluse, and out of Flaunders, where as theyr provysyons were made, to have gone into the royalme of Englande; and of the feest that was made at London.

AS ye have herde before, there was made a grete apparell in Fraunce by the kynge there, and the lordes, with grete cost and charge, with shyppes and galayes, to passe the see into Englande, to make warre there; and howe this voyage was broken by wether, and bycause that wynter was so nere hande. Then it was ordeyned by the counsayle that the kynge and the lordes sholde retourne, every man to his owne home, and every thynge to abyde

in the same state unto the moneth of Marche or Aprell, and then every man to be redy at the kynges commaundement.

CAP. LXII
Howe kynge Charles of Fraunce retourned evyll contente fro Sluse.

Then there myght well have ben seene lordes and knyghtes soore dyspleased, and specyally suche as were of farre countreys, and had sore travayled theyr bodyes and spente theyr money, in trust to have had a good season, as the erle of Savoy, the erle of Armynake, and the erle daulphyn of Auvergne, and a C. other grete lordes, that departed in grete dyspleasure, bycause they had not ben in Englande; in lykewyse so dyd the Frensshe kynge, but as thenne he coulde not amende it. So thus departed all maner of people, some mery, and some gretely dyspleased and angry; and the offycers abode styll there behynde, for too make shyfte to sell theyr provysyons for theyr maysters profyte, and to take money for them yf they myght. But they wyst not to whome nor where, for it that coste a hundred frankes was solde for x. frankes, and for lesse money. The erle dalphyn of Awvergne sayd unto me, that by his faythe he hadde there provysyons, the whiche coste hym ten thousande frankes, and when he retourned homewarde agayne he lost all togyther; and soo sayd many knyghtes and squyers, and other people of Fraunce.

And when these tydynges were knowen in the royalme of Englande, some were ryght joyfull and gladde therof, as suche people that doubted the Frensshe mennes commynge; and some were angry and dyspleased therwith, whiche was suche people as thought to have some promocyon and profyte by them. So thenne there was made at the cyte of London a grete feest, and thyther came all the lordes, suche as hadde kepte the portes and passages of the royalme of Englande. And then the kynge helde also a noble feest at Westmynstre on Crystmasse day, and there were thre dukes made. Fyrste, the erle of Cambrydge was made the duke of Yorke; the erle of Buckyngham his broder, was made duke of Glocestre; and the thyrde was the erle of Oxenforde, and he was made the duke of Irelande. This feest endured with grete revellees and tryumphes. So thus the people of the royalme of Englande, as they thought themselfe, that they hadde escaped a grete peryll: and thenne dyvers of them sayd

CAP. LXII

Howe kynge Charles of Fraunce retourned evyll contente fro Sluse.

amonge themselfe that they wolde never sette more by the Frensshemen, and they thought that all the assemble of the Frensshemen that was made at Sluse was but to fere the Englysshemen, and to have caused the duke of Lancastre and his company to retourne agayne out of Spayne.

CAP. LXIII

Howe a squyer called Jaques le Grys was accused in the parlyament house at Parys before all the lordes there present, by a knyght called John of Carongne, and what jugement was gyven upon them; and howe they justed at utteraunce in Parys, in a place called saynt Katheryne, behynde the Temple; and howe Jaques le Grys was confounded.

IN this tyme grete brute ther was in Fraunce, and in the lowe marches, of a feate of armes that sholde be done at Parys in utteraunce, for soo the matter was judged in the parlyament chambre at Parys: the whiche plee hadde endured a yere bytwene these two partyes. The one was a squyer called Jaques le Grys, and the other partye was a knyght called John of Carongne,[1] and they were bothe of the lande and housholde of the erle Peter of Alanson, and they were wel byloved of theyr lorde; and specyally this squyer Jaques le Grys was byloved, and trysted with his lorde above ony other persone in his courte or housholde. And bycause that mortall batayle folowed bytwene them, and they beynge bothe of one lordes housholde, every man hadde grete mervayle therof: soo that out of dyvers countreys grete multytude of people came to Parys at the daye of batayle for to se it. I shall shewe you the hole matter as I was then enfourmed.

[1] *Carouge.*

Soo it was that on a season this knyght, called John of Carongne, toke an entrepryse upon hym to goo over the see for the avauncement of his honoure, whereunto

he hadde ben longe tyme to accomplysshe. Soo he departed from his lorde the erle of Alanson, to doo his voyage. And also he toke his leve of his wyfe, who as then was reputed a fayre lady and a yonge, and he lefte her in a castell of his owne on the marches of Perche, otherwyse called Argentuell, and so entred into his voyage, and his wyfe laye styll at her castell in a wyse and sage maner.

CAP. LXIII

Howe a squyer called Jaques le Grys was accused in the parlyament house at Parys.

Soo here beganne the matter by the devylles temptacyon, whiche entred into the body of the squyer Jaques le Grys, who was with the erle of Alanson his lorde, for he was as one of his counsayle. And so he determyned in his mynde to doo an evyll dede, whiche he derely bought afterwarde; howbeit, the evyll that he dyd coulde never be proved in hym, nor he wolde never confesse it. This squyer Jaques le Grys sette his mynde on the wyfe of the foresayd knyght John of Carongne, in the absence of her husbande, and he knewe well that she was in the castell of Argentuell, but with her owne company and housholde servauntes. And soo on a mornynge he toke a good hors and departed from Alanson, and so rode on the spurres with grete haste tyll he came to the ladyes castell. And when he was thyder come, the ladyes servauntes made hym good chere, bycause theyr mayster and he were companyons and felowes togyder, and served bothe one lorde and mayster. And as for the lady she thought none evyll in hym, for she knewe nothynge of his entente, nor wherfore he was come thyther; howbeit, swetely she receyved hym, and ledde hym into her chambre, and shewed hym parte of her busynes. Then this squyer, Jaques le Grys, to accomplysshe his folysshe appetyte, desyred the lady that he myghte se the dongeon, for he sayd it was a grete parte of his comynge thyder to se it. The lady lyghtly graunted hym his desyre. And soo she and he wente thyder all alone, and nother chamberer nor varlet entred with them, for the lady had noo mystrust in hym of ony dyshonoure. And as sone as they were entred into the dongeon, Jaques le Grys closed the doore after theym. The lady knewe not therof, for she wente on before, and thought that the wynde had shotte the dore. And so when they were togyder thus alone, Jaques toke the

CAP. LXIII

Howe a squyer called Jaques le Grys was accused in the parlyament house at Parys.

lady in his armes and embraced her, and dyscovered to her his entent. The lady was sore abasshed and wolde gladly have gone to the dore, but she coulde not; for he was a bygge man, and so layde her downe on the carpet, and so by force dyd his pleasure with her. And when he had done what he lyst he opened the dore and so departed; and the lady sore dyspleased and abasshed of that adventure, taryed styl alone in the donjeon. But at the knyghtes departing[1] she sayd wypynge, Jaket, Jaket, ye have not well done thus to shame me; but the blame shall not rest on me, but on you, yf God suffre my husbande ones to retourne home agayne. Soo Jaket toke his horse and departed, and rode agayne to his mayster the erle of Alanson, and was there at his rysynge aboute ix. of the clocke: and at iiii. of the clocke in the mornynge he was sene there before. I shall shewe you why I speke these wordes, bycause of the grete plee that folowed after, for the comyssaryes of the parlyament of Parys had the matter in examynacyon. Thus the lady of Carongne abode styl in her castel after this sorowfull deed was done to her, and dyscovered the matter to no creature, but kepte her sorowe as secrete as she myght, for she sawe wel to speke as then therof, she myght have more blame then honoure; but she remembred well the day, houre, and tyme, that the dede was doone. And soo after the tyme came that the lorde of Carongne came home from his voyage, the lady his wyfe made hym good chere. The day passed and the nyght came, and the knyght wente to bedde, and the lady wolde not, wherof the knyght had grete mervayle, and often desyred her to come to bedde; and ever she blessyd her, and walked up and downe the chambre studyenge and musynge; fynally, when all her servauntes were gone to bedde, then she came to her husbande, and fell downe on her knees, and lamentably shewed hym all her adventure. The knyght coulde not byleve her; howbeit, the lady sayd soo moche that he agreed well that it was so, and sayd, Certaynly lady, syth the matter is so as ye shewe me, I pardon you, but the knyght shall dye for his dede, by the advyse and counsayle of my frendes and youres; and yf your wordes be founde untrue, ye shall never come in my company. The lady ever more and more certefyed hym

[1] *departed* P.

CAP. LXIII

Howe asquyer called Jaques le Grys was accused in the parlyament house at Parys.

that it was true. So that night passed. The nexte daye the knyght wrote many letters, and sente them to all his wyffes frendes, and also to his owne, soo that in a shorte tyme they were all come and assembled togyder at the castell of Argentuell. And when they were all in a chambre, then he began to shewe them the cause why he hadde sent for them, and there made his wyfe to shewe them all the matter fro poynte to poynte, wherof they all hadde grete mervayle: so there he demaunded of them counsayle. And he was counsayled that he sholde drawe to his lorde the erle of Alanson, and shewe hym all the matter; and soo he dyd. And the erle, who gretely loved this foresayd Jaques le Grys, wolde not byleve hym, and soo gave daye to the partyes to be before hym at a day lymytted. And also he commaunded that the lady that hadde appeched Jaques le Grys sholde be there presente, for to shewe the more playnly the trouthe of the matter; and soo she was with a grete nombre of her lygnage; soo the pletynge was grete and longe in the erles presence. And Jaques le Grys was accused of his dede by the knyght the lorde of Carongne, by relacyon of his wyfe, who shewed there the case as it was fallen. Jaques le Grys exscused hymselfe, sayenge, howe he was not gylty therin; and the lady layde it sore to his charge, and he ever denyed it, and hadde mervayle by his wordes why the lady dyd hate hym. He proved by them of the erle of Alansons house, that the same daye at foure of the clocke in the mornynge he was sene there in his maysters castell; and his mayster sayd and affyrmed that at ix. of the clocke he was with hym at his up-rysynge, wherfore the erle sayd it was not possyble for hym to go and come, and to do that dede in foure houres and an halfe, to ryde xxiii. myles;[1] wherfore the erle sayd to the lady howe she dyd but dreame it; wherfore he wolde maynteyne his squyer, and commaunded the lady to speke noo more of the matter. But the knyght, who was of grete courage, and well trusted and byleved his wyfe, wolde not agree to that oppynyon, but soo wente to Parys, and shewed the matter there at the parlyament, and there appeled Jaques le Grys, who appered and answered to his appele, and there layde in pledges to accomplysshe the ordenaunce of the parlyament.

[1] *lieues.*

CAP. LXIII

Howe a squyer called Jaques le Grys was accused in the parlyament house at Parys.

The plee bytwene them endured more then a yere and an halfe, and they coulde not be agreed, for the foresayd knyght helde hymselfe sore of the informacyon of his wyfe: and bycause the matter was so sore publysshed abrode, he sayd he wolde maynteyne his quarell to the dethe; wherwith the erle of Alanson was sore dyspleased with the poore knyght, and often tymes wolde have had hym slayne, but that the matter was in the parlyament. So longe theyr plee endured, that the parlyament determyned, bycause the lady coulde make no proffe agaynst Jaques le Grys but by her owne wordes, that there sholde be batayle at utteraunce bytwene them. And soo, on a day prefyxed, the knyght and his wyfe and the squyer beynge present, judgement was gyven, that the nexte Mondaye after, mortall batayle sholde be done bytwene the knyght and the squyer, whiche was in the yere of our Lorde God M.CCC.lxxx. and vii.; at whiche tyme the Frensshe kynge and his lordes were at Sluse, to the entente to passe over the see into Englande. And when the kynge herde of that matter howe a daye of batayle was taken to be at Parys, the kynge sayd he wolde se that batayle bytwene the knyght and the squyer: the duke of Berre, the duke of Borgoyne, the duke of Borbone, and the constable of Fraunce, who had also grete desyre to se that batayle, sayd to the kynge, Syr, it is good reason that ye be there, and that it be done in your presence. Then the kynge sent to Parys, comaundynge that the journey and batayle bytwene the squyer and the knyght sholde be relonged tyl his comynge to Parys; and so his commaundement was obeyed.

So the kynge then retourned fro Sluse, and holde the feest of Crystmas at Arras, and the duke of Borgoyne at Lysle. And in the meane season all other men of warre passed and retourned into Fraunce, every man to his place as it were ordeyned by the marshalles, but the grete lordes retourned to Parys to se the sayd batayle. Thus the kynge and his uncles and the constable came to Parys. Then the lystes were made in a place called saynt Katheryne, behynde the Temple; there was soo moche people, that it was mervayle to beholde. And on the one syde of the lystes there was made grete scaffoldes, that the lordes myght the better

CAP. LXIII

se the batayle of the ii. champyons. And so they bothe came to the felde armed at all peaces, and there eche of them was set in theyr chayre: the erle of saynt Poule governed John of Carongne, and the erle of Alansons company with Jaques le Grys. And when the knyght entred into the felde, he came to his wyfe, who was there syttynge in a chayre, covered in blacke, and he sayd to her thus: Dame, by your enformacyon and in your quarell I do put my lyfe in adventure as to fyght with Jaques le Grys; ye knowe if the cause be just and true. Syr, sayd the lady, it is as I have sayd; wherfore ye maye fyght surely, the cause is good and true. With those wordes the knyghte kyssed the lady, and toke her by the hande, and then blessyd hym, and soo entred into the felde. The lady sate styll in the blacke chayre, in her prayers to God and to the Vyrgyne Mary, humbly prayenge them, by theyr specyall grace, to sende her husbande the vyctory accordynge to the ryght he was in. This lady was in grete hevynes, for she was not sure of her lyfe: for yf her husbande sholde have ben dyscomfyted, she was judged without remedy to be brente, and her husbande hanged. I can not say whether she repented her or not that the matter was so forwarde, that bothe she and her husbande were in grete peryll; howbeit, fynally she must as then abyde the adventure. Then these two champyons were set one agaynst another, and so mounted on theyr horses, and behaved them nobly, for they knewe what perteyned to deades of armes. There were many lordes and knyghtes of Fraunce that were come thyder to se that batayle. The two champyons justed at theyr fyrst metyng, but none of them dyd hurte other; and after the justes they lyghted on foote to perfourme theyr batayle, and soo fought valyauntly: and fyrst, John of Carongne was hurte in the thyghe, wherby al his frendes were in grete fere; but after that he fought so valyauntly, that he bette downe his adversary to the erthe, and threst his swerde in his body, and soo slewe hym in the felde; and then he demaunded yf he had done his devoyre or not; and they answered, that he hadde valyauntly acheved his batayle. Then Jaques le Grys was delyvered to the hangman of Parys, and he drewe hym to the gybet of Mountfawcon, and there hanged hym up. Then

How a squyer called Jaques le Grys was accused in the parlyament house at Parys.

CAP. LXIII How a squyer called Jaques le Grys was accused in the parlyament house at Parys.

John of Carongne came before the kynge, and kneled downe, and the kynge made hym to stande up before hym, and the same daye the kynge caused to be delyvered to hym a thousande frankes, and reteyned hym to be of his chambre, with a pencyon of ii. hundred pounde by the yere durynge the terme of his lyfe: then he thanked the kynge and the lordes, and wente to his wyfe and kyssed her, and then they wente togyder to the chyrche of Our Lady in Parys, and made theyr offerynge, and then retourned to theyr lodgynges. Then this syr John of Carongne taryed not longe in Fraunce, but wente with syr John Boucequaut, syr John of Bordes, and syr Loys Grat;[1] all these wente to se and vysyte the Holy Sepulture, and to se Lamorabaquyn, of whome in those dayes there was moche spekynge; and with them wente Robonet of Bolowne, a squyer of honoure with the Frensshe kynge, who in his dayes made many voyages aboute in the worlde.

[1] *Giac.*

CAP. LXIIII

How the kyng of Aragon dyed, and howe the archebysshoppe of Burdeaus was sette in pryson in Barcelona.

THE same season, aboute Candelmas, kynge Peter of Aragon fell syke in his bed. And when he sawe that he sholde dye, he caused his two sonnes to come before hym, John the elder, and Martyne duke of Blasmont in Aragon, and sayd to them, Fayre sones, I leve you in good poynte, and all the busynes of the royalme standeth well and clere; kepe peas and love bytwene you, and kepe fayth and honoure eche to other, ye shall doo the better; as for the feates of the chyrche, accordynge to my conscyence, and for the moost sure way, I have alwayes holden the newtralyte bytwene the ii. popes, and so I wolde ye sholde do, tyl the determynacyon bytwene them apere more clerely. The two sones answered and sayd, Syr, gladly we shall obey that ye commaunde and ordeyne, as it is reason. Thus in this case dyed kynge Peter of Aragon, who had ben a ryght valyaunt prynce in his dayes, and gretely had augmented

CAP. LXIIII

How the kyng of Aragon dyed.

the crowne and royalme of Aragon, and had conquered the royalme of Mayjorke, and had anexed it to his owne crowne; and he was buryed in the good cyte of Barcelona, and there he lyeth. And when his dethe was knowen in Avygnon with pope Clement and his cardynalles, they wrote incontynent to the Frensshe kynge and to his uncles, to the duke of Barre and to the duches, who was of theyr oppynyon, and they were fader and moder to the yonge quene that sholde be in Aragon, the lady Yolent; and also they wrote to her that all these sholde styre and move the yonge kynge of Aragon to be of theyr opynyon. The Frensshe kynge, the duke of Berre, and the duke of Borgoyne sente into Aragon in legacyon a cardynall to preche, and to styre the yonge kynge and his broder and the people of that royalme of Aragon to take the oppynyon of Clement: the cardynall dydde so moche, with the ayde of the lady Yolent of Barre, as then quene of Aragon, who gladly enclyned to that way, bycause she was so instantly requyred therto by her fader and moder, and by the Frensshe kynge, and dukes of Berre and Burgoyne her cosyns, soo that she brought the kynge and the royalme to be of the opynyon of pope Clement; howbeit, the kynge wolde have ben styl a newter, as his fader was.

In the same season that the kynge of Aragon thus dyed, there was at Barcelona the archebysshoppe of Burdeaus, whome the duke of Lancastre had sente thyder in ambassade. I shall shewe you the cause why. The prynce of Wales, bycause he was duke and lorde of the countrey of Acquytayne, and that all his neyghbours doubted hym, as the Frensshe kynge, the kynge of Aragon, the kynge of Spayne, and the kynge of Navare, yea, and also kynges that were Sarazyns, that harde grete spekynge of hym, for the good fortune and noble chyvalrye that he was of; and he hadde a certayne alyaunce and confyderacyon with kynge Peter of Aragon, whiche leage was sworne and sealed bytwene them, and it was confyrmed by the kynge of Englande, fader to the Prynce. And amonge other thynges it was comprysed, that the kynge of Englande nor the duke and lorde of Acquytayne sholde make ony warre, nor consente to make ony warre, agaynst the royalme of Aragon; for the whiche the kynge

CAP. LXIIII
How the kyng of Aragon dyed.

of Aragon sware and sealed, for hym and for his ayres, that every yere he sholde serve the prynce of Acquytayne with the nombre of fyve hundred speres, agaynst whosoever he hadde to doo withall, or elles to sende unto hym as moche money as sholde wage fyve hundreth speres. And soo it was that as then there was x. yeres rynne in arerages, that the kynge of Aragon had payde nothyng, nor done ony servyce to the kynge of Englande nor to his deputyes. And when the duke of Lancastre wente out of Englande, he hadde with hym letters patentes, sealed with the grete seale of Englande, wherby he was stablysshed to be the kynges lyeutenaunt in the marches of Burdeaus, Bayon, and Acquytayne. And the kynge gave hym full puyssaunce and auctoryte royall to demaunde all ryghtes and due accyons, as well of the royalme of Aragon as elles where, and wolde that the duke sholde have the profyte without ony excepcyon, and what soo ever he dyd to be ferme and stable. So thus when the duke of Lancastre had ben a season in the towne of saynt James in Galyce, he remembred hymselfe of the busynes of Aragon, and perceyved well, by reason of his commyssyon, howe the kynge of Aragon was sore in his det in a grete some of money, longe renne in arrerages, whiche he thought if he myght gete it sholde gretely ayde hym in his warres of Castell. And soo he sente to the archebysshop of Burdeaus and to syr John Harpedan, who was senesshall of all Burdeloys, commaundynge them bothe, or at the leest one of them, to go into Aragon to the kynge there, and to shewe hym playnly howe he was in grete arrerages with the kynge of Englande and with the duke of Acquytayne. The archebysshoppe and the senesshall behelde well the duke of Lancastres letters, and soo toke counsayle togyder theron: and there they determyned that it was best that the senesshall sholde tary styll at Burdeaus, and the bysshop to take on hym the charge of that voyage, and soo he dyd. And he came into Aragon in so evyll a season, that the kynge there laye syke and dyed; and after the kynges dethe, the archebysshop poursued his cause and folowed the kynges chyldren and the counsayle of the royalme, who came to the kynges enterment to the cyte of Barcelona; and this bysshop pursued his ambassade so effectuously, that he was set in a

courtoyse pryson, so that he coulde not departe when he wolde. When these tydynges came to Burdeaus to the senesshall there, he sayd, I thought never none otherwyse, for the archebysshop is hasty and heedy; I thynke nowe it had ben better that I had gone, for I wolde have spoken moore mekely; there is a maner thrughout all the worlde howe to demaunde a mannes ryght. The senesshall sente these tydynges to the duke of Lancastre into Galyce, who was therwith ryght sore dyspleased and evyll contente with the kynge of Aragon and his counsayle that they had put the archebysshop into pryson for doynge of his ambassade. Then the duke of Lancastre wrote to the companyons of the garyson of Lourde, that they sholde make warre agaynst them of Barcellona, where as the archebysshoppe of Burdeaus was in pryson.

CAP. LXIIII

How the kyng of Aragon dyed.

John of Byerne, who was capytayne there and senesshall of Bygore, Pier Danchyn,[1] Ernalton of Resten,[2] Ernalton of saynt Colombe, and other of the garyson of Lourde, were gretely rejoysed when they herde that tydynges, and then began to rynne into the royalme of Aragon, to the portes of Barcelona, so that no merchaunt durst go abrode. Also in Aragon there was another myschefe, for the yonge kynge John of Aragon wolde have ben crowned kynge of Aragon, but the good townes wolde not consente therto, without he sware fyrst solemply that he sholde never demaunde tayle, taxe, nor inposycyon in all that countrey, and dyvers other thynges that he sholde swere and put it in wrytynge, sealed, yf he wolde be crowned kynge: whiche thynge semed to hym and to his counsayle to be ryght prejudycyall; wherfore he thretened to make them warre, and specyally to them of the cyte of Barcelona, for the kynge sayd they were to ryche and to prowde.

[1] *Antin.*
[2] *Rostan.*

In the same season there was in Languedocke and on the fronters of Auvergne and of Rouergue towarde Pezanas and the cyte of Duzes, a maner of men of armes called the rowtes, and they dayly multyplyed to do yvell. And iiii. men of armes were capytaynes, who demaunded warre agaynst every man, they cared not agaynst whom; theyr names were Peter of Mountfawcon, Geffray Chastelyer, Haingue de Sorge, and the Goulent: they had a foure hundreth men under them,

CAP. LXIIII How the kyng of Aragon dyed.

who ryfled and pylled the countrey where as they were conversaunt. And when they were enfourmed that the archebysshop of Burdeaux was in pryson in Aragon, and that the duke of Lancastre was not contente with the Aragonoys, and also that the kynge of Aragon was evyll pleased with the good townes of his royalme and countrey; and they were of these tydynges gretely rejoysed, for suche people as they were are rather pleased with evyll dedes then with good. They toke counsayle bytwene them, and determyned to approche to Aragon, and to gete some forteres[1] on those fronters, thynkynge then that the duke[2] of Aragon or elles some of the good townes wolde entreate with them to theyr profyte. So they rode costynge the countrey, and set theyr myndes to gete yf they myght the castel of Dulcen,[3] beynge in the archbysshopryche of Narbone, bytwene the royalme of Aragon and Fraunce, on the departynge of bothe royalmes. They came thyder at suche a poynte and by nyght, that they founde it but symply watched nor kepte; they dyd soo moche that they wan it, and were lordes therof, wherby al the countrey was afrayde, and specyally they of Parpygnen, for it was but iiii. legges thens. Also they of Lourde gate the same weke a castel in Aragon, a iiii. legges fro Barcelona, called the olde castell of Rolbays,[4] perteynynge to the countesse of Castell Boze,[5] cosyn germayne to the erle of Foys. The lady was gretely abasshed when her castell was so taken; she sente to her cosyn, the erle of Foys, desyrynge hym for Goddes sake to rendre agayne to her the sayd castell, whiche they of his countrey of Berne had taken fro her. The erle sent to her that she sholde not be afrayde for ony thynge, certefyenge her that it was taken but al onely to make war agaynst them of Barcelona, who helde in pryson for a smal cause the bysshop of Burdeaus, sayenge, howe she sholde have it ryght well agayne without ony domage. The lady was well pleased with his answere, and dyssymuled the matter, and went and lay at another castell nere to Roquebertin; and they of the castell of Rolbays, and of Dulcen, and of Lourde made sore warre on the fronters of Aragon. And, to say the trouth, the kynge there dyssymuled the matter, to chastyse therby the good townes that were agaynst hym; so that the good

[1] *forterers* P.
[2] *roy.*
[3] *Tuchan.*
[4] *Rosanez.*
[5] *Castelbon.*

townes were sore dyspleased with the kynge, for they of Barcelona, of Perpygnen, and of other townes, coulde not exercyse theyr merchaundyse, but they were taken and raunsomed. Then they of Barcelona advysed to delyver the archebysshop of Burdeaus out of pryson, and for his delyveraunce to speke with the kynge, as it was reason; and soo pryvely by a meane they treated with the kynges broder, syr Martyne duke of Blasemont, who was gretly in the grace of all the people, desyrynge hym to be meane to the kynge his broder, that they myght be in peas with them of Lourde and of Rolbays. He promysed them to do his best to kepe them in his favoure; and he dyd so moche with the kynge his broder, that the archebysshop of Burdeaus was delyvered out of pryson and sente into Burdeloys; and anone after the erle of Foys dyd so moche, that the vycountesse recovered agayne her castel, and suche as helde it departed. This servyce dyd the erle of Foys that yere to the duke of Lancastre.

CAP. LXIIII
How the kyng of Aragon dyed.

When the kynge of Aragon sawe that the countesse of castell Boze had soo soone agayne recovered her castell, he sent for her, and she came to hym; then the kynge layde to her charge howe she had suffered the Englysshmen to entre into her castell to make warre to his royalme, saynge how she had done to hym a grete trespace. The lady truely excused her and sayd, Syr, as God knoweth, and by the fayth I owe to you, the day and houre that tydynges came to me of the takynge of my castell by them of Lourde, I never had before no treaty with the Englysshmen; but, syr, incontynent I sent to my cosyn, the erle of Foys, prayng hym for Goddes sake to gete me agayne my castell, seynge that they that had gotten it were of his countrey of Byerne, and were yssued out of Lourde; and the erle sente to me, and bad me not doubte, sayenge how the takyng of it was but to make warre agaynst them of Barcelona. Wel, sayd the kynge, prove your wordes by your cosyn the erle of Foys, and ye shall enjoy peasybly styll your castell. With a good wyl, syr, sayd the lady: she sent to her cosyn, the erle of Foys, who was at Ortays in Byerne, prayng hym to apease the matter with the kynge of Aragon. The erle then sent letters to the kynge by a knyght of his, called

CAP. LXIIII

How the kyng of Aragon dyed.

syr Rycarte[1] of Sautelyn,[2] desyrynge the kynge to suffre his cosyn the vycountes to be in peas and to lyve in rest under hym, or elles surely he wolde dysplease hym. The kynge of Aragon toke the excusacyons in gre, and made grete chere to the erles knyght, and sayd howe the countesse had but wel done, syth her cosyn the erle of Foys dyd so largely excuse her. Thus the lady lyved in peas. But the merchauntes of Barcelona and of the fronters there aboute were not in no rest for them of Lourde, but often tymes were taken and pylled, without they were agreed and patesed with them; and so they had dyvers in Castellon[3] and in Aragon. In lykewyse so dyd they of the garyson of Dulcen, and dyd worse then they dyd before, for they were more egre and over ran the countrey of Aragon then they of Lourde dyd, bycause they were poore, they cared not whom they toke, as well offycers of the kynges and squyers as merchauntes. Soo that the kynges counsayle toke advyse, bycause the good townes murmured and sayd howe the kynge dystroyed them, and he ought to susteyne them.

When the yonge kynge of Aragon understode that his men murmured and spake of hym otherwyse then they sholde do, bycause of them of the garyson of Dulcen, he was therwith sore dyspleased, bycause he was newly fallen to his faders herytage, who was so well byloved in his royalme of all his people. Then he spake to a cosyn of his, a grete baron in Aragon, syr Raymon of Baghes, and sayd, Syr Raymon, I desyre you to ryde to Dulcen, and demaunde of them that be there what thyng they desyre of me or of my royalme, and trete so with them that they may departe thens, outher by fayrnes or otherwyse. The knyght departed, and sente to Dulcen an heraulde before hym, shewynge them howe he wolde trete with them. When Mountfawcon and le Goulus and the other capytaynes understode that syr Raymon of Baghes wolde trete with them, then they thought at the leest to gete some money, and sayd to the heraulde, Syr, saye to your mayster fro us that he maye come to us surely, for we wyll no hurte to hym. The heraulde retourned to syr Raymon, who upon his wordes departed fro Paregant,[4] and came to Dulcen, and demaunded of them why they taryed there on the fronters of Aragon. They answered

[1] *Cycarte* P.
[2] *Saverdun.*
[3] *Catalonia.*
[4] *Perpignan.*

and sayd, We abyde here the army of Fraunce that sholde go into Castel to go in company with them. A, syrs, sayd syr Raymon, yf ye tary therfore ye shall abyde a grete season. The kynge of Aragon wyll not retayne you so longe, nor yet the countrey suffre you so longe. Well, syr, sayd they, if he wyll not enterteyne us so longe we can not do withall, yet we must lyve; yf he or the countrey wyll by this our garyson, we wyll departe, or elles not. Well, sayd syr Raymon, what wyll ye desyre to departe? They answered, lx. M. frankes: we be iiii. capytaynes, that is to eche of us xv. M. frankes. In the name of God, sayd syr Raymon, that is money ynoughe: I wyll speke with the kynge; and so departed, and sayd it were better for the comon profyte of the countre that the kynge payde that money, then to take a greter domage; and that he sayd to appease them: howbeit, he thought the contrary.

CAP. LXIIII How the kyng of Aragon dyed.

Thus he departed fro them, and gave them understandynge that they sholde have as moche as they desyred and more, and rode to the kynge to Perpyghnen, and shewed hym what these pyllers desyred. Well, sayd the kynge, it is behoveable that the countrey be delyvered of them, and that they be payde as theves and brybours sholde be payde; yf I may gete them, they shall be hanged; other payment gete they none of me; but all the dyffyculte is, how to gete them out of theyr garyson. Syr, sayd syr Raymon, that shall be done ryght well; let them alone. Well, sayd the kynge, doo as ye thynke best; I wyll medle no more therin, but that I wolde they were delyvered out of the countrey. Then on a day syr Raymon gathered a company togyder of men of armes, a v. hundred speres, secretly, and made a squyer of Gascoyne capytayne, a valyaunt man of armes, called Naudon Seghen, and layde them in a busshment within a lytell myle of Dulcen, and sayd to them, Syrs, when they of the garyson yssue out, do so that they may all be taken or slayne, that the countrey maye be clene ryd of them. Then syr Raymon sente to them of Dulcen, that they sholde lepe on theyr horses and yssue out and rynne before the towne of Perpyghnen, to put the vyllaynes therof in fere, elles they wolde not obey nor gyve nothynge. They of Dulcen were ryght joyfull of these tydynges, thynk-

CAP. LXIIII How the kyng of Aragon dyed.

ynge that all had ben trouth, and so armed them the same day that the busshment was layde for them, and so departed fro the garyson and rode towarde Perpyghnen, and so came to the barryers and made theyr musters. And in theyr retournynge, thynkynge to have passed surely in peas, when they were in the myddes of the way, they were sodaynly encountred by Naudon Seghnen and his company, to the nombre of v. C. speres, and so dasshed in amonge them; then they saw wel howe they were dysceyved and trapped; and then they drewe togyder, and fought as longe as they myght endure, whiche was not longe, for there were many of them were evyll armed, and so shortely they were dyscomfyted. There was slayne Geffray Chastelyer, Hange de Sorge, Guyot Moresque, John de Gueulant, and many other; and there was taken Peter of Mountfawcon, Amlardan of saynt Just, and a xl. other, and brought prysoners to Perpyghnen; and as they passed thrughe the stretes, they of the towne yssued out of theyr houses, and halowed after them as thoughe they had ben wolves, and so they were set in prysones. The same season the duke of Berre was come to Carcassone, and on the fronters of Aragon; he came fro Avygnyon fro the Pope, and there he herde howe they of Dulcen were slayne and taken; then he wrote to the kynge of Aragon, and to his cosyne, Yolant of Bare, desyrynge them to sende Peter of Mountfawcon and his company, who incontynent were delyvered and sente to the duke of Berre; that grace the duke dyd to them, or elles they had all dyed.

CAP. LXV

Howe a batayle of armes was done at Burdeaus, before the seneshall there and dyvers other.

THE same season there was at Burdeaus a feate of armes done before the seneshall, syr John Harpedon, and other, bytwene the lorde of Rochfoucaulte, a Frensshman, sone to the captall of Buze suster, and syr Wyllyam of Mountferant, an Englysshman, to rynne iii. courses with iii. speres, iii. strokes with a sworde, iii. with a

CAP. LXV

Howe a batayle of armes was done at Burdeaus.

dagger, and iii. with an axe. This dede of armes was done before the lordes and ladyes of the countrey then beynge at Burdeaus. The erle of Foys sente thyder knyghtes of his house to serve and to counsayle the lorde of Rochfoucaulte, sone to his cosyn germayne; and also he sent to hym good horse and harneys, spere heedes, daggers, swordes, and axes; howbeit, he was ryght well purveyed of them before. On a day these ii. knyghtes armed them wel, accompanyed with grete chevalry on eyther partye. The lorde of Rochfoucaulte had in his company a CC. knyghtes and squyers, all of his lygnage, and syr Wyllyam of Mountferant had as many or mo; with hym was the lorde of Rohen, the lorde of Lespare, the lorde Duras, the lorde of Curton, the lorde of Languras, the lorde de la Barde, the lorde of Mountcroyat in Pyergourt; and all were of his lygnage.

Bycause this feate of armes sholde be done bytwene suche ii. noble and valyaunt knyghtes, many came thyder to se them farre and nere. When these two knyghtes were mounted on theyr horses, with theyr helmes and targes redy apparelled, theyr speres were delyvered them, and ranne togyder fyersly, and encountred eche other on theyr helmes, that the bocle brake, and their helmes stryken of theyr heedes into the felde, and so passed forth theyr course, bare heeded, excepte theyr coyves. Then all the lordes and ladyes sayd, and every man to other, howe they hadde nobly encountred at theyr fyrst metynge; then theyr helmes were newe set on and fastened, and so they ranne valyauntly theyr ii. course, and also the iii. Brevely, al theyr feates were nobly accomplysshed, to the grete pleasure of all the lordes and ladyes and other regarders; and every man sayd howe eche of them hadde valyauntly acheved theyr feates; and the seneshall of Burdeaus, syr John Harpedon, gave the same daye a supper to them, and to al the lordes and ladyes that were there presente. And the nexte daye every man wente to theyr owne herytages, and the lorde of Rochfoucaulte prepayred hymselfe to go into Castell, for the kynge John there had sente for hym, and the season drewe nere: and syr Wyllyam of Mountferant ordeyned to go into Portyngale, for the kynge there had also sent for hym.

In suche a noble hystory as this is, whiche I, syr John

CAP. LXV

Howe a batayle of armes was done at Burdeaus.

Froysart, have pursued hytherto, and that God hath sent me that grace to lyve so longe to se so many thynges as I have done, then it were noo reason that I sholde forgete out ony thynge that I have knowen to be done. And bycause that by the warres of Brytayne the ii. sones of Charles of Bloys, who of longe season called hymselfe duke of Bretayne, by maryage of the lady Jahan of Bretayne, who ought to have ben ryghtful enherytour of Bretayne, as it hath ben shewed before in this hystory, whose sones were in Englande in hostage for theyr fader; as yet I have made no mencyon of them where they became, nor how they came out of pryson and daunger of the kynge of Englande, wherin theyr fader, the lorde Charles of Bloys, had lefte them. Ye knowe wel, and it hath ben wryten here before, howe kynge Edwarde of Englande, to make his warre of Fraunce the fayrer and stronger, he alyed hymselfe with the erle of Montforde, and alwayes dyd counsayle and ayde hym to his power, and dyd soo moche, that the erle of Monforde came to his entent, and was duke of Bretayne; otherwyse he coulde never have come therto, for in Bretayne the lorde Charles of Bloys of vii. he had ever v. on his party. It hath ben shewed before, howe in the yere of our Lorde a M.CCC. and xlvii. there was a grete batayle in Bretayne, before the Ree doryent,[1] where the countesse of Mountfordes party, as syr John of Harcell[2] and other, dyscomfyted syr Charles of Bloys, and there he was taken prysoner and led into Englande, where he had good chere: for the quene of Englande, the good quene Phylyp, whos servaunt I was in myne yongth, she was of ryghtfull generacyon[3] cosyn germayne to the lorde Charles of Bloys, and she dyd put to her payne for his delyveraunce. Howbeit, the counsayle of Englande wolde not that he sholde be delyvered: the duke Henry of Lancastre sayd, and other lordes of Englande, that yf he were out of pryson, by hym myght be made many grete recoveraunces for the royalme of Fraunce, for kynge Phylyp, as then Frensshe kyng, was his uncle; and they affyrmed, that as longe as he were kepte in pryson, theyr warre into Fraunce sholde be the easyer. Howbeit, for all those wordes that was shewed to the kynge, by the good meanes of the noble and good quene, he was set to his

[1] *Roche-Derien.*

[2] *Hardeshull.*

[3] *gouernacyon* P.

fynaunce to paye CC. M. nobles, whiche was as then a grete some to be payde. For lordes as then lyved in another maner then they do nowe: for as nowe men may pay more then theyr predecessours myght have done, for nowe they tayle theyr people at theyr pleasure, and before they lyved but on theyr rentes and revenues: for as nowe the duchy of Bretayne within a yere or two is able to pay to helpe theyr lorde ii. M.[1] nobles or more. The lorde Charles of Bloys layde to the kynge of Englande his ii. sones in pledge for the sayd some; and afterwarde the lorde Charles of Bloys had so moche to do in pursuyng his warre for the duchy of Bretayne, and to pay his souldyours, and to kepe his estate, alwayes hopynge to come to a good ende of his warre, so that he was not able to quyte out his sones out of Englande: for the holy man, in pursuynge of his herytage, dyed as a saynt in a batayle in Bretayne before Aulroy, by the ayde of the Englysshemen who were agaynst hym: when he was deed yet the warre ended not. But then kynge Charles of Fraunce, who in his lyfe doubted gretly the fortunes of the warres, when he sawe that the erle Mountforde and the Englysshemen seased not, but styll wente forwarde, and wanne townes and fortresses in Bretayne; he fered that yf the erle Mountforde myght come to his entente of the duchy of Bretayne, that he wolde not holde nor do homage to hym, for he had promysed his alleageaunce to the kynge of Englande, who ayded, and alwaye hadde done, to maynteyne his warre: then he treted with the erle Mountforde and his counsayle, as it hath ben shewed here before, wherfore I wyll speke no more therof. But the erle of Mountforde abode as duke of Bretayne with that he sholde do homage and holde soverayne of the crowne of Fraunce; and by the same trety the duke sholde ayde and helpe to gete delyvered out of pryson in Englande his ii. cosyns, sones to the lorde Charles of Bloys; whiche artycle he never dyd accomplysshe, for alwayes he doubted that yf they retourned, they wolde put hym to some busynes for the duchy of Bretayne, and fered lest they of Bretayne wolde receyve them as theyr lordes, for they more enclyned to them then to hym; wherfore he wolde not speke for theyr delyveraunce. Thus these ii. chyldren abode so longe in

CAP. LXV

Howe a batayle of armes was done at Burdeaus.

[1] *deux cent mille.*

CAP. LXV
Howe a batayle of armes was done at Burdeaus.

Englande in pryson, somtyme in the kepynge of the lorde Roger Beawchamp and the lady Sybyll his wyfe, and somtyme with syr Thomas Dambrychcourte. On a tyme the yonger, Guy of Bretayne dyed; then John of Bretayne abode styll in pryson alone; he was often tymes sad of his beynge in pryson, but he coulde not amende it. And often tymes, when he remembred the losse of his yonge dayes, as he that was of the moost noble generacyon of the worlde, and was lykely to lese, he wolde often tymes wepe, and wysshed hymselfe rather deed then alyve; for a xxxv. yeres, or theraboute, he had ben in the daunger of his enemyes in Englande, and coulde se noo maner of meanes of his delyveraunce, for his frendes and kynne drewe of fro hym, and the some that he laye for was so grete, that he wyst not how it sholde be payde, without God helped hym; and the duke of Anjou, for all his puyssaunce and prosperyte, and that he had wedded his syster germayne, by whom he had ii. fayre sones, Loys and Charles, for all this he dyd nothynge for hym. Now shall I shewe you howe this John of Bretayne was delyvered.

CAP. LXVI

Howe Johan of Bretayne, sone to syr Charles of Bloys, was delyvered out of pryson, by the meanes of Olyver of Clysson, the constable of Fraunce.

IT hathe ben shewed here before in this hystory how the erle of Buckyngham made a voyage thrughe the royalme of Fraunce, and came into Bretayne. The duke of Bretayne had desyred hym so to doo, bycause parte of his countrey wolde not be under his obeysaunce; there the erle of Buckyngham and his company lay al that wynter and the begynnyng of somer after, in grete poverte, before Nantes and Wennes, tyll it was Maye, and then he retourned into Englande. And when the erle Thomas of Buckyngham and his company laye before Wennes, in lodgynges without, there were dyvers skyrmysshes bytwene the Englysshmen and Frensshmen; and thyder came Olyver Clysson, constable of Fraunce, to se the warre that was there made, and to

speke with the Englysshe knyghtes, for he knewe them well, for in his yongth he was brought up amonge them in Englande. And soo he made good company with them in divers maners, as noble men of armes wyll do eche to other, and as Frensshmen and Englysshmen have alwayes done; and as then he had good cause so to do, for he entended a purpose which touched hym ryght nere. But he wolde dyscover his entente to noo man lyvynge but al onely to a squyer that was there, who had alwayes before served the lorde Charles of Bloys; for yf the constable had dyscovered his entente to ony man, he had ben out of all hope to have sped and brought aboute his purpose, whiche, by the grace of God, he atteyned unto. The constable coulde in no wyse love the duke of Bretayne, nor he hym, longe tyme or they shewed it. And where as he sawe John of Bretayne in pryson in Englande, he had therof grete pyte; and when he sawe the duke of Bretayne in possessyon of the herytage of Bretayne, and when he thought that he was in moost love with the duke, then he sayd, Syr, why do ye not put to your payne that your cosyn John of Bretayne were out of the kyng of Englandes pryson; syr, ye are bounde therto by othe and by promyse; for, syr, when all the countrey of Bretayne was in treaty with you, the prelates, noble men, and good townes, and the cyte of Nantes, and archebysshop of Reynes, syr John Craon, syr Boucequalte, as then marshall of Fraunce, treted with you for the peas before Compercorentyne, than and there ye sware that ye sholde do your full puyssaunce to delyver your cosynes out of pryson; and, syr, ye have done nothynge in that matter; wherfore be you sure the countrey of Bretayne loveth you the lesse, and oweth you the smaller favoure. The duke to his demaunde dyssymuled, and sayd, Holde your peas, syr Olyver; where sholde I gete iii. or iiii. M.[1] frankes that is demaunded for theyr raunsomes. Syr, sayd the constable, yf the countrey of Bretayne sawe that you were wel wyllynge to the matter, they wolde be contente to pay a taxe or a fowage to delyver the prysoners, who are lyke to dye in prison, without God helpe them. Syr Olyver, sayd the duke, as for my countrey of Bretayne [it] shall not be taxed for me; my cosynes have grete prynces of theyr lygnage as the Frenssh kynge and

CAP. LXVI

Howe Johan of Bretayne was delyvered out of pryson.

[1] *trois ou quatre cens mille.*

CAP. LXVI. Howe Johan of Bretayne was delyvered out of pryson.

the duke of Anjou; they may helpe to delyver them, for they have alwayes susteyned the warre agaynst me; and when I sware to ayde to theyr delyveraunce, myne entencyon was none otherwyse but that the Frensshe kynge or theyr kynsmen sholde pay theyr raunsomes. The constable coulde gete of the duke none other answere. Thus, as I have begon to shewe you, the constable sawe clerely howe the erle of Buckyngham and the barons and knyghtes of Englande, suche as hadde ben with hym in the voyage thrughe Fraunce and so into Bretayne, were nothynge contente with the duke of Bretayne, bycause he wolde not open his townes to them, lyke as he had promysed when he departed out of Englande; but whyles the Englysshmen lay before Wennes, and in the subbarbes of Hanibont, they endured grete poverte, for they hadde nothynge to ete, and theyr horses dyed for fawte of foode. The Englysshmen were fayne to gather the thystelles in the feldes, and braye them in a morter, and tempre it with water, and make therof a paast, and so bake it to ete, suche poverte they endured; and they sayd amonge themselfe, The duke doth not acquyte hymselfe nobly agaynst us, syth we have put hym in possessyon of the sygnory of Bretayne; and yf we sholde do well, we sholde take it fro hym agayne, and gete out of pryson John of Bretayne his adversary, and make hym duke; the countrey loveth hym better then he that is now duke: we can not better be revenged of hym, nor soner to cause hym to lese the duchy of Bretayne. The constable of Fraunce knewe ryght well what wordes and sore murmuracyons the Englysshmen had amonge themselfe agaynst the duke of Bretayne, wherwith he was nothynge dyspleased; for every evyll worde that they spake, he wolde it had ben xii.; howbeit, he made therof no semblaunt, no more dyd a squyer of Bretayne, to whome he had broken his mynde, to go into Englande on his message; this squyer was called Rollant. And so it was, that syr John of Harleton, capytayne of Chyerbourge, was with the constable at the castel Josselyn, under saufconduyte, and there the constable made hym good chere and to his company, and kepte the Englysshmen as good company as he coulde, the rather therby to gete theyr good wylles: then the constables squyer avaunced forth, and

CAP. LXVI

Howe Johan of Bretayne was delyvered out of pryson.

spake to syr John Harleton before the constable, and sayd, Syr John, ye sholde do me a grete pleasure to do one thynge for me, whiche shall cost you nothynge. Syr, sayd the knyght, for the love of the constable, though it be to my cost, I am contente to do that I can for you: what is that I sholde do. Syr, sayd the squyer, that I myght be assured to go into Englande to se myne olde mayster, John of Bretayne; the gretest desyre that I have in this worlde is to se hym. By my fayth, sayd syr John Harlton, it shal not be let for me, but that ye shal go: as soone as I am retourned to Chyerbourge, I wyll go into Englande, and ye shal go with me; I shal bryng you thyder, for your request is not to be refused. Syr, sayd the squyer, I thanke you, and I repute it for a grete curtoysy. Thus this squyer wente with syr John Harlton to Chyerbourg, and when he had made every thyng redy, he departed, and entred into the see, with John Rollant in his company, and so came to London, and brought the squyer to the castell where as John of Bretayne was, who knewe hym not at the fyrst metynge. At the last he called hym to his remembraunce, and so spake togyder, and there he shewed John of Bretayne howe that the constable of Fraunce dyd and wolde do his payne for his delyveraunce. Howe can that be? sayd John of Bretayne. Syr, sayd the squyer, I shall shewe you: my lorde the constable hath a doughter to mary; so that yf ye wyll swere and promyse when ye be retourned into Bretayne to take her to your wyfe, he wyll delyver you out of Englande; he hath founde well the meanes how. Syr, howe say you, wyll ye do thus? Ye, truely, sayd he, ye shall retourne to the constable, and say in my name howe there is nothynge I may doo to be delyvered but I wyll do it; and as for his doughter, gladly I wyll take her to my wyfe. Thus the squyer and John of Bretayne departed, and passed out of Englande, and retourned into Bretayne, and recorded to the constable all that he had sene and harde; and the constable, who desyred the advauncement of his doughter, as to be maried so highly as to John of Bretayne, was not neglygent in his busynes, and studyed for a meane in Englande to brynge aboute his purpose. And without he had founde out a meanes as he dyd, he sholde never have come to his purpose, whiche was

CAP. LXVI
Howe Johan of Bretayne was delyvered out of pryson.

to gete the erle of Oxenforde on his parte, who was most pryvy with the kynge of Englande as then; but this matter was not shortly brought to passe, for as longe as the duke of Lancastre was in Englande, and before his journey into Spayne, there was no dyscoverynge to the kynge of the tretye for delyveraunce of John of Bretayne. For when the erle of Buckyngham retourned out of Bretayne, the renome ran thrughe al the royalme how the duke of Bretayne had falsely acquyted hymselfe to the Englysshmen; wherfore was spoken all the evyll that coulde be devysed. And then John of Bretayne was brought into the kynges presence and to his uncles, and then it was sayd to hym: John of Bretayne, yf ye wyll releve and holde the duchy of Bretayne of the kynge of Englande, ye shall be delyvered out of pryson, and set in possessyon of the sygnory of Bretayne, and shall be ryght hyghly maryed in this countrey, as ye ought to be; for the duke of Lancastre wolde have gyven hym to his doughter Phylyp in maryage, who was after quene of Portyngale. John of Bretayne answered, that he wolde never agree to that tretye, nor never wolde be enemye nor contrary to the crowne of Fraunce; he sayd he was contente to take the duke of Lancastres doughter in maryage, soo he myght be delyvered out of pryson and out of Englande. When they sawe he wolde do none otherwyse, he was set agayne in pryson. And after the erle of Oxenforde, whom we called duke of Irelande, sawe that the duke of Lancastre was gone out of Englande into Castell, and that the tretye of the maryage of his doughter with John of Bretayne was passed, for the duke of Lancastre had his doughter with hym into Castell, then he thought to intrete the kyng of Englande to gyve hym in rewarde for suche servyce as he had done and entended to do, John of Bretayne; for yf he coulde gete hym of the kyng, he was agreed with the constable of Fraunce to have for his raunsome, at two paymentes, vi. score M. frankes; the fyrst lx. M. to be payde as sone as John of Bretayne were sent and delyvered into the towne of Boloyne, and the other lx. M. to be payde at Parys whersoever he wolde have it delyvered. The duke of Irelande coveted these floreyns, and dyd so moche with the kynge

CAP. LXVI

Howe Johan of Bretayne was delyvered out of pryson.

of Englande, that the kynge gave hym John of Bretayne clerely, wherof many in Englande had grete mervayle; but they that lyst to speke wolde speke; there was none other thynge. The duke of Irelande caused hym to be delyvered into Boloyne, and there the constable had made redy every thynge for hym, and so he rode to Parys, and there founde the kynge and other lordes of his lygnage, who made hym good chere, and the constable also who brought hym into Bretayne; and there Johan of Bretayne wedded his doughter, as he had promysed. And when the duke of Bretayne knewe that John of Bretayne was retourned into Fraunce, and clene delyvered out of Englande, by the ayde and purchase of[1] the constable of Fraunce, then he had the constable in double hatred, and sayd: What, weneth syr Olyver of Clesson to put me out of myne herytage; he sheweth wel the tokens therof; he hath delyvered out of pryson John of Bretayne, and hath gyven hym his doughter in mariage, whiche thynges are to me ryght dyspleasaunt, and surely that shall I well shewe ones on a daye, howe he hath not wel done, peradventure when he taketh leest hede therof. He sayd truely, for he shewed it quyckely or the yere passed, as ye shall here after in the story. But fyrst we wyll speke of the busynes of Castell and Portyngale, and of an armye on the see that the Englysshmen made to come to Sluse.

[1] *to* P.

Here before ye have herde how the Frensshe kynges armye by the see to have gone into Englande was broken up in the same season, not by the Frensshe kynges good wyll, for alway he shewed good courage to have passed into Englande. And when he sawe howe the journey brake, he was more dyspleased then ony other, and all the fawte was layd upon the duke of Berre. Howbeit, it was to be thought that he saw more depelyer in the matter then ony other, and in his counsayllynge to leve the journey was for the honoure and profyte of the royalme of Fraunce; for who soo ever enterprysed to doo a thynge, ought to regarde what ende may come therof; and the duke of Berre had ben before so longe in Englande, in hostage for the kyng his fader, and had ben so conversaunt among the Englysshmen, and had sene so moche of the countrey, that he knewe by reason what effecte the goynge into Englande sholde have

CAP. LXVI
Howe Johan of Bretayne was delyvered out of pryson.

come to. And the cause moost exscusable not to go was, bycause wynter was so farre ronne. But then it was sayd, that the constable of Fraunce the nexte somer sholde goo into Englande with a vi. M. men of armes and as many crosse bowes, for it was thought by hymselfe, and sayd, howe that nombre was sufficyent to fyght with the Englysshemen, by reason the constable ought to have knowen it, for he had ben nourysshed there in his yonge dayes. When these lordes were retourned into Fraunce, then it was determyned to sende socours into Castell, to ayde the kynge there agaynst the kynge of Portyngale and the duke of Lancastre, for it was thought that shortely there sholde be some dedes of armes, for the Englysshmen kepte the felde. And it was consydered that they coulde sende noo men of warre thyder without grete cost and charge, for the journey was ferre of, and there was but lytell money in the kynges treasoury nor in treasourers handes: for the some of money that had ben gadered of the people before in the royalme was spente and wasted, wherfore they studyed howe to gete more. And soo a newe tayle and taxe was devysed to ryn thrughout all the royalme of Fraunce, to be payde incontynent without delay, noysynge howe it was for the comfortynge of the kynge of Spayne, and to dryve the Englysshmen out of his royalme. This tayle was publysshed in every place, and the kynges commyssyoners sente into every good towne and cyte, who sayd to the governours of the townes: Syrs, thus moche your towne is taxed at, the whiche ye must pay incontynent. Then the rulers sayd, Syrs, we shall gather this some, and then sende it to Parys. Nay, syrs, not so, sayd the commyssaryes, we wyl not abyde so longe, we wyll do otherwyse then so: and commaunded in the kynges name a x. or xii. of the best of the towne to goo to pryson, without they payde the some without any longer delay: the honest men fered the pryson and the kynges dyspleasure; wherfore they drewe them togyder, and payde the money incontynente, and recovered it agayne of the poore men. Thus they dyd in every good towne, so that there were so many tayles and taxes one after another, for the fyrst was scante payde when another began. Thus in that season the noble royalme of Fraunce was governed, and the poore people

over ledde, so that many avoyded out of theyr townes, and forsoke theyr herytages and houses, for they were fayne to sell all that they had. And some wente to dwell in Haynalte and into the bysshopryche of Lyege, where as there ranne no taxe nor tayllage.

CAP. LXVI Howe Johan of Bretayne was delyvered out of pryson.

CAP. LXVII

Howe the duke of Borbon was chosen to goo into Castell, and dyvers other; and howe syr Johan Bucke, admyral of Flaunders, was taken prysoner by the Englysshemen.

THEN yt was devysed what capytaynes sholde go into Spayne. Fyrst, they apoynted the gentyll duke of Borbone, that he sholde be soverayne capytayne above all other; and or he departed, there was apoynted ii. other capytaynes to be in the vowarde, and the duke of Borbon in the rerewarde, with ii. M. speres, knyghtes and squyers. These ii. capytaynes that sholde be in the vowarde were syr Wellyam of Lygnac, and syr Gaultyer of Passac: these ii. lordes when they knewe that they sholde be the capytaynes of certayne men of armes to go into Castel, they prepayred themselfe for that journey. Then knyghtes and squyers were sente for all aboute the royalme of Fraunse to go to Castell, and the passages were opened as well in Navare as in Aragon. Thenne knyghtes and squyers departed fro Bretayne, Poyctou, Anjowe, Mayne, Torayne, Bloys, Orleaunce, Beause, Pycardy, Borgoyne, Berre, and Awvergne, and fro all the boundes of the royalme of Fraunce; every man toke theyr way to go into Castell. And of all the formest company syr Wyllyam of Lygnac, and syr Gaultyer of Passac were leders, and to exalte theyr honoure they departed in good araye, and all theyr companyes in good ordre.

Thus whyles these knyghtes and squyers of the royalme of Fraunce prepayred them to goo into Castell, and suche as were fyrst redy fyrst departed, and specyally they that were of farre countreys, for there were many that desyred

CAP. LXVII

Howe the duke of Borbon was chosen to goo into Castell.

dedes of armes; the same season the Englysshmen were on the see bytwene Englande and Flaunders, wherof Rycharde erle of Arundell was admyrall, and in his company the erle of Devonshyre, and the erle of Notyngham, and the bysshop of Norwyche. They were a v. C. men of armes, and M. archers: they had lyen at ancre a grete season abydyng some adventure, and often tymes refresshed them on the cost of Englande, and aboute the yles of Cornewall, Bretayne, and Normandy; and they were sore dyspleased in that the flete of Flaunders was scaped fro them, and were gone to Rochell, and specyally that the constable of Fraunce was gone fro Lentrygner[1] to Sluse, and passed by Calays and met not with hym, for gladly they wolde have fought with hym: and yet the constable had as many shyppes as they, but they passed by them by reason of the wynde and the fludde that they had in the nyght tyme. The Englysshe navy lay at ancre before Mergate at the Tames mouthe, towarde Sandwyche, abydynge theyr adventure, and specyally abydyng for the shyppes that were gone to Rochell, for they thought they wolde shortly retourne. And so they dyd, for when the merchauntes of Flaunders, of Rochel, of Haynalte, and other places, who for doubte of the Englysshmen were conjoyned togyder, departed out of Flaunders, they promysed eche other to go and to retourne togyder, and to take eche others parte. And when they had all done theyr busynes in Rochel, and in the countrey of Xainton, and had charged theyr shyppes with wynes, then as soone as they had good wynde they dysancred, and departed out of the haven of Rochell, and toke theyr way by the see to goo into Flaunders, and to Sluse, and fro whens they departed; they sayled so longe that they passed the rase saynt Mathewe in Bretayne without peryll or domage, and so costed base Bretayne, and then Normandy, and so came ryght over the Tames mouth, where as the Englysshe navy lay. The Flemynges perceyved where they laye, and they in the hyghe shyppes sayd to theyr company, Syrs, advyse you wel, we shall be met by the Englysshe armye, they have perceyved us, they wyl take the advauntage of the wynde and tyde, we shall have batayle or it be nyght. The tydynges pleased not well al partyes, and specyally the merchauntes of

[1] *Tréguier.*

Flaunders, of Haynalte, and of other countreys, who had theyr merchaundyse there aborde, they wolde gladly have ben thens yf they myght; howbeit, syth they sawe no remedy but fyght, they ordred themselfe therto; and they were crossebowes and other men harneysed defensably arayed, mo then vii. C. And amonge them there was a valyaunt knyght of Flaunders who was theyr capytayne, and was as then admyrall of the see, set there by the duke of Borbone, called syr John Bucke, ryght sage and hardy in armes, and had done before grete domage on the see to the Englysshmen; this syr John Bucke set every thyng in good ordre, and decked his shyppes wel, and wysely as he that coulde ryght wel do it, and sayd, Syrs, be not abasshed: we are men ynowe to fyght with the Englysshe army, and the wynde wyl serve us, that ever as we be fyghtyng we shal aproche nerer and nerer to Sluse, we shall coost Flaundres. Some toke good comforte with those wordes, and some not, so they put themselfe in good ordre and defence, and made redy theyr crossebowes and gonnes. CAP. LXVII Howe the duke of Borbon was chosen to goo into Castell.

The Englysshe shyppes aproched, and they had certayne galays fournysshed with archers, and they came formest rowyng with owers, and gave the fyrst assaulte; and archers shotte fyersly, and lost moche of theyr shotte, for the Flemynges covered them under the deckes and wold not apere, but drave ever forth with the wynde; and when they were out of the Englysshe archers shot, then they dyd let fly theyr quarelles, wherwith they hurted many. Then approched the grete shyppes of Englande, the erle of Arundel with his company, and the bysshop of Norwyche with his, and so the other lordes, they russhed in amonge the Flemynges shyppes, and them of Rochell, yet the Flemynges and crossebowes defended themselfe ryght valyauntly, for theyr patron, syr John Bucke, dyd ever comforte them. He was in a gret strong shyp, wherin he had iii. gonnes shotyng so grete stones, that where soever they lyghted they dyd grete domage, and ever as they fought they drewe lytell and lytell towarde Flaunders, and some lytell shyppes with theyr merchauntes toke the coostes of Flaunders, and the lowe water, and therby saved them, for the grete shyppes coulde not folow them for lacke of water.

CAP. LXVII Howe the duke of Borbon was chosen to goo into Castell.

Thus on the se there was a harde batayle, and shyppes broken and sunken on bothe partyes, for out of the toppes they cast downe grete barres of yron, where as they wente to the botom: this was an harde batayle, and well fought, for it endured a iii. or iiii. houres. And when the day fayled they withdrew eche fro other, and cast ancre, and there rested all nyght, and dressed theyr hurte men. And when the fludde came they dysancred, and drewe up sayles, and retourned agayne to the batayle. With the Englysshmen was Peter du Boys of Gaunt, with a certayne archers and maryners, who made the Flemynges moche a do, for he had ben a maryner, wherfore he knewe the arte of the see, and he was sore dyspleased that the Flemynges and merchauntes endured so longe. Alwayes the Englysshmen wanne advauntage of the Flemynges, and so came bytwene Blanquenberg and Sluse, agaynst Gagant:[1] there was the dyscomfyture, for they were not socoured by no creature; nor also at that tyme there were noo shyppes at Sluse, nor men of warre. True it was there was a squyer, a man of armes at Sluse, called Arnolde the Mayre, when he harde howe there was batayle on the see, bytwene the armye of Englande and them of Flaunders, he toke a barke of his owne and entred therin, and with hym a certayne men of Sluse, and twenty crossebowes, and rowed by force tyll he came to the batayle: but that was at the poynte of the dyscomfyture, for by that tyme the Englysshmen were seased of the moost parte of the Flemysshe shyppes, and had taken syr John Bucke theyr capytayne, and his shyp, and all that were within it. And when this Arnolde the Mayre sawe the maner of that batayle, he made his crossebowes to shote iii. tymes, and then retourned and was chased into the haven of Sluse, but the Englysshmennes shyppes were so grete that they coulde not approche so nere the lande as the barke dyd, and therby he saved hymselfe and his company.

[1] *Cadzand.*

The men of the towne of Sluse were sore abasshed when they harde of those tydynges, so that they wyst not what to do, other to gyve up theyr towne and forsake all, or elles to entre into the shyppes that laye there, and so defende the haven. Surely yf the Englysshmen had knowen the case they were in, they had ben lordes of the towne and of the

castel, or yf they had byleved Peter du Boys; for he sore counsayled them that they sholde incontynent have set on the towne of Sluse: they had wonne it yf they had soo done, but the Englysshmen had no courage therto, but sayd It were a grete foly for us to entre into the towne of Sluse, for then they of Bruges, of Dan, and of Ardenbourge, shall come and besyege us, and so peradventure shall lese al that we have wonne: it is better for us to kepe it and to make wyse warre, then folysshly to lese all. Thus the Englysshmen kepte styll the see, but they determyned to brenne the navye of shyppes that lay at ancre in the haven of Sluse. Of suche shyppes as they hadde wonne they toke parte of them, suche as were most olde and drye, and lyghtest, and gresed them wel bothe within and without, and set fyer on them, and so lete them go with the wynde and with the tyde into the haven, to the entente that they sholde have fastened, and set fyer on other shyppes that lay there of Spayne, and of other places; howbeit, as God wolde, that fyer dyd noo hurte nor domage to none other shyp.

CAP. LXVII

Howe the duke of Borbon was chosen to goo into Castell.

CAP. LXVIII

Howe the Englysshmen aryved, and brente dyvers vyllages.

AFTER that the Englysshmen dyscomfyted syr John Bucke as he came fro Rochell, wherby they had grete profyte, specyally of wyne, for they had a ix. M. tonne of wyne, wherby wyne was the derer all the yere after in Flaunders, Holande, and in Brabande, and the better chepe in Englande, as it was reason: suche are the adventures of this worlde, if one have domage, another hathe profyte. Thus styll the Englysshemen lay before Sluse at an ancre, and somtyme with theyr barkes and barges they set a lande on the other syde agaynst Sluse, where as there was but a ryver to passe. And there they brente a mynstre, and other townes, alonge on the see syde, and on the dygues, called Torne,[1] Houque, and Murdeques,[2] and toke men prysoners in the countrey, and were there lyenge a x. dayes, and layde busshmentes bytwene Dan and Sluse, on the way of

[1] *Knocke.*
[2] *Muenickerede.*

CAP. LXVIII

Howe the Englysshmen aryved, and brente dyvers vyllages.

Coceler.[1] And there was taken John of Lannay, a man of armes of Tourney, who was come thyder with the lorde of Estrynay[2] and syr Blanquart of Calomne, [who] came there[3] on the spurres fro Tourney, with xl. speres. And also syr Robert Merchaunt,[4] a knyght of Flaunders, who had to his wyfe a bastarde doughter of the erle of Flaunders, was as then at Bruges, when the tydynges spred abrode of the Englysshmen; so he departed and came to Sluse, and entred into the castell, whiche he founde in small defence, for yf the Englysshmen had taken lande at Sluse, as they dyd on the other syde of the water, they had taken at theyr ease the castell and all the towne: for suche as sholde have defended the towne were so abasshed that there was no man toke ony hede of defence. Then this knyght gave them harte, and sayd, A, ye syrs, and good men of Sluse, howe maynteyne you yourselfe, by that ye shewe yourselfe dyscomfyted without ony stroke strykynge. Men of valure and of good defence ought not so to do, they sholde shewe forth a good vysage as longe as they coulde endure, at the leest tyll they were slayne or taken: therby they sholde attayne to the grace of God, and prayse of the worlde. Thus sayd this syr Robert when he came to Sluse.

In the meane season whyle the Englysshmen were before Sluse and theraboute, al the countrey to Bruges were afrayde, for they were every day abrode a foragynge afoote, for they had no horses, and somtyme they wolde entre far into the countrey. On a day they brente the towne of Cocesy on the Downes, [and] a grete vyllage in the way towarde Ardenbourge and so to the see syde called Hosebourcke;[5] they dyd there what they lyst, and myght have done more yf they had knowen what case the countrey was in. And when they had taryed there at theyr pleasure, and sawe that no man came agaynst them, then they toke theyr shyppes, and drewe up sayles, and so retourned into Englande with CC. M. frankes of profyte, and so came into Tames streyght to London, where as they were receyved with grete joy: for the good wynes of Poyctou and Xainton, that was determyned to have ben dronken in Flaunders, in Haynalte, Brabant, and in dyvers other places in Pycardy, the Englysshmen brought all with them into Englande, and

[1] *Coxide.*
[2] *Escornay.*
[3] *theues* P.
[4] *Le Marescal.*
[5] *Oostburg.*

was solde and departed at London, and in other places of Englande; wyne was solde then for iiii. pens the galon. And certayne merchauntes of Zerecyell,[1] in Zelande, lost parte of the same wyne, but they had restytucyon agayne of all theyr losses, for they of Zercyell wolde never agree to go to make warre into Englande, nor wolde suffre none of theyr shyppes to goo in that journey, wherby they atteyned grete love of the Englysshmen. Syr John Bucke was put in pryson curtoysly at London, he myght go where he lyst, but every nyght to lodge in the cyte: he coulde never come to his raunsome; yet the duke of Borgoyne wolde gladly have had hym by exchaunge for a bastarde broder of the kynge of Portyngalles, whom they of Breuelet[2] had taken on the see comynge to Meldebourc. Thus syr John Bucke was prysoner thre yeres in Englande, and there dyed.

CAP. LXVIII

Howe the Englysshmen aryved, and brente dyvers vyllages.

[1] *Zierikzee.*

[2] *Biervliet.*

CAP. LXIX

Howe the duke of Lancastres marshal toke the towne of Ribadave, whiche was strongly kepte.

NOWE yt ys tyme that we retourne to the busynes of Castell and Portyngale, and to speke of the duke of Lancastre beynge in Galyce, and of suche busynes as fel in that season, whiche were not smal: and also to shewe what ayde and comforte the Frensshe kynge sent that tyme into Castell, or elles kynge John of Spaynes busynes had but easely gone forwarde. I say surely the same yere that the duke aryved in his countrey he had lost all his lande, if the ayde of the Frensshe kyng had not ben. Ye know wel that tydynges spredeth ever farre: the kynge of Portyngale knewe as soone as the duke of Lancastre, or ony other man, how the Frenssh kynges army that lay on the see to have gone into Englande, brake theyr journey, for the kyng of Portyngale lay as then at the cyte of Porte, a stronge towne, and a haven wel used, by reason of merchauntes that resorted thyder. And when he knew of the brekynge of the Frensshe kynges army he was glad therof, for it had ben shewed hym before, that all Englande was

CAP. LXIX
Howe the duke of Lancastres marshal toke the towne of Ribadave.

lykely to have ben lost, wherfore he somwhat dyssymuled with the duke of Lancastre, dryvynge of the takyng of his doughter in maryage; but styll he drave hym of with fayre wordes and salutacyons. And when he was justly enfourmed of the departynge of the Frensshe kynge fro Sluse, then he called his counsayle, and sayd, Syrs, ye knowe well howe the duke of Lancastre is in Galyce, and the duches our cosyne with hym, and it is not unknowen to you howe he was here and had counsayle togyder, and howe it was agreed that I sholde have his doughter in maryage; so it is, I wyll perceyver in the same estate, and wyll demaunde her honourably, as it is reason, and apertenent to suche a prynce as the duke of Lancastre is, and to me as kynge of Portyngale; I wyll make that lady quene of Portyngale. Syr, sayd they of his counsayle, ye doo in this accordynge to reason, for ye have so sworne and promysed. Well, sayd the kynge, then let us sende for her to the duke. Then there was appoynted the archebysshop of Braschez,[1] and syr John Radyghen of Sar,[2] to go on that ambassade; they were sente for to the kynge, and so they toke on them that voyage, and with them they had a CC. speres.

[1] *Braga.*
[2] *Sd.*

Nowe let us speke of the syege that syr Thomas Moreaus, marshall of the duke of Lancastres oost, had layde before the towne of Rybadave, and shewe what became theron.

I byleve that they of Rybadave thought to have ben comforted by kynge John of Castell, and by the knyghtes of Fraunce, who lay in the towne of Valeolyve,[3] or elles they wolde never have endured soo longe; for I have mervayle howe suche a sorte of vyllaynes coulde endure agaynst suche a floure of archers and men of armes, and were not abasshed: for every day they had assaulte. And it was sayd to syr Thomas Moreaus, in maner of counsayle, by the moost valyaunt knyghtes of his company: Syr, leve this towne here, then an evyll fyer may brenne it, and let us go further into the countrey, to Maynes, to Noye, or to Besances; alwayes we may retourne agayne when we lyst. By my fayth, sayd syr Thomas, that shall never be sayd that vyllaynes have dyscomfyted us: I wyll not departe hens thoughe I sholde tary here ii. monethes, without the duke sende for me. Thus the marshalles mynde and oppyn-

[3] *Valladolid.*

yon was to kepe styll there his syege. The kynge of Castell, who laye at Valeolyve, and had sente specyally for ayde into Fraunce, he harde dayly howe they of Rybadave defended themselfe valyauntly, and wolde not yelde. In the name of God, sayd the Barroys of Barres, it gretely dyspleaseth me that we sent not thyder our Frensshmen: they wolde gretely have recomforted the men of that towne: and also I am not contente that I am not at the syege, for then at the leest I sholde have the honoure as these vyllaynes have nowe; and surely yf I had knowen the trouthe of the strength of that towne, I wolde have refresshed it, and have put myselfe at adventure therin: as well God sholde have sente me the grace to have defended the towne as these vyllaynes do. Thus he devysed in the kynges presence, and before the Frensshe knyghtes, who desyred dedes of armes. Then it was sayd to the kynge, Syr, sende a C. speres into these townes of Noye and of Calongne,[1] for who so hath those ii. castelles, hath the ii. sydes of the lande of Galyce. And to go thyder dyvers dyd present themselfe before the kynge, as syr Trystram of Roy, and syr Raynolde his broder, syr Aulberte of Braquemont, syr Trystram of Galle, syr John of castell Morant, and syr Barroys of Barres. The kynge herde them well, and was contente with theyr offres, and sayd, Fayre syrs, I thanke you of your good wylles; howbeit, ye maye not all go, some of you must abyde styll with me, for adventures that may fall; but at this presente tyme I desyre the Barroys of Barres to take on hym that charge yf it please hym. The knyght was ryght glad of that journey, for he thought he had lyen there to longe, and sayd to the kynge, Syr, I thanke your grace, and shall kepe and defende it to my power, and shall not departe thens tyll ye sende for me. So be it a goodes name, sayd the kynge: we thynke to here shortely some tydynges out of Fraunce. As then the knyghtes knewe not of the Frensshe kynges departynge fro Sluse, but the kynge knewe it well ynoughe, for the duke of Borbon had wryten to hym of all the busynes in Fraunce, and howe he was apoynted to come into Castell with iii. M. speres. And before hym to open the passages sholde come iii. M. speres, under the gydynge of syr Wyllyam of Lygnac, and syr Gaultyer of Passac. The

CAP. LXIX

Howe the duke of Lancastres marshal toke the towne of Ribadave.

[1] *Corunna.*

CAP. LXIX Howe the duke of Lancastres marshal toke the towne of Ribadave.

Frensshe knyghtes desyred the kyng to shewe them some tydynges out of Fraunce. With a good wyll, sayd the kynge.

Then the kynge sayd, Syrs, surely the duke of Borbon is chosen pryncypal capytayne to come into this countrey, for the Frenssh kynge and his counsayle hath apoynted hym to come with vi. thousande speres, knyghtes and squyers, and also two valyaunte knyghtes are chosen capytaynes for to come before hym, as syr Wyllyam Lygnac, and syr Gaultyer of Passac: they shall come fyrst with a iii. M. speres; as for the voyage by the see in Englande is broken up for this season, tyll the constable of Fraunce, and the erle of saynt Poule, and the lorde of Coucy, with iiii. M. speres, shall goo into Englande this nexte Maye. Howe saye you syrs to this, sayd the kynge. Syr, sayd they, these be ryche tydynges, we can have no better, for this nexte somer dedes of armes shal be wel shewed in your countrey; yf there be vi. M. apoynted, there wyll come ix. M. We shall surely fyght with the Englysshmen: they kepe as nowe the felde, but we shal close them togyder, or it be Mydsomer; syr, these knyghtes that come are ryght valyaunt, and specyally the duke of Borbon, and the other are proved knyghtes, and worthy to be governours of men of armes. Anone was spred abrode in the towne of Valcolyve, and abrode in Castell, the grete comforte and ayde that sholde come out of Fraunce by the fyrst daye of Maye, wherof knyghtes and squyers are ryght joyous.

Thus the Barroys of Barres departed with a l. speres, and rode to the castell of Noye. Tydynges came to the duke of Lancastres marshall howe the Frensshmen were abrode, rydynge with a l. speres to come to reyse the syege before Rybadave. When the marshal harde those tydynges, he byleved it lyghtly, for they that shewed hym therof affyrmed it to be true, saynge, how they had sene them ryde over the ryver of Dorne,[1] and toke theyr lodgyng at the towne of Arpent.[2] Then the marshal was in doubte, and toke counsayle, and determyned to sende worde therof to the duke of Lancastre his lorde, and so he dyd: and he sente syr John Dambretycourt, and a heraulde, who knewe all the wayes in Galyce; and then the marshall made ever good

[1] *Douro.*
[2] *Villalpando.*

watche and spyal, for he doubted to be ascryed in the nyght; halfe the oost watched every nyght whyle the other slepte. Syr John Dambretycourt, and the heraulde, came to the towne of saynt James, to the duke and to the duches. When the duke knewe of theyr comynge, he sayd, Surely we shall here some tydynges. As soone as they came to his presence, the duke demaunded What tydynge? Syr, sayd they, none that be good, but your marshall hath sente us hyder to you, to knowe your pleasure what he sholde do, for it is reported to hym for certayne that the Frensshmen are assembled togyder in Castel, and ryde fast to passe the ryver to come and fyght with your men lyenge at syege before Rybadave; syr, these be the tydynges that we have brought. In the name of God, sayd the duke, these be none evyll tydynges that we shall shortely provyde for them: he behelde syr John Holande his constable, and his admyrall syr Thomas Percy, and sayd to them, Syrs, take a CCC. speres, and CCCCC. archers, and go to your company before Rybadave: they are in a doubte that the Frensshmen sholde come and assayle them. Then these ii. knyghtes made them redy, and toke with them iii. C. speres, and v. C. archers, and departed fro the duke, and rode soo longe that they came before Rybadave, where theyr companyons were lodged, who were gretly rejoysed of theyr comynge. Then syr John Holand sayd to the marshall, What say they of Rybadave, wyll they not yelde them. By my fayth, sayd the marshal, they are prowde people: they se that all the countrey aboute them doo yelde, yet they kepe styll theyr opynyons, and yet they be but a many of vyllaynes: there is not amonge them one gentylman of name. Syr, holde your peas, sayd syr John Holande, for within these iiii. dayes we shal brynge them to that poynte that they shal be glad to yelde themselfe to ony that wyll take them to mercy; but syr, I praye you do the Frensshmen ryde abrode. Ye, surely syr, sayd he, I have ben well enfourmed howe they ryde to the nombre of v. C. speres in one company, whiche maye well be, for dayely to them there cometh men of warre out of Fraunce, and as I have knowledge it is the Barroys of Barres: he is in the castell of Noye with l. speres; this is all that we knowe. Thus they were all lodged togyder as

CAP. LXIX

Howe the duke of Lancastres marshal toke the towne of Ribadave.

CAP. LXIX

Howe the duke of Lancastres marshal toke the towne of Ribadave.

well as they myght, and made grete provysyon that came after them.

Aboute a iiii. dayes after that John Holande, and syr Thomas Percy, were comen to the marshalles oost, they ordeyned to make a grete assaulte, and caused to be made a grete engyne of tymbre, with wheles, to be removed with strenthe of men whyther they lyst; and within it myght easely be a C. knightes, and a C. archers; and they had fylled the dykes where as this engyne sholde passe. Then began the assaulte, and the engyne to approche with strength of men, and therin archers well provyded with arowes fyersly shotynge at them within the towne, and they within castynge out dartes and stones mervaylously: but they byneth were covered with mantelles and oxe hydes to defende them fro the stones and dartes. And under that coverture men of armes approched well pavessed with pyke axes to perse the walle, soo that they enpayred the walle, for they within coulde not defende the walle, bycause of the archers who shotte so holy togyder that none durste appere at theyr defence; so with hewynge they reversed into the dyke a grete pane of the wall. When they within sawe themselfe in soo grete myschefe, they were gretely abasshed, and then cryed out alowde, We yelde ourselfe, We yelde us. But there were noone that made them ony answere; the Englysshemen dyd laughe at them, and sayd, These vyllaynes have put us to moche payne, and nowe they mocke us when they wolde have us to take them to mercy, nowe the towne is our owne: some of the Englysshemen answered them within, and sayd, Syrs, we knowe not what ye say, we can not speke no Spanysshe; speke good Frensshe or Englysshe, yf ye wyll that we sholde understande you. Thus they entred and passed forthe, and chased these vyllaynes, who fledde before them, and slewe them by hepes. That daye there were slayne, what of one and other, with the Jewes that were there, moo then xv. hundred. Thus the towne of Rybadave was taken by force, and suche as fyrste entred had there grete pyllage, and specyally they founde more golde and sylver in the Jewes howses then in ony other place.

After the takynge of Rybadave, whiche was wonne by

pure assaulte, and that the Englysshemen had pylled it at theyr pleasure, then they demaunded of the marshall what sholde be done with the towne, yf it sholde be brente or not. Naye, sayd the marshall, we wyll kepe it and newe repayre it; but nowe whether shall we repayre.[1] And they determyned to drawe to Maures, a good towne in Galyce. Then they were apoynted that sholde abyde in Rybadave and repayre it; there was lefte syr Peter of Clynton, a ryght valyaunt knyght, with xx. speres, and lx. archers, they made grete provysyon with that they founde there, specyally of porkes and good wynes, whiche were so stronge and myghty that the Englysshemen coulde not drynke therof; if they dranke moche they were in that case they coulde not helpe themselfe in two dayes after. Thus they dyslodged fro Rybadave, and rode towardes the towne of Maures, and caryed in peces with them the grete engyne, for they sawe well it dyd good servyce, and was ferefull to men in the townes. When they of Maures understode howe the Englysshmen were comynge to them warde to have the towne under the duke and duches of Lancastres obeysaunce, and knewe howe Rybadave was taken by force, and how that they brought with them a Devyll instede of an engyne, for it was so grete that it coulde not be dystroyed, they doubted gretly the oost and this engyne. Then they wente to counsayle to se what were best for them to doo, outher to yelde or to make defence; and when they had well counsayled togyder, they coulde se none other thynge but that it was farre better for them to yelde then to defende: for they consydered yf they were taken by force, they sholde lese body and goodes, and no comforte appered to them fro ony parte. They that were sage sayd, Syrs, beholde howe they of Rybadave were taken at theyr defence, and yet they were as stronge as we or stronger, and they were besyeged more then a moneth, and yet they hadde nother ayde nor socoure; as we understande the kynge of Castel accompteth at this season al the countrey of Galyce lost to the ryver of Dorne, nor we thynke that this yere there cometh no Frensshe men to our ayde: wherfore let us yelde ourselfe mekely without domage, as other townes have done. Every man behelde the same oppynyon, but some sayd Howe maye this be

CAP. LXIX

Howe the duke of Lancastres marshal toke the towne of Ribadave.

[1] *prepayre* P.

CAP. LXIX
Howe the duke of Lancastres marshal toke the towne of Ribadave.

done. Well ynoughe, sayd the sages, we shall go and mete them on the waye, and bere the keyes of the towne with us, and present them to the Englysshemen: they be courtoys people, they wyll do us no hurte yf we receyve them curtoysly. To this they were all agreed. Then there yssued out of the towne a fyfty persones of them that were moost noble, as soone as they knewe that the Englysshemen approched they yssued out, and aboute a quarter of a legge of they taryed for the Englysshemen.

Tidynges came to the Englysshemen howe they of the towne of Maures were yssued out, not to fyght but to yelde them, and the keyes of the towne whiche they brought with them: then the lordes rode on before to se what the matter was, and caused all the archers and oost to tary behynde. Then the Galycyens came forthe, and it was sayd to them, Syrs, beholde here the lordes of Englande sente by the duke of Lancastre to conquere this countrey, speke to them yf ye lyst. Then they all kneled downe, and sayd, Syrs, we be of the poore men of Maures, who wyllyngly wyll be under the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre, and of my lady the duches: wherfore we desyre you to accepte us to mercy, for all that we have is yours. The iii. lordes of Englande, by eche others advyse, answered and sayd, Ye good people of Maures, we shall go with you into the towne and parte of our oost, not al, and there ye shall make promyse and othe, as good people ought to do to theyr lorde and lady. Syrs, sayd they, this shall we doo with good wylles. Then sayd the lordes, Go your wayes on before and open the gates, for ye are and shall be receyved to mercy. Then they wente to theyr towne and opened theyr gates and barryers, and suffred the constable and the other lordes to entre, and a iiii. C. speres with them. And the resydue of the oost lodged without in the feldes, and had provysyon out of the towne suffycyent: the lordes lodged within the towne, and toke the othes of them of the towne of Maures, as it is sayd before.

CAP. LXX

Howe the duke of Lancastre sente for the admyrall and mershal, and his other offycers to come to the weddynge of his doughter and the kynge of Portyngale.

THE nexte daye after the towne of Maures was gyven up, and that every man made them redy to go to the cyte of Besances,[1] there came tydynges and letters fro the duke of Lancastre, commaundynge them on the syght of his letters, whatsoever estate they were in, to repayre to his presence: certefyenge them that he loked in a shorte season for the archebysshop of Braghes,[2] and for syr John Radyghes de Sar, ambassade fro the kynge of Portyngale, who were comynge to wedde his doughter by procuracyon, and to lede her to the cyte of Porte, where the kynge of Portyngale taryed for her. When these lordes understode these tydynges, they retourned theyr waye, and sayd, it was requysyte for the duke to have his lordes and counsayle aboute hym at the receyvynge of these ambassadours; and so retourned and lefte men of warre in the garysons that they had wonne, and so came to the towne of saynt James, as the duke had commaunded them; and within iii. dayes after thyder came the bysshop of Braghes, and syr John Radyghes de Sar, with a CC. horses; they were all well lodged. Then when they were redy apparelled, the ambassadours and other lordes in theyr company wente to the duke and to the duches in good aray, where they were receyved with grete joy, and there declared the cause of theyr comynge. The duke herde them well, and was wel rejoyced therwith bycause of the avauncement of his doughter, and for the alyaunce of the kynge of Portyngale, whiche he thought ryght behovable for hym yf he wolde entre to conquere Castell. The bysshop shewed the duke and the duches, and theyr counsayle, howe he had auctoryte by procuracyon personally to wed the lady Phylyp of Lancastre, in the name of the kynge of Portyngale; wherwith the duke and duches were well contente. Thus syr John Radyghes

[1] *Braganza.*

[2] *Braga.*

CAP. LXX

Howe the duke of Lancastre sent for the admyrall and mershal to come to the weddynge of his doughter.

de Sar, by vertue of procuracyon wedded the lady Phylyp of Lancastre, in the name of the kynge of Portyngale, and the bysshop of Braghes wedded them, and soo were layde curtoysly in bed, as husbande and wyfe ought to be. And the nexte day after the lady with all her company were redy to departe, and so toke leve of her fader, moder, and systers, with ladyes and damoyselles with her, and her bastarde syster, wyfe to the marshall, with her; and with her went syr John Holande, syr Thomas Percy, and syr John Dambrychcourte, and C. speres, and CC. archers, and so rode to the cyte of Porte, in Portyngale.

Agaynst the comynge of the yonge quene of Portyngale, yssued out of the cyte of Porte to do her honoure and reverence, prelates of the chyrche, as the bysshops of Lyxbone, of Deure, of Connymbres, and of Porte, and of temporall lordes, the erle Dangose,[1] the erle of Novayre,[2] the erle of Lescal,[3] Galope Ferant Patryke, Pyvasse, Martyne de Marlo, and mo then xl. knyghtes, and grete nombre of theyr people, and many ladyes and damoyselles, and all the clergy revested in habytes of processyon. Thus the lady Phylyp of Lancastre was brought into the cyte of Porte, in Portyngale, and soo to the kynges palace; there the kynge toke her by the hande and kyssed her, and all the other ladyes and damoyselles that were come with her, and brought her into her chambre, and then toke leve of all the ladyes. And the lordes of Englande that were there lodged at theyr ease, and all theyr men in the cyte of Porte, for it is a grete cyte; and that nyght they kepte the vygyll of the feest to the nexte day, the ladyes daunsynge and passynge theyr tyme that nyght. And on the Tuysdaye the kynge of Portyngale, with the prelates, and lordes of his countrey, were redy in the mornynge, and lepte on theyr horses at the palays, and so rode to the cathedrall chyrche called saynt Maryes, and there taryed for the quene, who came accompanyed with ladyes and damoyselles: and thoughe syr John Radyghos de Sar had wedded her before in the kynges behalfe, yet then agayne openly there the kynge wedded her, and so retourned to the palays, and there was made a grete feest and a solempne; and after dyner justes and tournays before the kynge and quene, and at nyght the

[1] *Dom Gonçalo.*

[2] *Nunalvares.*

[3] *Condestable* (i.e. *the Count Nuno Alvares, the great Constable of Portugal*).

CAP. LXX

Howe the duke of Lancastre sent for the admyrall and mershal to come to the weddynge of his doughter.

pryse was gyven of them without, to syr John Holande, and of the chalengers, a knyght of the kynges, called syr John Tet-dore had the pryse. So that day and nyght they perceyvered in grete tryumphe and joye, and the kynge lay with the quene, and as the renome ranne in the countrey and courte, the kynge was as then a clene mayde. The nexte daye the feest renewed and newe justes, and the pryse of the chalengers had Vas Martyne of Marlo, and of them without syr John Dambretycourte: and that nyght there was grete daunsynge, syngynge, and sportynge, and every day there were knyghtes and squyers that justed.

With suche tryumphes, justes, and sportes, as ye have harde, the quene of Portyngale was receyved at her fyrst comynge in the cyte of Porte, and these feestes endured more then x. dayes, and the kynge gave grete gyftes to all the straungers, so that they were well contente. Then the knyghtes of Englande toke theyr leve of the kynge, and of the quene, and retourned to the cyte of saynt James to the duke and duches, who of them demaunded tydynges; and they shewed all that they had sene and harde, and howe the kynge of Portyngale and the quene dyd commaunde them to them, and sayd: Syr, the last worde that the kynge sayd to us was, howe he desyreth you to drawe into the felde when it please you, for in lykewyse so wyl he do and drawe into Castell. These be good tydynges, sayd the duke. Thus aboute a xv. dayes after the constable and admyral were retourned fro the kynge of Portyngales maryage, the duke of Lancastre prepayred for his journey to go and conquere castells and townes in Galyce, for as then the duke was not lorde of all the townes in the countrey. And it was ordeyned that when the duke sholde departe fro saynt James, that the duches and her doughter Katheryne sholde in lykewyse departe, and goo to the cyte of Porte, in Portyngale, to se the kynge and the yonge quene theyr doughter; and the towne of saynt James was delyvered to the kepynge of an Englysshe knyght, called syr Loys Clyfforde, and xxx. speres with hym, and an C. archers.

CAP. LXXI

Howe the duke of Lancastre and his men rode towardes the cyte of Besances; and howe the towne made composycyon with them.

THUS the duke of Lancastre departed and all his men, and suche as were ordeyned to abyde in garyson abode. And the duke and the duches rode towardes Besances, one of the last townes bytwene Galyce and Portyngale, the ryght waye to Porte and to Connymbres. And bycause the duches of Lancastre and her doughter sholde go to se the kynge of Portyngale, therfore they helde that way. When they of Besances knewe that the duke was comynge on them with all his oost, then they drewe to counsayle and were of many oppynyons; fynally, they determyned for the best, and sent to the duke and duches vi. of the chefe of the towne, to desyre and trete for an abstynence of warre for viii. dayes, and in the meane season they to sende to the kynge of Castell, shewynge hym without he came soo stronge to fyght with the duke, to yelde up theyr towne without ony other meane. Then there departed fro Besances vi. men, and rode to mete with the Englysshmen; fyrst they encountred with the vowarde whiche the marshall led. There they were stopped and demaunded what they were, and what they wolde. They answered how they were of Besances, and that by appoyntemente of the towne they were charged to goo and speke with the duke. The marshall sayd to syr John Soustre, Syr, go and brynge these men to the duke in saufgarde, for fere lest our archers do slee them; and then he sayd to them, Syrs, goo your wayes, this knyght shal be your guyde. So they rode forthe, and at the last founde out the duke and duches, and her doughter, and syr John Holande, syr Thomas Percy, and dyvers other with them, sportynge them under the shadowe of the fayre olyve trees, and they behelde wel syr John Soustre comynge to themwarde; then syr John Holande demaunded of hym and sayd, Syr John, are those your prysoners. Nay syr, sayd he, they be no prysoners, they are men of Besances,

sent by the mershall to speke with my lorde the duke: as I thynke they wyll make some tretye. The duke and the duches herde al those wordes: then syr John Soustre sayd to them, Ye good men avaunce forth, beholde here your lorde and lady. Then these vi. men kneled downe and sayd, My ryght redoubted lorde and lady, the comonaltye of the towne of Besances have sente us to your presence; syr, they understande howe ye are comynge or sendynge your armye agaynst them; they desyre of your specyal grace to forbere them these ix. dayes, and in the meane season they wyll sende to the kynge of Castell to the towne of Valeolyve, and shewe hym what daunger they be in; and syr, without there come within these ix. dayes suche socoure to them as to fyght with you, they wyll yelde them unto your obeysaunce, and yf ye lacke ony provysyon of vytayles or ony other thynge in the meane season, ye shall have out of the towne for your money at your pleasure for you and for all your men. Therwith the duke stode styll and spake noo worde, and suffred the duches to speke, bycause it was in her countrey. Then she behelde the duke and sayd, Syr, what say you. Madame, sayd he, and what say you. Ye are herytoure her: that I have is by you, therfore ye shall make them answere. Well syr, sayd she, methynke it were good to receyve them as they have demaunded, for I byleve the kynge of Castell hathe as nowe noo grete desyre so shortly to fyght with you. I can not tell, sayd the duke; wolde to God he wolde come shortely to batayle, then we sholde be the soner delyvered: I wolde it sholde be within vi. dayes: wherfore as ye have devysed I am contente it so be. Then the duches tourned her towarde the vi. men and sayd, Syrs, departe when ye lyst, your matter is sped, soo that ye delyver in hostage to our marshall xii. of the best of your towne for suretye to upholde this tretye. Well madame, sayd they, we are contente. And syr John Soustre was commaunded to shewe this tretye to the marshal, and so he dyd, wherwith the mershall was well contente, and the vi. men retourned to Besances, and shewed howe they had sped. Then xii. men of the moost notablest of the towne were chosen out and sente to the marshall. Thus the towne of Besances was in rest and peas by the foresayd tretye. Then they of the towne

CAP. LXXI

Howe the duke of Lancastre and his men rode towardes the cyte of Besances.

CAP. LXXI
Howe the duke of Lancastre and his men rode towardes the cyte of Besances.

sente the same vi. men that wente to the duke, to the kynge of Castell, and his counsayle: the kynge as then knewe nothynge of that composycyon, nor howe the Englysshemen were before Besances.

In the meane season that these syxe men were goynge to the kynge of Castell, the duke ordeyned that the duches and her doughter Katheryne sholde goo to the cyte of Porte, to se the kynge of Portyngale, and the yonge quene her doughter, and at theyr departynge the duke sayd to the duches, Madame Constaunce, salute fro me the kynge, and the quene my doughter, and all other lordes of Portyngale, and shewe them suche tydynges as ye know, and howe they of Besances be at composycyon with me. And as yet I knowe not wheron they grounde themselfe, nor whether that our adversary John of Trystmor have made them to make this tretye, or wyl come and fyght with us or no; I knowe well they loke for grete comforte to come to them out of Fraunce, and suche as desyre dedes of armes and advaunce-ment of honoure wyl come as soone as they can, wherfore it behoveth me alwaye to be redy and to abyde batayle; this ye may shewe to the kynge of Portyngale, and to his counsayle, and yf I se that I shall have ony thynge to do, I shall shortely sende the kynge worde therof; wherfore saye that I desyre hym to be redy to ayde and to defende our ryght and his, in lyke maner as we have promysed and sworne togyder. And madame, when ye retourne agayne to me, leve our doughter Katheryne there styll with the quene her syster, she can not be in better kepynge. Syr, sayd the lady, all this shall be doone. Then the duches and her doughter, and all other ladyes and damoyselles toke theyr leve and departed; syr Thomas Percy the admyral accompanyed them, and syr Yon Fytzwaren, and the lorde Talbot, and the lorde John Dambretycourte, and syr Namburyne[1] of Lynyers, and a hundred speres, and two hundred archers, and soo came to the cyte of Porte, in Portyngale.

[1] *Mauburni.*

CAP. LXXII

Howe the duches and her doughter wente to se the kynge of Portyngale and the quene. And howe the towne of Besances submytted them under the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre.

WHENNE the kynge of Portyngale understode that the duches of Lancastre and her doughter were comynge to hymwarde, he was therof ryght joyfull, and sente to receyve them of the grettest men of his courte; the erle of Angoses, and the erle of Novayre, syr John Radyghos de Sar, syr John Ferrant Perteke, syr Vas Martyne of Marlo, syr Egeas Colle,[1] and a xx. other knyghtes, who mette with the duches a two grete legges of, and joyfully receyved them; and the duches made frendly chere to al the lordes and knyghtes, bothe with wordes and countenaunce. Thus they came to the cyte of Porte, and all the ladyes and damoyselles were lodged in the palays, and the kynge came and met with the ladyes, and kyssed them all: then after came the quene, who receyved the duches her moder and her syster ryght honourably, as she that coulde ryght wel do it. All the kynges courte were ryght joyfull of the comynge of these ladyes and damoyselles: I wyll not speke of all theyr acquayntaunces and good chere, for I was not there present; I knowe nothynge but by the reporte of that gentyl knyght, syr John Ferrant Perteke, who was there present, and he enfourmed me of all that I know in that matter, and of many other. There the duches devysed with the kynge of Portyngale when she sawe her tyme, and shewed hym all the wordes that the duke her husbande had gyven her in charge to shewe. The kynge answered her ryght sagely, and sayd, Fayre lady and cosyn, I am all redy, yf the kynge of Castell come forth into the feldes, within iii. dayes I shal have redy iii. M. speres; they be redy in the felde on the fronters of Castell; and also I have redy xx. M. of the comons of my royalme, who be not to be refused, for they dydde me good servyce on a day at the batayle of

[1] *Coelho.*

CAP. LXXII Howe the duches and her doughter wente to se the kynge of Portyngale and the quene.

Juberoth. Syr, sayd the lady, ye speke well, and I thanke you therof; and syr, yf ony thynge happen to fall to my lorde and husbande, he wyll incontynente sygnyfye you therof. With these wordes and other the kynge and the duches devysed togyder.

Nowe let us tourne to them of Besances, and shewe howe they sped.

When these vi. men of Besances were before the kynge of Castel, they kneled downe and sayd, Ryght redoubted lorde, may it please you to understande that we be sent hyder fro your towne of Besances, who are by force in composycyon with the duke of Lancastre and with the duches, and hath obteyned a sufferaunce of warre for ix. dayes, so that yf ye come or sende suche a strength able to resyst the duches puyssaunce, then the towne to abyde styll under your obeysaunce, elles they are bounde and have layde hostage to delyver up the towne to the duke of Lancastre; wherfore maye it please your grace to gyve us answere what we shall do in this case. The kynge answered and sayd, Syrs, we shall take advyse, and then gyve you answere. Therwith the kynge departed fro them, and entred into his secret chambre. I can not tell what counsayle he toke, nor howe the matter wente; but these vi. men were there viii. dayes, and had no maner of answere, nor sawe no more the kynge. Soo the day came that the towne sholde be gyven up, and as then theyr messagers were not retourned agayne. Then the duke of Lancastre sent to Besances his marshall the x. day to speke with them, and to commaunde them to rendre up theyr towne, or elles to stryke of the heedes of the hostages. The marshall came to Besances to the barryers, and there spake with them of the towne, and sayd, Ye syrs of Besances, take hede what I saye: my lorde the duke of Lancastre hath sente me to you, to demaunde why ye have not brought to hym the keyes of your towne, and submyt you to be under his obeysaunce, as ye ought to be. The ix. dayes be past, as ye knowe well, and yf ye wyll not thus do, your hostages shall lese theyr heedes here before you: and after we shall assayle you and take you perforce, and then ye shall all dye without mercy, lyke them of Rybadave. When the men of Besances herde those tydynges, they gretly

CAP. LXXII

Howe the duches and her doughter wente to se the kynge of Portyngale and the quene.

doubted, and also fered to lese theyr frendes that were in hostage with the duke, and sayd to the marshall, Syr, my lorde the duke hath good cause to say and do as ye have reported; but, syr, as yet we here no tydynges fro our men, whom we sente to the kynge of Castel for the same cause; we wote not what is become of them. Syrs, sayd the marshall, peradventure they are kepte there styll for the tydynges they have brought to the kynge of Castell, whiche are not very plesaunt to hym to here; but my lorde the duke wyl abyde no lenger; wherfore advyse you to make me shorte answere, elles shortely ye shall have assaulte. Then they spake agayne and sayd, Syr, we requyre you let us assemble togyder in the towne to take advyse, and then we shal answere you. I am content, sayd the marshal. Then they retourned into the towne, and, by the blastes of trompettes in every strete, they assembled togather in the market place; then they declared to all the comonte all the foresayd wordes, and so fynally they accorded to rendre up theyr towne, and to save theyr estates that were in pryson. Then they retourned to the marshall, and sayd, Syr, in al your demaundes we can fynde nothynge but as reason requyreth; we are content to receyve my lorde the duke and my lady the duches into this towne, and to put them in possessyon therof: and, syr, here be the keyes, and we shall goo with you to them to theyr lodgynge, yf it please you to brynge us thyder. With ryght a good wyl, sayd the marshal. Then there yssued out of Besances a lx. men, berynge the keyes of theyr towne with them, and the marshall brought them streyght to the duke, and shewed hym all theyr ententes. The duke receyved them, and delyvered them theyr hostages, and the same day entred into the cyte of Besances, and there lodged, and all his company as many as myght.

CAP. LXXIII

Howe they of Besances, that had ben sente to the kynge of Castell, came home to their towne after it was rendred up to the duke of Lancastre.

AFOURE dayes after that Besances was gyven up, the vi. men that were sent to Valeolyve to the kynge of Castell retourned home to theyr towne. Then it was demaunded of them why they had taryed so longe: they answered, howe they myght not do therwith nor amende it, saynge howe they had spoken with the kynge, who had promysed them to take counsayle and then to gyve answere; Whiche answere we taryed on viii. dayes. And as yet they sayd they were retourned without answere. Then they were asked no moo questyons, but they sayd howe the kynge of Castell loked for moche people to come out of Fraunce, and dyvers were come and lodged abrode in the countrey; but the capytaynes, as syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac were not as then come; but all suche knyghtes and squyers in Spayne that sholde be under the guydynge of those ii. capytaynes were redy apparelled: but all suche as were reteyned and apoynted to be under the duke of Borbon, were styll in theyr owne houses upon a redynes. Thus, as ye have herde here before, syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac passed thrughe the royalme of Fraunce and came into Languedoc. They were mo then a M. speres, knyghtes and squyers of al countreys; they assembled in Carcassone, in Narbonoys, and in Thoulousayne, and as they came soo they lodged in this good countrey; many there were that payde lytell or nothynge for that they toke. Tydynges came to the erle of Foyze, beynge at Ortays, that men of warre of Fraunce approched nere to his countrey, and wolde passe thrughe to go into Spayne; and it was sayd to hym, Syr, they pay for nothynge that they take, wherfore all the comon people flyeth before them as though they were Englysshmen; and the capytaynes be at Carcassone, and theyr men theraboute, and so passeth the ryver of Garon to Thoulouse, and then they wyl entre into Bygore,

and so incontynent into your countrey: and if they do then as they have done all the way, they shall do grete evyl in your countrey of Byerne; therfore, syr, take good hede what ye wyll do in this behalfe. The erle of Foyze, who was soone counsayled in hymselfe, sayd, I wyll that all my townes and castelles, as well in Foyze as in Byerne, be provyded for with men of warre, and all the countrey to be in a redynes to entre into batayle yf nede be; I wyll not bye derely the warre of Castell; my landes be free; yf Frensshemen wyll passe thrughe, they shall pay truely for every thynge that they take, or elles all the passages in my countrey shal be kepte close agaynst them; and, syrs, ye syr Arnalte Wyllyam, and syr Peter of Byerne, I charge you to defende and kepe the countrey. These ii. knyghtes were bastarde bretherne, and ryght valyaunt men in armes: they toke on them this charge. Then in all the erle of Foyze countrey it was ordeyned that every man sholde have armure redy, as they were wonte to have, or better, and to be redy dayly whensoever they were commaunded. Then in Byerne, and in Foyze, and in Thoulouse every man was redy to entre into batayle; and there was sente to the cyte of Palmes a C. speres of good men of armes; syr Espayne du Lyon was sent to Savredun, syr Cycart of saynt Lygyer to Maryzes, and syr Peter of Byerne was with a C. speres at Bellpount,[1] and at the entre of the erldome of Foyze at saynt Thybaulte on the ryver of Garon, was sir Peter of Calestan; and syr Peter Meaus of Noyalles, with l. speres, at Polamnuche; and syr Peter of Toce,[2] at the castell of Mesun; the bastarde of Esperung[3] at Morlens; syr Arnolde Wyllyam, with a C. speres, at Pau; syr Guy de la Mote at mounte Marsen; syr Raymon of Newecastel at Sauvetere; syr Yvayne of Foyze, the erles bastardes sone, at Mountesquyu; syr Verdoll of Nevosan,[4] and syr John of saynt Marcell, at Oron; syr Hector de la Garde at mounte Garbell; John of Nowecastell at Ertyell. And the erle sente to syr John Lane,[5] beynge at the castell of Beawvoyson,[6] to take good hede to all his fronters; and he sent to saynt Gaudens a cosyn of his, syr Ernalton of Spayne; brevely, there was nother towne nor castel in Foyze nor in Byerne but were refresshed with newe men of war; and they sayd they

CAP. LXXIII

Howe they of Besances came home to their towne.

[1] *Belpech.*

[2] *Roche.*

[3] *Espaing.*

[4] *Perduc de Nébouzan.*

[5] *Raymond l'aisné.*

[6] *Mauvoison.*

CAP. LXXIII

Howe they of Besances came home to their towne.

were men ynowe to resyst double the nombre of other men of armes, for they were in all to the nombre of a xx. M. men of war of chosen men.

Tidynges came to syr Wyllyam of Lygnac beynge at Thoulouse, and to syr Gaultyer of Passac beynge at Carcassone, howe the erle of Foyze provyded men of armes and furnysshed every garyson. And the renome ranne that he wolde suffre none to passe thrughe his countre, wherof these ii. capytaynes were sore abasshed; and then they apoynted to mete in the myd way to speke togyder at the castell of Daurey, howe they sholde do with the erle of Foyze. Then syr Wyllyam sayd, Syr Gaultyer, to say truly, it is grete mervayle that the Frensshe kynge and his counsayle have not wryten to hym to open peasybly his countrey. Well, syr, sayd syr Gaultyer, it is necessary that ye go and speke with the erle, and shewe hym in curtoys maner that we be sente by the Frensshe kynge this way to passe peasybly, and to pay for all that we take: surely the erle of Foyze is so grete and myghty, that yf he lyst we gete noo passage thrughe his countrey; then we must passe thrughe Aragon, whiche is farre of: I can not tell why the erle maketh suche doubtes, nor why he soo fortefyeth his garysons, nor whether he have made ony alyaunce with the duke of Lancastre or no. I desyre you go to hym, and knowe the trouthe; ye se howe our men dayly passe into Bygore. I am contente, sayd syr Gaultyer. And so toke these ii. capytaynes leve eche of other: syr Wyllyam of Lygnac retourned to Thoulouse, and syr Gaultyer, with xl. horse, wente and passed the ryver of Garon at saynt Thybaulte, and there he founde syr Menalte of Novayles, who made hym grete chere. Syr Gaultyer demaunded of hym where he sholde fynde the erle of Foyze. He answered hym, At Ortays. These ii. knyghtes were a season togyder, and comoned of dyvers matters; then syr Gaultyer departed and came to saynt Gaudens, and there he had good chere: the nexte day he rode to saynt John de Ryvyer, and rode all the lawne of Bonc,[1] and costed Mauvoysyn, and lay at Tournay, a close towne; and the nexte daye he rode to dyner to Tarbe, and there taryed all day, and there founde the lorde Danchyn and syr Menalte of Barbason, two grete

[1] *Lande de Bouc.*

lordes of Bierne: they spake with hym of many thynges, and bycause that the lorde of Barbason was of the partye of the erle of Armynacke, he coulde speke no good worde of the erle of Foyze. The nexte daye he departed and wente to Morlans in Byerne, and there he founde syr Raynolde Wyllyam, bastarde broder to the erle of Foyze, who receyved hym with good chere; and he shewed syr Gaultyer howe he sholde fynde the erle at Ortays, and howe he wolde be ryght glad of his comynge. God graunte it, sayd syr Gaultyer; for to speke with hym I am come into this countrey. Soo they dyned togyder, and after dyner syr Gaultyer wente to his lodgynge to mounte Gabryel, and the nexte daye, by iii. of the clocke, he came to Ortays, and could not speke with the erle that day tyll the nexte daye at afternoone, when the erle accustomed to come abrode.

CAP. LXXIII Howe they of Besances came home to their towne.

The nexte daye, when the erle of Foyze knewe that syr Gaultyer of Passac was come to speke with hym somwhat, he made the more hast to yssue out of his chambre. Then syr Gaultyer dyd salute hym; and the erle, who knew as moche of honour as ony knyght, dyd salute hym agayne, and toke syr Gaultyer by the hande, and sayd, Syr, ye be ryght hartely welcome; what busynes hath brought you into this countrey of Byerne. Syr, sayd the knyght, syr Wyllyam Lygnac and I are commytted by the Frensshe kynge to conduyte into Castell certayne men of armes, as ye have herde or this, and howe that ye wyl let our journey and close your countrey of Byerne agaynst us and our company. Then the erle of Foyze sayd, Syr Gaultyer, that is not soo; for I wyll not close nor kepe my countrey agaynst you, nor agaynst ony man that wyll peasybly passe and pay to my people for that they take; whiche fredome I have sworne to kepe, and to maynteyne, and mynystre to them justyce, as every lorde is bounde to do to his subjectes; for that entente lordes have theyr sygnoryes; but it hath ben shewed me that ye brynge with you a maner of Bretons, Barroys, Loraynes, and Borgonyons, who knowe not what payne meaneth; and agaynst suche people I wyll close my countrey, for I wyll kepe my people in theyr fraunches and ryghtes. Syr, sayd the knyght, the entente of me and my companyon is, that none shall passe thrughe your lande without they pay

CAP. LXXIII

Howe they of Besances came home to their towne.

peaseably to the agrement of the poore men, or elles to be taken and corrected accordynge to the usage of your countrey, and they to make restytucyon for every domage by them done, or elles we to satysfye for theyr trespasses, so theyr bodyes may be delyvered to us. And without he be a gentyll man, we shal make justyce to be done of his body before your men, that all other shall take therby ensample; and yf he be a gentyl man, we shal cause hym to rendre and restore ony domage by hym done, or elles we shall doo it for hym. This crye we shall make with a trompet in every mannes lodgynge, and also declare it agayne to them or they entre into ony parte of your lande, so that none shall exscuse them of neglygence. Syr, may this suffyse and contente you. Then the erle sayd, Syr Gaultyer, yf this be done, I am well contente, and ye shall be welcome into this countrey; I wyll be glad to see you; let us goo to dyner, and then we shall talke more togyder.

Syr, sayd the erle, cursed be the warre bytwene Portyngale and Castel; I ought gretly to complayne of it, for I never lost so moche as I dyd at one season in the warre bytwene those two royalmes, for all my chefe men of warre of Byerne were there slayne; and yet I shewed them or they wente that they sholde make theyr warre wysely, for I sayd the Portyngales were harde men to mete withall, and cruell of dedes; yf they have the over hande of theyr enemyes, they have no mercy. Syr Gaultyer, I speke it that when ye and your companyon come into Castell, syth ye two be the chefe capytaynes of them that are passed and shall passe, and peradventure ye shall be requyred by the kynge of Castell to gyve your counsayle and advyse; be wel advysed that ye gyve not to hasty counsayle to advaunce to fyght with your adversaryes, the duke of Lancastre, the kynge of Portyngale, the Englysshemen, or the Portyngales, for all these be famylyer togyder and be all as one. And the Englysshemen desyre to have batayle by ii. reasons. One is, of a grete season they have had noo profyte; they be poore, and have wonne nothynge of a longe tyme, but rather spende and have lost; wherfore they wyll be redy to avaunce themselfe, in hope to gete some newe profyte; and suche people as be adventurers desyrynge other mennes goodes, wyll fyght with a

hardy courage, and often tymes fortune serveth them well. The other reason is, the duke of Lancastre knoweth surely that he can not come parfytely nor peasybly to the herytage of Castell, whiche he demaundeth to have by the ryght of his wyfe, whom he calleth ryghtfull enherytoure, but all onely by batayle, for he knoweth well yf he myght have and obteyne one journey agaynst the kynge of Castell, that all the countrey then wolde yelde to hym and trymble before hym; and for this entente he is come into Galyce, and hath gyven one of his doughters in maryage to the kynge of Portyngale, to the entente that he sholde ayde his quarell; and, syr, I saye this to you, for if the matter sholde fall otherwyse then well, ye and your felowe shall bere more blame then ony other. Syr, sayd syr Gaultyer, I thanke you of your good advertysement; and, syr, my servyce shall be redy to doo you pleasure, for at this day ye be amonge other Crysten prynces reputed for one of the moost sagest and happyest in all your adventures; but, syr, my companyon and I have one above us who is chefe soverayne of all our company; that is the duke of Borbon; and tyll he be come into Castell, we shall make no hast to fyght with our enemyes, whatsoever ony man saye. So they entred into other talkynge, tyll the erle of Foyze demaunded for wyne. Then they dranke, and soo toke leve; the erle entred into his chambre, and syr Gaultyer retourned to his lodgynge, well accompanyed with the erles knyghtes, and so supped togyder.

CAP. LXXIII
Howe they of Besances came home to their towne.

The nexte day after dyner syr Gaultyer toke his leve of the erle of Foyze, and besyde other thynges the erle gave hym a fayre courser and a mule. Syr Gaultyer thanked the erle, and so departed out of Ortays, and lay the same nyght at Ercyell[1] and the nexte nyght at Tarbe. He rode that daye a grete journey, and then he determyned to sende fro thens to syr Wyllyam of Lygnac, and soo he dyd, advertysynge hym howe he had spedde with the erle of Foyze, and desyrynge hym to come on forwarde with all theyr companyes and shewynge hym howe the countrey of Byerne and all the good townes sholde be open, payenge trewely for that they take, or elles not. This messagere dydde soo moche, that he came to Tholouse and dydde his message

[1] *Arthez.*

CAP. LXXIII and delyvered his letters. And when syr Wyllyam hadde redde the contynewe hereof, he made it to be knowen to all his company that they sholde set on forwarde, soo that as soone as they entred ony parte of the erle of Foyze lande to pay for every thynge that they sholde take, elles theyr capytaynes to answere for every thynge. This was cryed by the sounde of a trompet fro lodgynge to lodgynge, to the entente that every man sholde knowe it. Then every man dyslodged out of the marches of Tholouse, Carcassone, Lymousin, and of Narbon, and so entred into Bygore. And syr Wyllyam of Lygnac toke his hors, and rode to Tarbe to syr Gaultyer his companyon, and there made good chere togyder, and theyr bandes and rowtes passed by and assembled togyder in Bygore, to ryde in company thrughe the countrey of Byerne, and to passe at Ortays the ryver of Gaure, whiche renneth to Bayon.

Howe they of Besances came home to their towne.

At the yssuynge out of the countrey of Byerne is the entre of the countrey of Bysquey, in the whiche countrey as then the kyng of Englande helde grete landes in the bysshopryches of Burdeaus and Bayon; there were a lxxx. townes with steples that helde of the kynge of Englande. And when they understode of the passage of these Frensshmen thrugh theyr countrey, they were in doubte of over rynnynge, brennynge, and exylynge, for as then there were no men of war of theyr partye in all that countrey to defende theyr fronters; the sage men drewe togyder, and sente to trete with the Frensshe capytaynes and to bye theyr peas: then they sent to Ortays iiii. men, havynge auctoryte to make theyr peas. These iiii. men met by the way with a squyer of the erle of Foyze, called Ernalton du Pyn,[1] and shewed hym all theyr matter, desyrynge hym to helpe them to speke with syr Gaultyer of Passac and syr Wyllyam of Lygnac when they came to Ortays, whiche sholde be within iii. or iiii. dayes after, and to helpe to ayde to make theyr peas; and he answered, that he wolde do so with a good wyll. The nyght that the capytayns came to Ortays, they were lodged at the same squyers house, and there he ayded them of Bysquey to make theyr apoyntment, and they to pay ii. M. frankes, and theyr countrey saved fro brennynge and robbynge. The erle of Foyze gave a dyner to these capy-

[1] *Pans.*

taynes, and to syr Wyllyam of Lygnac a fayre courser. The nexte daye they passed to Sauveterre, and entred into the countrey of Bysquey, whiche was redemed; they toke vytayles where as they myght gete it, and so passed thrughe the country without doyng of ony other domage, and so came to saynt Johns de Pye of Porte, at the entre of Navare.

CAP. LXXIII Howe they of Besances came home to their towne.

CAP. LXXIIII

Howe syr Johan Holande and syr Raynolde de Roy fought togyder in lystes before the duke of Lancastre in the towne of Besances.

HERE before ye have herde howe the towne of Besances was put in composycyon with the duke of Lancastre, and howe it was yelden up to hym, for the kynge of Castell dyd comforte it nothynge; and howe the duches of Lancastre and her doughter came to the cyte of Porte in Portyngale, to se the kynge and the quene there, and howe the kynge and the lordes there receyved them joyfully as it was reason. And thus whyle the duke of Lancastre sojourned in the towne of Besances, tydynges came thyder fro Valeolyve, brought by an heraulde of Fraunce, who demaunded where was the lodgynge of syr John Holande: and so he was brought thyder. Then he kneled downe before hym, and delyvered hym a letter, and sayd, Syr, I am an offycer of armes, sent hyder to you fro syr Raynolde du Roy, who saluteth you; yf it please you to rede your letter. Then syr John sayd, With ryght a good wyll, and thou arte ryght welcome: and opened his letter and redde it, wherin was conteyned howe syr Raynolde du Roy desyred hym in the way of amours and for the love of his lady to delyver hym of his chalenge, iii. courses with a spere, iii. strokes with a sworde, iii. with a dagger, and iii. with an axe; and that if it wolde please hym to come to Valeolyve, he wolde provyde for hym and lx. horse a sure saufconduyte; yf not, he wolde come to Besances with xxx. horses, so that he wolde gete for hym a saufcondyte of the duke of Lancastre. When syr John Holande had red these

CAP. LXXIIII

Howe syr Johan Holande and syr Raynolde de Roy fought togyder.

letters, he began to smyle, and behelde the heraulde and sayd, Frende, thou arte welcome; thou hast brought me tydynges that pleaseth me ryght wel, and I accepte his desyre; thou shalte abyde here in my house with my company, and to morowe thou shalte have answere where our armes shal be accomplysshed, outher in Galyce or in Castell. Syr, sayd the heraulde, as it pleaseth God and you.

The heraulde was there at his ease, and syr John wente to the duke, and founde hym talkynge with the marshall: then he shewed them his tydynges and the letters. Well, sayd the duke, and have ye accepted his desyre. Ye, truely syr, sayd he; and I desyre nothynge so moche as dedes of armes, and the knyght hath desyred me; but nowe, syr, where shall it be your pleasure that we doo our armes. The duke studyed a lytell, and then sayd, I wyll that they be done in this towne; make a saufconduyte for hym, as it shall please you, and I shall seale it. In the name of God, sayd syr John, that is well sayd. The saufconduyte was wryten for hym and xxx. knyghtes and squyers to come saufe and go saufe. Then syr John Holande delyvered it to the heraulde, and gave hym a mantell furred with mynever, and xii. aungell nobles. The heraulde toke his leve and retourned to Valeolyve to his mayster, and there shewed howe he had sped, and delyvered the saufconduyte. On the other parte, tydynges came to the cyte of Porte to the kynge of Portyngale and to the ladyes there, howe that these dedes of armes sholde be done at Besances. Well, sayd the kynge, I wyll be therat, and the quene my wyfe, with other ladyes and damoyselles. And the duches of Lancastre, who was as then there, thanked the kynge in that she sholde at her retourne be accompanyed with the kynge and with the quene. It was not longe after but the tyme approched. Then the kynge of Portyngale, the quene, the duches and her other doughter, with other ladyes and damoyselles, rode forth in grete aray towarde Besances. And when the duke of Lancastre knew that the kynge came thyder, he toke his hors and many other lordes and yssued out of Besances, and met the kynge and the ladyes. There the kynge and the duke made grete chere togyder, and so entred togyder into the towne, and theyr lodgynge appoynted

CAP. LXXIIII

Howe syr Johan Holande and syr Raynolde de Roy fought togyder.

as it aperteyned accordynge to the maner of the countrey, and that was not so easye nor large as thoughe they had ben at Parys.

Aboute a iii. dayes after that the kynge of Portyngale was come to Besances, thyder came syr Reynolde du Roy, well accompanyed with knyghtes and squyers; he hadde a vi. score horses, and they were all well lodged, for the duke of Lancastre hadde prepayred redy theyr lodgynges. Then the nexte daye syr John Holande and syr Raynolde Roy were armed and mounted on theyr horses, and soo came to a fayre place, redy sanded, where they sholde do theyr armes, and scafoldes redy made for the kynge and for the ladyes, and for the duke and other lordes of Englande, for they were all come thyder to se the dedes of armes of these ii. knyghtes. They came into the felde as well appoynted as coulde be devysed, and there was brought in theyr speres, theyr axes, and theyr swordes, and well horsed; and so eche of them a good dystaunce fro other made theyr tournes and fryskes fresshly, for they knewe well they were regarded; every thynge was ordeyned at theyr desyre, and all theyr armes graunted, excepte the utteraunce; howbeit, no man knewe what sholde fal of theyr bodyes, for syth they were thyder come they must nedes mete at the poynte of theyr speres, and after that with theyr swordes, and then with axes and daggers. Loo what daunger they were in to the entente to exhaulte theyr honoure, for theyr lyves lay but in the mysadventure of one stroke. Thus they ranne togyder, and met as even as thoughe they hadde rynne by a lyne, and strake eche other in the vysoure of theyr helmes, so that syr Raynolde du Roy brake his spere in iiii. peces, and the shevers flewe a grete hyght into the ayre, whiche course was gretely praysed: syr John Holande strake syr Raynolde in lykewyse in the vysoure, but the stroke was of no force; I shall shewe you why. Syr Raynolde had the vysoure of his helme made at avauntage, for it was tyed but with a small lase; the lase brake with the stroke and the helme flewe of his heed, so that the knyght was bare heeded, and so passed forth theyr course, and syr John dyscharged and bare his staffe fresshely. Then every man sayd it was a goodly course.

CAP. LXXIIII

Howe syr Johan Holande and syr Raynolde de Roy fought togyder.

Then these knyghtes retourned to theyr owne places, and syr Raynolde was helmed agayne and had a newe spere, and so they ranne togyder agayne; they were bothe wel horsed, and coulde well guyde them: they strake eche other on the helmes, so that the fyer flewe out; the speres brake not, but syr Raynoldes helme agayne flewe of his heed. A, sayd the Englysshmen, the Frenssheman hath avauntage. Why is not his helme as fast bocled as syr John of Holandes is. We thynke he dothe wronge; let hym set his helme in lyke case as his companyon hathe done his. Holde your peas, syrs, sayd the duke of Lancastre; let them dele in armes; let every man take his advauntage as he thynketh best: yf syr John Holande thynke that the other knyght have advauntage, let hym set on his helme in lyke maner; but as for me, sayd the duke, and I were in lyke armes as these ii. knyghtes be, I wolde have my helme as fast bocled as I coulde; and I thynke here be many of the same oppynyon. Then the Englysshemen spake no moo wordes: and the ladyes and damoyselles sayd howe the knyghtes had justed well and goodly; and the kynge of Portyngale sayd the same, and spake to syr John Ferant, and sayd, Syr John, in our countrey knyghtes just not in this goodly maner. Syr, sayd he, these knyghtes do just wel; and, syr, I have sene or this the Frensshmen just before the kynge your broder, when we were at Elyres,[1] agaynst the kynge of Castell; lyke justes I sawe there bytwene syr Wyllyam Wyndsore and another Frensshe knyght: but theyr helmes were faster tyed then this knyghtes helme is. Then the kynge regarded agayne the two knyghtes, to se theyr thyrde course.

[1] *Elvas.*

Thus they ranne togyder the thyrde course, and regarded eche other wysely to take theyr advauntage; they myght well so doo, for theyr horses served them at theyr wysshyng, and so they strake eche other agayne on the helme in suche wyse that theyr eyen trimbled in theyr heedes and theyr staves brake; and agayne syr Raynoldes helme flewe of his heed, and so eche other passed forth theyr course and demeaned themselfe fresshly, so that every man sayd howe they had nobly justed. But the Englysshmen blamed gretely syr Raynolde du Roy in that his helme was no faster set on his heed; but the duke of Lancastre blamed hym nothyng,

but sayd, I thynke hym wyse that can in feates of armes seke his lawfull advauntage; it semeth well that syr Raynolde is not to lerne to just, he knoweth more therin then syr John doth, thoughe he have borne hymselfe ryght well. So thus after theyr courses with theyr speres they toke theyr axes, and dyd theyr armes with them, and gave eche other iii. grete strokes on theyr helmes, and then they fought with theyr swordes and after with theyr daggers, and when all was done there was none of them hurte. The Frensshmen brought syr Raynolde to his lodgynge, and the Englysshmen syr John Holande to his. The same day the duke of Lancastre made a dyner to all the Frensshmen in his lodgynge, and the duches set at the table by the duke, and syr Raynolde du Roy bynethe her: after dyner they wente into a counsayle chambre, and the duches toke syr Raynolde by the hande, and made hym to entre as sone as herselfe; and there she comoned with hym and other of the Frensshe knyghtes tyll it was tyme to call for drynke. Then the duches sayd to the Frensshe knyghtes, Syrs, I have mervayle of you, that ye do susteyne the wronge oppynyon of a bastarde; for ye knowe well, and soo dothe all the worlde, that Henry that was sometyme called kynge of Castel was a bastarde; therfore what just cause have you to susteyne that quarell, and ayde to your power to dysheryte the ryght ayre of Castell. For I knowe well, and soo dothe all the worlde, that I and my syster were doughters by lawfull maryage to kyng Peter: wherfore God knoweth what ryght we have to the royalme of Castell; and the good lady, when she spake of her fader, she wepte. Then syr Raynolde du Roy made his obeysaunce and sayd, Madame, we knowe ryght well that all is of trouth that ye have sayd; howbeit, the kynge our mayster is of the contrary oppynyon agaynst you, and we be his subjectes, and must make warre at his pleasure, and go where as he wyll sende us; we maye not say nay. So the duches departed to the duke, and the Frensshe knyghtes dranke, and then toke theyr leves and wente to theyr lodgynge, and there every thynge was redy to departe, and then they mounted and departed fro Besances, and rode the same daye to Noy, and there they rested, and then rode forth tyll they came to Valeolyve.

CAP. LXXIIII

Howe syr Johan Holande and syr Raynolde de Roy fought togyder.

CAP. LXXV

Howe the kynge of Portyngale and the duke of Lancastre determyned to entre into the royalme of Castell.

AFTER these dedes of armes done, as I have recorded, the kynge of Portyngale and the duke of Lancastre toke counsayle togyder, and determyned to ryde and to entre into Castell within a shorte space, and that the kynge of Portyngale with all his power sholde ryde on the fronters and so to entre into Castell, and the duke and his rowte to entre on the boundes of Galyce, and to conquere suche townes and fortresses as were agaynst hym; and yf John of Castell dyd assemble his oost agaynst them to make batayle, then bothe theyr oostes to drawe togyder. It was thought moost necessary to have theyr oostes asondre tyll nede were rather than togyder, to exchewe sykenes that myght fall, and to have the more easyer lodgynge and foragynge, in exchewyng of debates and dyscordes, for Englysshmen be hasty and prowde in the felde, and the Portyngales hote and dysdaynful and can not suffre; but it was thought that in a grete journey of batayle they sholde ryght wel agree togyder. This counsayle was determyned, and the kynge sayd to the duke, Syr, as soone as I have knowledge that ye set forwarde, I shall doo in lyke case, for I and my men be redy, and they desyre nothynge elles but batayle. Syr, sayd the duke, and I shall not longe syt styll: it is shewed me howe as yet there be certayne townes in Galyce that rebell agaynst us; I wyll goo and vysyte them, and after that I wyll seke out for our enemyes whersoever I can fynde them. Thus the kynge of Portyngale toke leve of the duke and duches. And in lyke wyse so dyd the quene Phelyp and her yonge syster Katheryne, for it was ordeyned that the yonge lady sholde abyde al the warre season with her syster the quene at the cyte of Porte in Portyngale; it was thought she coulde not be in ony better kepynge: and the duches retourned to saynt Jaques in Galyce: so thus every body departed thyder as they

sholde doo; the kynge to the cyte of Porte, and the duches to the towne of saynt Jaques, well accompanyed with knyghtes and squyers. And the duke taryed at Besances and there aboute, and prepayred shortly to set forwarde; he was desyrous to departe, bycause it was in the joly lusty moneth of Aprell, at whiche season in Galyce the grasse is full growen, and all theyr corne, and herbes, floures, and fruytes redy rype; the countrey is so hote, that in the begynnynge of June harvest is past. The duke thought the season goodly to set forwarde his army.

CAP. LXXV
Howe the kynge of Portyngale and the duke of Lancastre determyned to entre into the royalme of Castell.

Nowe let us somwhat speke of the orderynge of the Frensshmen and of kynge John of Castell, as well as we have done of the Englysshemen.

CAP. LXXVI

Howe syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Castell.

HERE before ye have herde howe syr Wyllyam of Lygnac[1] and syr Gaultyer of Passac dyd so moche by theyr wyse entreatynge of the erle of Foyze, that he suffred them peasybly to passe thrughe his countrey of Byerne to go into Castel. And besyde that, the erle gave them grete rewardes, for there were noo knyghtes nor squyers, straungers, that came to se hym, but that he wolde largely rewarde them accordynge to theyr degrees; to some a C. floreynes, to some CC. floreynes, and xxx. or xl.; so that this sayd fyrst passage of the Frensshemen cost the erle of Foyze, as his owne treasourer shewed me, the some of a M. frankes, besyde horses and other thynges that he gave. To say trouth, surely it is grete domage that suche a persone sholde be olde or dye; he had no mermosettes about hym to say, Syr, take here, and gyve this, and pynche and pyl the people. Surely he had none suche aboute hym, he dyd every thynge on his owne mynde, for naturally he had grete wysdome, and coulde gyve where nede was, and take as it became hym best; and, by reasan of his larges and grete

[1] *Neilhac.*

CAP. LXXVI

Howe syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Castell.

expences, somtyme he travayled his subjectes, for his revenewes were not suffycyent to bere out his gyftes, whiche were yerely lx. M. frankes, the whiche lyke have not ben sene nor herde of ony other; yet he assembled his treasoure for doubte of all adventures in xxx. yere xxx. tymes a C. M. frankes. And yet for all that his people alwayes prayde to God for his longe lyfe: and I herde it reported, howe when he dyed there were in Foyze and in Byerne x. M. persones that sayd that they wolde gladly have dyed with hym, wherby it is to be thought that they sayd not so without it had ben for grete love that they had to their lorde. And surely if they loved hym, they dyd but ryght and accordynge to reason, for he alwayes maynteyned them in theyr ryght and kepte ever true justyce, for all his landes, and the people therin had as grete lyberte and fraunchesse, and lyved in as good peas as thoughe they had ben in paradyse terestre. I say not this for flattery, nor for favour nor love that I bere hym, nor for the gyftes that he hath gyven me; but I can well prove all that I have sayd, for I am sure there be a M. knyghtes and squyers wyll saye the same.

Nowe let us retourne to syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and to syr Gaultyer of Passac, who were capytaynes and soverayne leders of all the Frensshe armye. When they were passed the countrey of Bysquey and the pase of Rouncevall, whiche cost them iii. dayes a passynge, the mountaynes were so full of snowe, for all that it was in the moneth of Aprell, yet they and theyr horses hadde moche payne to passe thrughe. Then they came towardes Panpylona, and there they founde the royalme of Navare redy open for to suffre them to passe thrughe. For the kynge of Navare wolde not doo no dyspleasure to the kynge of Castell, bycause his sone, syr Charles of Navare, had to his wyfe as then the kynge of Castelles syster; and when the peas was made bytwene kynge Henry and the fader of kynge John of Navare,[1] they made and promysed grete alyaunce togyder, whiche they longe kepte: for the kynge of Navare was not able to resyst the kynge of Castell, without he had grete alyaunce and comforte of the kynge of Aragon, or elles of the kynge of Englande.

[1] *Et quant la paix fut faicte du roy Henry, pere au roy Jehan, au roy de Navarre.*

These capytaynes of Fraunce came to Pampylona, where

CAP. LXXVI

Howe syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Castell.

the kynge of Navare was, who receyved them joyfully, and made them to dyne with hym in his palays. After dyner he led them into his chambre, and there comoned with them of dyvers thynges, for the kynge there was a wyse man and a subtell and well langaged. And amonge other thynges he shewed them howe the Frensshe kynge and his counsayle had ben dyspleased with hym without a cause, and wrongfully had taken fro hym his herytage and landes in Normandy, whiche he ought to have by successyon of his predecessours, kynges of Fraunce and of Navare, whiche he sayd he coulde not forgete, seynge he had taken fro hym in Normandy, Languedoc, and in the barony of Mountpellyer, the some of lx. M. frankes of yerely revenues: and he sayd he wyst not to whome to complayne to have ryght, but all onely to God. Syrs, sayd the kyng, I say not this to you, bycause ye sholde addresse my wronges, for I knowe well it lyeth not in your power, for I thynke the Frensshe kynge wyll do but lytell for you in that behalfe, for ye be none of his counsayle: ye be but knyghtes, adventurers, and sowdyours, to go wheresoever he sende you; but I speke this in maner of complaynte to al knyghtes in Fraunce that passe by me. Then syr Gaultyer of Passac sayd, Syr, your wordes be true, yf that you saye that our kynge for all us wyll nother gyve nor take; for surely, syr, we be not of his counsayle, but redy to go where as he wyll sende us; but, syr, the duke of Borbon, who is our soverayne capytayne and uncle to our kynge, cometh after us this same waye; outher goynge or retournynge ye maye shewe hym your busynes, by hym ye maye be addressed of all your complayntes; and, syr, we praye to God that he may rewarde you of the honour that ye have done to us; and, syr, we shall shewe your curtoysye to our kyng and to his counsayle when we retourne into Fraunce, and also to the duke of Borbone, who is our chefe capytayne, whome we trust to se or we se the kyng. And then wyne was brought, and they dranke and toke theyr leve of the kynge, and the kynge rewarded them largely, and sente to eche of them to theyr lodgyng goodly horses, wherof they had grete joye.

Thus these men of warre passed thrugh the royalme of Navare and came to Groyne,[1] and there demaunded where

[1] *Logroño.*

CAP. LXXVI

Howe syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Castell.

they sholde fynde the kynge of Castell. And it was shewed them howe he had lyen at Valeolyve a grete season, but as then they sayd they thought he was at Burgus in Spayne, there makynge his provysyon. Then they toke the way to Burgus, and lefte the way to Galyce, for that waye was not sure for them, for the Englysshemen were sore abrode in the countrey. Tydynges came to the kynge of Castell howe socoures came to hym out of Fraunce to the nombre of ii. M. speres, wherof he was ryght glad, and so departed fro Valeolyve and rode to Burgus with a vi. M. hors. Thus these Frensshmen of armes came to Burgus, and lodged theraboute abrode in the countrey, and dayly thyder came men of warre; and syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac came to the kynge into his palays, who receyved them swetely, and thanked them of the payne and grete travayle that they had taken for his sake as to come thyder to serve hym. The knyghtes made theyr reverence and sayd, Syr, yf we maye do you ony servyce to please you, our paynes shall soone be forgoten; but, syr, and it please you to take advyse howe we shal do, outher to ryde agaynst our enemyes, or elles to make them warre[1] by garysons tyll suche season as the duke of Borbon be come; and, syr, yf it please you ye maye sende for syr Olyver of Clysquy, we knowe well he is in this countrey,[1] and for syr Peter of Vyllaynes, the Barroys of Barres, Chatell Morant, and the other companyons who have haunted this countrey more then we have done, for they were here longe before us; and then let us al counsayle togyder, and with Goddes grace you and your royalme shal have honoure and profyte. Syrs, sayd the kynge, ye speke wysely, and thus shal it be done. Then clerkes were set aworke, and letters made and messagers sent forthe into dyvers places to the knyghtes and men of warre there as they were spred abrode in the countrey. And when they knewe that syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac were at Burgus with the kynge, they were gretely rejoyced therof. Then these knyghtes and other companyons departed fro theyr garysons, and lefte them in sure kepynge, and so rode to Burgus in Spayne; soo that there was a grete nombre of Frensshe men of warre.

[1] *his* P.

Then the kynge of Castel and his lordes and knyghtes

CAP. LXXVI

Howe syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Castell.

of Fraunce went to counsayle togyder, to se how they sholde maynteyne theyr warre, for they knewe well theyr enemyes rode abrode and kepte the feldes; wherfore they thought to provyde some remedy to the honoure of the kynge and profyte of the royalme of Castell. So there were many matters debated in this counsayle, and then all theyr people were nombred, and it was sayd that of the royalme selfe they myght well brynge togyder a xxx. M. horses, and the men well armed, after the usage of Castell, with dartes and javelyns, and foote men castynge stones out of slynges other xxx. M. The Frensshe knyghtes amonge themselfe consydred al this, and sayd one to another, This is a grete nombre of people and they were good men of warre, but they be lytel worth, for we have sene suche slowfulnes in them, that we have no grete trust to them, as it appered as well in the batayle of Marres,[1] where the prynce of Wales had the vyctory, as at the batayle of Juberoth, where as the Portyngales and Gascoynes were, and alwaye the Spanyardes were dyscomfyted. Then the erle of Lune, in susteynynge the Castellyans and in exscusynge of them sayd, Syrs, as to the batayle of Marres, I shall answere you; it is of trouthe that syr Bertram of Clesquy and a grete nombre of knyghtes of Fraunce were there and fought valyauntly, for they were all taken or slayne; but ye have herde, and ye know well, that agaynst them was the floure of all the chyvalry of the worlde, bothe in wysdome, valyauntnes, and prowes, the whiche is not nowe with the duke of Lancastre; the prynce at the batayle of Marres had x. M. speres and vi. M. archers; they were suche men that there were a iii. M. of them every man worth a Rowlande or an Olyvere. But the duke of Lancastre hathe none suche; he passeth not a xii. or a xv. C. speres and a iiii. M. archers, and we be a vi. M. speres; nor we shall not fyght agaynst Rowlande nor Olyver. Syr John Chandos, syr Thomas Felton, syr Olyver Clysson, syr Hughe Caurel, syr Rycharde Pountchardon, syr Garsis, the lorde of Ryeux, and syr Rycharde Dangle: I coulde name v. C. suche that were there; they be deed; we shall fynde none suche nowe; wherfore the matter is not soo peryllous as it was in tyme past, for yf ye wyll byleve me, we shall go fyght with them and passe the ryver of Derne, it shall tourne

[1] *Najera.*

CAP. LXXVI

Howe syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Castell.

us to grete valyauntnes. The counsayle that the erle of Lune dyd gyve was wel herde, and there were many that helde the same oppynyon. Then syr Olyver of Clysquy sayd, Syr erle of Lune, we knowe well all that ye have sayd procedeth of your grete wysdome and valyauntnes; but, syr, take it so that we goo and fyght with the duke of Lancastre; yf that were all, we sholde do well ynoughe; but, syr, we leve the grettest matter behynde, as the kynge of Portyngale and his puyssaunce, for, as we be enfourmed, they be xxv. C. speres and xxx. M. of other men of war: for on the trust of the kynge of Portyngale the duke of Lancastre is entred into Galyce, and they have made a grete alyaunce togyder, for the kynge hath maryed the dukes doughter. Nowe, syr, what saye you to this. In the name of God, sayd the erle of Lune, ye knyghtes of Fraunce are suffycyent to fyght with the duke of Lancastre; and the kynge of Castell and the Castellyans, who be as they say xx. M. horse and xxx. M. a foote, they may fyght with the kynge of Portyngale; I dare well abyde the adventure amonge them. When the Frensshmen sawe how the erle of Lune layde it so sore to theyr charge, sayd, Syr, ye be in the ryght and we be in the wronge; for, syr, we sholde have sayd as ye do; and, syr, let it soo be and you wyll; there is none of us shall saye agaynst your wyll. Syrs, sayd the kynge, I requyre you all counsayle me truely, and not in hast nor by pryde, but by sad advyse and humylyte, and then let us take the best waye: I wyll not conclude to accepte this journey; I wyl we mete agayne togyder to morowe in this same chambre; and ye, syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac, who are sente hyder into this countrey by the Frensshe kynge and by the duke of Borbon, I requyre you go togyder and take advyse, and counsayle me to that shall be thought moost best and honourable to me and to my royalme, for it shall lye in you whether we shall fyght with our enemyes or not. They made theyr reverence, and sayd they wolde obey his commaundement, and so departed.

Thus every man that daye departed to theyr lodgynges, and the Frensshmen as they were togyder had grete communycacyon. Some sayd, We cannot honourably fyght with our enemyes tyll the duke of Borbon, our soverayne capy-

tayne, be come; we can not tell yf he wolde fyght with them or not. Be it soo that we fyght with them and have the vyctory, the duke of Borbon wyll be sore dyspleased with us, and specyally with us that be the Frensshe capytaynes: and yf the fortune sholde fall agaynst us, we sholde then bothe lose our bodyes and the royalme. For yf we were overthrowen, there were no recovery in the Castellyans, but that the kynge of Castell were lyke to lese all his royalme for this tyme, and we sholde bere more fawte then ony other, for it sholde be layde howe we had caused the batayle and gave no good counsayle. Nor also we be in noo suretye yf the royalme be all sure on the kynges partye or not, or whether they have covertly sente for the duke of Lancastre and his wyfe or not, who is reputed for heyre of Castell, for she was doughter to kynge Don Peter; all the worlde knoweth that; so that when the people se the duke and his wyfe with the Englysshmen in the felde demaundynge the crowne of Castell, affyrmynge how they have ryght therto, for kynge John, who was kynge as then, was sone to a bastarde, then peradventure they may tourne to theyr parte, as they dyd in the grete batayle of Maures, and soo sholde we abyde deed in the felde. So we thinke there is double peryll bothe to the kynge and to us; but suche folysshe people gyve the kynge counsayle to batayle, and are herde before them that sholde speke. Well, syrs, sayd syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac, to morowe shall be knowen every mannes opynyon. So that day and nyght the Frensshmen were at dyvers communycacyons, and in lyke wyse soo were the Spanyardes. Suche as loved the kynge wolde not counsayle hym to fyght, for dyvers reasons; one was, if he fought and lost the batayle, he lost his royalme without recovery. The kynge hymselfe thought it not good to fyght; he fered sore the fortune of the warre; nor also he knewe not every mannes mynde, who loved hym and who dyd not. Thus the matter rested tyll the nexte daye; then every man retourned to the palays, and the kynge entred into counsayle.

In this counsayle were many opynyons, for every man to his power wolde truely counsayle the kynge. Dyvers counsayled hym that he sholde not enclyne hastely to batayle,

CAP. LXXVI

Howe syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Castell.

CAP. LXXVI puttynge hym in remembraunce of the harde journey that he had at Juberoth, where as the kynge of Portyngale dyscomfyted hym, wherby he had suche domage, that yf suche another chaunce sholde fall, he sholde lese his royalme for ever. When the kynge had demaunded every man, and herde all theyr oppynyons, then he sayd to syr Wyllyam of Lygnacke and to syr Gaultyer of Passac: Syrs, let me here your opynyons, for by you all shal be ordeyned, seynge ye be the chefe capytaynes of the Frensshemen sente hyder by the Frensshe kynge and his counsayle. These ii. knyghtes regarded eche other, and syr Wyllyam sayd to syr Gaultyer, Syr, speke you: and he answered and sayd, Nay I wyll not; speke you, ye have used armes more then I have done. Then syr Wyllyam advysed hymselfe, and sayd, Syr, and it lyke your grace, me thynke ye ought gretely to thanke the noble chyvalry of Fraunce, who are come hyder to serve you soo farre of; and, syr, it hathe shewed well howe they have none affeccyon nor wyll to be closed in ony cyte or towne, castell, or garyson, that ye have; but they are and have ben desyrous to kepe the feldes, and to fynde out, and to fyght with your enemyes, the whiche thynge nowe, savynge your grace, can not be suffred for dyvers reasons. The pryncypall reason is, syr, we tary for the duke of Borbon, who is our soverayne capytayne, who wyll be here shortely, and he shall gretely enforce us with newe fresshe men; there be many nowe here with us that were never in this countrey before; it were necessary that they lerned the maner of this countrey a two or a thre monethes, for it proveth but seldome well to hastely to fyght with oure enemyes. But lette us make wyse warre by garysons a two or a thre monethes, and let the Englysshemen and Portyngales ryde abrode in Galyce where they lyst; yf they conquere certayne townes, it is but a small matter; as soone as they be departed out of the countrey, they wyll be soone wonne agayne. Also, syr, there is one poynte, in armes lyeth many adventures; syr, let them ryde abrode in the countrey, whiche is hoote and of a stronge ayre; they maye take suche travayle and sykenes, that they maye happen repente them that they have come soo forwarde, for they shall not fynde the ayre soo attemperate there as it is in

Howe syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Castell.

CAP. LXXVI

Howe syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Castell.

Englande or in Fraunce, nor the wynes so pleasaunt: for in Galyce the ryvers be troublous and coolde, bycause of the snowes that dyscende downe frome the mountaynes, wherby they and theyr horses, after theyr travayle all the daye in the hote sone, shall be morfoundred or they be ware; they be not made of stele nor yet of yron, but at lengthe they shall not endure the hote countrey of Castell; they be men as we be. Thus I thynke we can not better bete them, but to let them go where they lyst, they shall fynde nothynge in the playne countreys, nor no delectable places to refresshe them, for, as I understande, all the open countrey is allredy dystroyed with our owne men, and I alowe well that advyse; for yf it were to doo, I wolde counsayle the same. Syrs, yf there be ony here can speke better, let hym speke, we shall be glad to here hym; and this syr Gaultyer and I desyre you all thus to doo. Then they all answered with one voyce, Lette this advyse be admytted; we can consyder no better nor more profytable way for the kynge of Castel and his royalme.

So it was there they concluded that they sholde make no countenaunce of warre tyll the duke of Borbon and all theyr provysyons were come; but that theyr men of warre to be put into dyvers garysons on the fronters of theyr countrey, and suffre the Englysshmen and Portyngales to go in and out into the royalme of Castell at theyr pleasure, sayenge howe they coulde not bere awaye the countrey with them whensoever they retourned. Thus ended the counsayle. The kynge of Castel had the same daye all them at dyner with hym in his palays at Burgus in Spayne, ryght plentyfull after the usage of Spayne. By the nexte daye at none al the men of armes departed thyder as they were appoynted by theyr capytaynes; syr Olyver Clysquy, and the erle of Longuevyle,[1] with a thousande speres, wente to a stronge towne on the fronter of Galyce, called Vyllesaunte; and syr Raynolde and syr Trystram of Roye was sente to another garyson a x. legges fro the fronter of Galyce, called Agyllar[2] in the felde, with thre hundred speres; syr Peter of Bellysme, with two hundred speres, wente to Pouelles; the vycounte of Lune wente to the towne of Marolle; syr John of Barres, with thre hundred speres, was sente to the castell

[1] *Olivier de Claiequin, conte de Longueville.*

[2] *Aguilar de Campos.*

CAP. LXXVI of Noya within Galyce; syr John of Castell Morant and syr Trystram of Jayell and dyvers other were sente to the cyte of Palance; and the vycount of Belyer wente to the towne of Rybede, and with hym syr John of Braquen and syr Robert of Braquen.

Howe syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac came to the ayde of kynge Johan of Castell.

Thus these men of armes were devyded, and syr Olyver of Clysquy was made theyr constable; and syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac abode styl with the kynge as Burgus. In this case standynge was the busynes of Castell, abydynge the comynge of the duke of Borbon, who was styll in Fraunce makynge provysyon for his journey.

Nowe we wyll suffre in rest a season the armye of Castell and of the duke of Lancastre, and also of the kynge of Portyngale, and when the tyme requyreth we shal retourne therto agayne. And nowe lette us speke of the adventures that fell in the same season in Fraunce and in Englande, the whiche were troublous and peryllous for bothe royalmes, and sore dyspleasaunt unto the kynges and to bothe theyr counsayles.

CAP. LXXVII

How a grete myscheffe fell in Englande bytwene the gentyll men and comons, for accompte of suche money as hadde ben reysed of the comons.

HERE before ye have herde howe the Frensshe armye, with shyppes on the se that were assembled at Sluse to have gone into Englande was dasshed and broken up. Yet, to shewe courage and desyre to goo another season into Englande, and that it sholde not be sayd that the Frensshemen were recreaunt to have made that voyage, therfore it was ordeyned, that incontynent at the entre of May, and that the see myght be fayre and pleasaunt, the constable of Fraunce sholde make a journey into Englande with iiii. M. men of armes and ii. M. crosse bowes, and they sholde all assemble togyder at a cyte agaynst the fronter of Cornewall, called Lentrygnyer, and ther to be made all theyr provysyon. And it was ordeyned

CAP. LXXVII

How a grete mysscheffe fell in Englande bytwene the gentyll men and comons.

every man to have a horse, the more easely to ryde abrode in Englande: for it was thought without horse they coulde make noo warre that sholde avayle them. Soo there was assembled at this haven of Lentygnyer a goodly apparell of shyppes, barkes, balengers,[1] and galeys, wel fournysshed with wynes, salte flesshe, and bysquet, and other thynges so largely, that it was suffycyent for them to lyve by a foure or fyve monethes, without takynge or byenge of ony thynge in the countrey; for the constable and his company knewe well that as soone as the Englysshemen knewe of suche a company of men of warre comynge on them, they wolde dystroye theyr owne goodes abrode in the playne countrey, rather than we sholde have ony ease therof; therfore the constable made his provysyon redy on that syde the see. Also there was ordeyned another flete of shyppes at the haven of Harflewe: for the lorde of Coucy, the lorde of saynt Poule and the admyrall of Fraunce sholde there take shyppynge, with two thousande speres, in lykewyse to goo into Englande: and as the brute wente, all this was done to drawe backe agayne the duke of Lancastre and the duches out of Castell. The same season the duke of Borbon was at Parys, and thought surely that the duke of Lancastre sholde retourne home agayne into Englande; wherfore he thought he sholde have no thynge to doo to go into Castell, nor to travayle his body so farre forthe. So it was determyned that in the constables armye sholde goo Bretons, Angevyns, Poyctevyns, Manceaus, and Xayngtons, with knyghtes and squyers of the lowe marches; and with the lorde of saynt Poule and with the lorde of Coucy sholde go Frensshmen, Normans, and Pycardes; and with the duke of Borbon sholde goo two thousande speres of Berrey, Auvernake, of Lymosyn, Borgoyne, and of the Bace Marches. Thus in that season the matters were concluded in Fraunce, and every man knewe what he sholde do, outher to go into Englande or into Castell.

And true it was the royalme of Englande the same tyme was in grete peryll, and in a gretter jeoperdye then when the vyllaynes of Essex and Kent rebelled agaynst the kynge and the nobles of the royalme, at whiche tyme they came unto London; I shall shewe you the reason why: at that

[1] *Bagengers* P.

CAP. LXXVII

How a grete mysscheffe fell in Englande bytwene the gentyll men and comons.

season all the noble men of the royalme toke one parte togyder with the kynge agaynst the comons, but nowe it is not soo; the nobles vary amonge themselfe. The kynge is agaynst his owne uncles, the duke of Yorke and the duke of Glocestre, and they were agaynst hym; and all this varyaunce dyd ryse by the meanes of the duke of Irelande, who bare all the chefe rule aboute the kynge. And the comons of Englande in dyvers cytees knewe well of this dyscorde; they that were sage men reputed it for a grete evyl, and fered that moche trouble sholde growe therby. But suche as were lyght persones made noo rekenynge therof, some sayenge that it was for envye that the kynges uncles hadde agaynst the kynge theyr nephewe, and bycause they sawe howe the crowne of Englande began to growe farre of frome them; and some other sayd how the kynge was but yonge, and byleved yonge counsayle: and howe that it were better for hym to byleve hys uncles, who mente noo thynge to hym but al honoure and profyte, nor to the royalme of Englande, rather then to be ruled by the prowde duke of Irelande, who never sawe ony thynge perteynynge to honoure, nor never was in ony batayle. Thus every man dyffered from other in the royalme of Englande, whiche trybulacyons were well knowen in Fraunce; wherfore they made this grete provysyon to goo thyder with all theyr puyssaunce, thynkynge to doo a grete feate. On the other syde, the prelates of Englande were in hatred one with another, as the archebysshop of Cauntorbury, who was of the Nevelles blood, with the archebysshop of Yorke, and yet they were countreymen borne; but they hated mortally eche other, bycause the lorde Nevell hadde the rule and governaunce of Northumbrelande, and soo to the marches of Skotlande, above the erle of Northumbrelande and his chyldren, the lorde Henry and the lorde Raffe of Percy: whiche rule the lorde Nevelles broder had gotten hym, for he was one of the chefe aboute the kynge with the duke of Irelande.

CAP. LXXVIII

Of the grete dyscordes that were in Englande after the brekynge up of the Frensshe armye, and how the governours about the kynge were constrayned by the comons of the good townes to make accomptes of suche money as was come into theyr handes the season that they ruled.

As sone as the Englysshmen knewe that the voyage by the see that the Frensshmen sholde have made beynge at Sluse was dasshed and broken, then in Englande began dyvers murmuracyons in sundry places. And suche as loved evyll rule rather than good, sayd, Where be nowe these grete entrepryses and these valyaunt men of Englande that were in the dayes of kynge Edwarde the Thyrde, and with the Prynce his sone. We were wonte to go into Fraunce, and put backe our enemyes in suche maner that none durst make batayle with us; yf they dydde, they were soone dyscomfyted. O what a dede was that when the noble kynge Edwarde aryved in Normandy and in Constantyne, and passed thrugh the royalme of Fraunce, and what goodly entrepryse he acheved in his waye; and after at Cressy he dyscomfyted kynge Phylyp and all the puyssaunce of Fraunce, and or he retourned he wan the towne of Calays. But as nowe the knyghtes and men of warre in Englande doo none suche feates. Also the prynce of Wales, sone to this noble kynge, dyd he not take the Frensshe kynge John, and dyscomfyted his puyssaunce at Poycters with a smal nombre of people agaynste the people that kynge John hadde. In those dayes Englande was fered and doubted, and we were spoken of thrughe al the worlde for the floure of chyvalry; but as nowe no man speketh of us, for nowe there is noo warre made but at poore mennes purses: therto every man is enclyned; in Fraunce as nowe the kynge there is but a chylde, and yet he hath done more agaynst us then ony of his predecessours; and also he shewed grete courage to have come into Englande,

CAP. LXXVIII

Of the grete dyscordes that were in Englande after the brekynge up of the Frensshe armye.

the lette therof was not by hym, but by his men. The tyme hath ben sene that yf suche an apparell of shyppes had ben made at Sluse, they sholde have ben foughten withall in theyr owne haven: and nowe the noble men of Englande are joyfull, when they maye sytte at rest and suffre them in peas; but yet for all that, they suffre not poore men to be in rest, but put them to busynes to paye money. The tyme hath ben that grete conquestes have ben done in Fraunce without payenge of ony money; but suche ryches as hath ben gotten there it hath ben spred abrode in the royalme. Where is become the grete fynaunces and tayles that hath ben gadered in this royalme, with the kynges rentes and accostomed revenues; outher they have lost it or taken fro them: it is behovable that it be knowen howe the royalme of Englande is governed, and howe the kynge is ledde; it were not good that it sholde be longe or it were knowen, for this royalme of Englande is not soo ryche nor so puyssaunt to bere lyke charges as the royalme of Fraunce dothe. Also it appereth wel that we in this royalme of Englande are febled of wyttes and of grace. We were wonte to knowe every thynge that was done in Fraunce a thre or foure monethes or the case fell, wherby we myght convenyently make provysyon and resystence, but as nowe we knowe noo thynge. But the Frensshemen knoweth all our secretes and counsayles; we can not tell in whome is the fawte; it wyll be knowen upon a daye. There be some prevy traytours, and it were better it were knowen betymes then to late, for it maye be knowen soo late that it wyll be past remedy.

Thus dyversely men talked in Englande, as well knyghtes and squyers, as the comons, soo that the royalme laye in a harde case and grete peryll. And the grete assembly that the kyng, and his uncles, and his counsayle hadde made with grete expence in dyvers maners to resyst the Frensshe kynge, beynge at Sluse, redy to entre into Englande, suche knyghtes and squyers, and other, as were in a redynes, wolde as then be payde of theyr wages. And so for that entente there was a parlyamente somoned to be holden at London by the nobles, prelates, and comons of Englande, and pryncypally it was ordeyned that there sholde be reysed a grete tayle and

CAP. LXXVIII

Of the grete dyscordes that were in Englande after the brekynge up of the Frensshe armye.

subsydye thrughe out the royalme of Englande, the ryche to bere out the poore. This parlyament was removed to Westmynstre, and thyder came all suche as were sente for, and many moo, to here tydynges.

There was the kynge and his two uncles, Edmunde and Thomas, with many other nobles of the royalme. And amonge other thynges yt was sayd that in the kynges treasoure there was substaunce skante to maynteyne the kynges estate soberly, wherfore they of his counsayle sayd howe there must be levyed a subsydye thrughe out all the royalme of Englonde, yf suche costes and charges sholde be payde, as hathe ben done for the defence of the royalme of Englande agaynst the Frensshemen. To this agreed well they of the bysshopryche of Norwyche, and also the archebysshopryche of Cauntorbury, and the countye of Essex, the countye of Hampton, and Warwykeshyre, and the lande of the erle of Salysbury. They agreed soner then they of ferther countreys, as they of the north, and marches of Wales, and of Cornewall; al these rebelled and sayd, We have not sene none of our enemyes come into this countrey, why sholde we be greved and have done no fawte. Yes, yes, sayd some, let the bysshop of Yorke be spoken withall, and the kynges counsayle, and the duke of Irelande, who hathe lx. thousande frankes of the constable of Fraunce, for the redempcyon of Johan of Bretayne: this money ought to be tourned to the comon profyte of all Englande; ye, and speke with syr Symon Burle, syr Wyllyam Helmen,[1] syr Thomas Branbe,[2] syr Robert Tryvylyen, and syr Johan Beauchampe, who have governed the kynge and the royalme, yf they make a good accompte of that they have receyved, and delyver it, the comons shall sytte in rest, and every thynge payde as it ought to be.

[1] *Elmham.*
[2] *Thomas Trivet, Nicholas Brambre.*

When these wordes came abrode and to the herynge of the kynges uncles, they were ryght gladde therof, for that made well for them, for al those before named were agaynste them, nor they coulde bere noo rule in the courte for them; wherfore they ayded the people in theyr oppynyons, and sayd, These good men that thus speketh are well counsayled, in that they desyre to have accompte, and wyll not paye ony more money: for surely outher in the kynges treasure,

CAP. LXXVIII

Of the grete dyscordes that were in Englande after the brekynge up of the Frensshe armye.

or elles in theyr purses that governe hym, there must nedes be grete treasure. Thus by lytell and lytell multyplyed these wordes, and the people beganne to waxe bolde to deny to paye ony more money by reason that they sawe the kynges uncles of theyr accorde, and susteyned them.

And the archebysshop of Cauntorbury, the erle of Salysbury, the erle of Northumbrelande, and dyvers other lordes of Englande put of this taxe for that tyme, and deferred theyr counsayle to Myghelmasse after, at whiche tyme they promysed to retourne agayne. But the knyghtes and squyers, suche as had thought to have had money for the arrerages of theyr wages hadde noo thynge, wherfore they were in dyspleasure with the kynge and his counsayle: they were apeased as well as myght be, and every man departed. The kynge toke no leve of his uncles, nor they of hym.

Then the kynge was counsayled to drawe into the marches of Wales, and there to tary tyll he herde other tydynges; and soo he was contente to doo, and departed fro London without leve takynge of ony man, and toke with hym all his counsayle, excepte the archebysshop of Yorke, who wente backe into his owne countrey, whiche was happy for hym: for I thynke yf he hadde ben with the other, he sholde have ben served as they were, as ye shall here after. But it is requysyte that I speke as well of Fraunce as of Englande, for the matter requyreth it.

CAP. LXXIX

Howe the constable of Fraunce, and dyvers other lordes and squyers of the royalme apparelled grete provysyons to go into Englande to wynne townes and castelles.

AND when season of somer was come, and the joly moneth of Maye, in the yere of our Lorde God M.CCC. foure score and vii., in the same season that the duke of Lancastre was in Galyce, and conquered there, and that the kynge of Portyngale with grete puyssaunce rode abrode in Castell without ony withstandynge,

CAP. LXXIX

Howe the constable of Fraunce apparelled grete provysyons to go into Englande.

thenne was it ordeyned in Fraunce, as ye have herde before, howe the constable of Fraunce with one army, and the erle of saynt Poule, the lorde of Coucy, and syr Johan of Vyen, with another armye, the one at Lentrygnyer, in Bretayne, and the other at Harflewe, in Normandy, sholde the same season make a voyage into Englande with a vi. thousande men of armes, and two thousande crosse bowes, and vi. thousande other men of warre. And it was ordeyned that none sholde passe the see to goo into Englande, without he were well armed, and provysyon of vytayles for the space of thre monethes, with other provysyon of hay and ootes for theyr horses: and a daye was prefyxed amonge the capytaynes when they sholde departe, and were determyned to lande in Englande in two havens, at Dover, and at Orwell. Thus the daye approched of theyr departure. At Lentrygnyer provysyon was made and put into the shyppes for them that sholde passe from thens, and in lyke wyse was done at Harflewe; and every man of war was payde theyr wages for xv. dayes. This journey was soo farre forwarde, that it was thought it coulde not have ben broken. Nor also it brake not by noo cause of the capytaynes that were ordeyned to goo in that voyage, but it brake by another incydent, and by a mervayllous matter that fell in Bretayne, wherwith the Frensshe kynge and his counsayle were soore dyspleased, but they coulde not amende it, wherfore it behoved them wysely to dyssymule the matter, for it was no tyme then to remedy it. Also other tydynges came unto the Frensshe kynge out of the partyes of Almayne, as I shall shewe you hereafter when tyme and place shall requyre it. But fyrst we wyll speke of the matters of Bretayne before them of Almayne, for they of Bretayne fell fyrste, and were worste reputed, thoughe other cost more.

Yf I sholde saye that suche matters fell in that season and not open clerely the mater, whiche was grete, peryllous, and horryble, it myght be a cronycle, but noo hystory: I myght let it overpasse yf I lyst, but I wyll not doo soo: I shall declare the case syth God hathe gyven me the knowledge therof, and tyme and leysure to cronycle the matter at lengthe.

Ye have herde here before in dyvers places in this hystory

CAP. LXXIX howe syr John of Mountforde, named duke of Bretayne, and surely so he was by conquest and not by ryght lyne; howbeit, alwayes he maynteyned the warre and oppynyon of the kynge of Englande, and of his chyldren, agaynst the Frensshe kynge; also he had good cause soo to doo on his partye, for without the ayde of Englande he hadde not atteyned as he dyd, nother before Alroy, nor in other places. Also ye have herde here before howe the duke of Bretayne coulde not have his entente of all the nobles of his countrey, nor of all the good townes, specyally of syr Bertram of Clesquy, as longe as he lyved, nor of syr Olyver of Clysson, constable of Fraunce, nor of the lordes de la Vale, and of Beawmanoyre, nor the lorde of Rase, of Dygnant, the vycount of Rohan, nor of the lorde of Rochforde; for where as these lordes enclyned, nyghe all Bretayne folowed. They were contente to take parte with theyr lorde the duke agaynst all maner of men, excepte agaynst the crowne of Fraunce. And surely I can not se nor ymagyne by what waye, but that the Bretons pryncypally regarded ever the honoure of Fraunce, it maye well appere by that that is wrytten here before in this hystory. I saye not this by noo corrupcyon nor favoure that I have to the erle Guy of Bloys, who hath ben good lorde unto me, and I have hadde moche profyte by hym, who was nephewe and nexte to the erle Loys of Bloys, broder germayne to saynt Charles of Bloys, and as longe as he lyved he was duke of Bretayne. Truely I saye not this for no cause but all onely to declare the trouthe; and also the gentyll prynce and erle that hath caused me to wryte this story, wolde in no wyse that I sholde swarve from the trouth.

Howe the constable of Fraunce apparelled grete provysyons to go into Englande

Nowe to retourne to our purpose: ye knowe well as longe as duke Johan of Bretayne lyved, he coulde never attayne to have all his men in every poynte to agree to his oppynyons: and he sore fered them lest at the last they sholde have taken hym and put hym in pryson in Fraunce. Wherfore he departed out of Bretayne, and wente into Englande, with all his householde, and the lady his wyfe Jahan of Holande, doughter somtyme of the good knyght syr Thomas Holande; and thus a season he became servaunt to kynge Rycharde of Englande. And afterwarde he wente into

CAP. LXXIX

Howe the constable of Fraunce apparelled grete provysyons to go into Englande.

Flaunders to the erle of Bloys,[1] who was his cosyn germayne, and there taryed more then a yere and an halfe. Fynally they of his owne countrey sente for hym, and soo by good accorde thyder he wente. And when he came into his countrey there were certayne townes closed styl agaynst hym and rebelled, and specyally the cyte of Nauntes; but all his lordes, knyghtes, and prelates, were all of his accorde, excepte the lordes before rehersed; and to have the sygnory of them, and to gete the favoure and good wyll of the good townes and cytyes, and to put the Frensshe kynge in more fere, bycause he wolde overpresse them with taxes and subsydyes, as they dyd in Fraunce and in Pycardye, whiche they wolde not suffre in Bretayne, therfore he sente unto the kynge of Englande for socoure and ayde of men of warre and archers, promysynge that yf the kynge of Englande wolde come intoo Bretayne, or elles one of his uncles, with a grete puyssaunce of men of armes and of archers, howe that his countrey of Bretayne sholde be opened redy to receyve hym and his company.

[1] *devers le conte Loys*, i.e. *Louis de Male, Count of Flanders.*

The kynge of Englande and his counsayle were gladde of those tydynges, and thought them good, and concluded to sende thyder; then provysyon was made, and thyder was sente the erle of Buckyngham, with iiii. M. men of armes, and viii. M. archers, who aryved at Calays, and passed throughe the royalme of Fraunce, without ony resystence, as it hathe ben shewed here before, demaundynge noo thynge but batayle; and so they came into Bretayne, trustynge to have founde the countrey redy open for them to receyve and to refresshe them, for surely they had made a longe voyage; howbeit, they founde it contrary dysposed, for the duke of Bretayne was soo ledde by his men, and so wysely entreated, that they made a peas bytwene hym and the yonge Charles, kynge as then in Fraunce, but with kynge Charles his fader he coulde never have peas, he hated hym soo sore. The duke of Borgoyne, who was one of the chefe governours in the royalme of Fraunce, ayded gretely to make this peas: he was so desyred by the lady his wyfe, bycause the duke of Bretayne was nere of theyr lygnage. Soo he was fayne to breke all his promyses with the Englysshmen, for he coulde not be suffred to accomplysshe his

CAP. LXXIX covenaunt, for the Bretons wolde not consent to yelde them to the kynge of Englande to make warre agaynst Fraunce; they sayd they were never of that oppynyon nor never wolde be. So that it behoved the Englysshmen to take theyr lodgynges in the marches of Wannes, where they suffered as moche poverte as ever dyd men for one tyme, and specyally theyr horses dyed for hungre and poverte; and soo in the tyme of somer they departed out of Bretayne, as evyl contente with the duke of Bretayne as myght be, and not without a cause, and specyally the erle of Buckyngham, and the barons of Englande that were in his company. And when they were retourned into Englande, they made grete complayntes to the kynge, and to the duke of Lancastre, and his counsayle. And then it was devysed and ordeyned that John of Bretayne sholde be delyvered, and to brynge hym with puyssaunce into Bretayne, to make warre there agaynst the duke of Bretayne; and the Englysshemen sayd, howe syr John of Mountforde knewe well howe they had put hym in possessyon of the sygnory of Bretayne: For without us he hadde never come therto, and nowe to play us this tourne to cause us to travayle our bodyes, and to spende the kynges treasoure, it behoveth us to shewe hym his fawtes; and we can not better be revenged then to delyver his adversary and to brynge hym into Bretayne: for all the countrey wyll delyver hym townes, cytees, and fortresses, and put the other duke clene out, that thus hathe mocked and dysceyved us.

Howe the constable of Fraunce apparelled grete provysyons to go into Englande.

Thus the Englysshe counsayle were all of one accorde; and then John of Bretayne was brought into the kynges presence, and there it was shewed hym howe they wolde make hym duke of Bretayne, and recover for hym all his herytage of Bretayne, and he sholde have to his wyfe the lady Phylyp of Lancastre, so that he wolde holde the duchy of Bretayne in fayth and homage of the kynge of Englande: the whiche poynte he utterly refused. But to take the dukes doughter in maryage he was contente, but to swere to be agaynst the crowne of Fraunce in noo wyse he wolde consente, but rather to abyde in pryson all his lyfe.

When the kynge and his counsayle sawe that, they withdrewe the grace that they hadde thought to have shewed to

hym, and thenne he was delyvered into the kepynge of syr Johan Dambretycourte, as ye have herde before. I have made as nowe relacyon of all these matters, bycause of the incydentes that folowed after, and appered by the duke of Bretayne. For the duke knewe well howe he was gretely out of the favoure of the noblemen of the royalme of Englande, and also of the comons there, and he ymagened that the hatred that they bare to hym was for the voyage that the erle of Buckyngham hadde made thrughe Fraunce to come into Bretayne, wenynge to have founde the duke there, and countrey open agaynst them, as the duke of Bretayne hadde promysed, whiche the Englysshemen founde contrary. Also he sawe well howe the kynge of Englande hadde not wryten unto hym soo amyably as he hadde done often tymes before, and specyally as he hadde done before the erle of Buckynghams voyage. And also he doubted that the kynge of Englande sholde delyver Johan of Bretayne, to the entente to make hym warre.

CAP. LXXIX

Howe the constable of Fraunce apparelled grete provysyons to go into Englande.

Thenne the duke cast his ymagynacyon how he myght fynde remedy in this matter, and to brynge it into a good poynte, and to doo his entente soo secretly that the Englysshemen sholde be well content and pleased with hym: for he knewe well the man in the worlde whome the Englysshmen hated moost was syr Olyver of Clysson, constable of Fraunce. For indede syr Olyver of Clysson ever studyed nyght and daye howe he myght doo dyspleasure to the Englysshemen. And the duke knewe ryght well of the armye that was made to goo into Englande, bothe at Harflewe and at Lentrygnyer. Then he sayd unto hymselfe, to the entente to please the Englysshemen, and to shewe that he dyd not set moche by the Frensshemen, he founde the meanes to breke that voyage; not in commaundynge his men of Bretayne on payne of lesynge of theyr herytage not to go into Englande, nor to ayde the Frensshe partye; this he dyd not, but he shewed outwardly that the warre was for hym,[1] but he dyd his entrepryse more covertly. He caste in his ymagynacyon that he myght not doo more honourably, nor more to his profyte, then to take the constable of Fraunce prysoner, or elles to slee hym: therby he knewe well he sholde please the Englysshemen, for they hated

[1] *Cela ne feroit-il pas; car il monstreroit trop clèrement que la guerre seroit sienne.*

CAP. LXXIX

Howe the constable of Fraunce apparelled grete provysyons to go into Englande.

hym: for he thought yf he were out of the waye, he cared not for the resydue of his lygnage, for he knewe well they were not able to make hym warre, for the constable hadde but two doughters, the one was maryed unto John of Bretayne, and the other doughter was maryed unto the erle of Rohans sone: he thought to withstande them wel ynoughe and all his lygnage; for yf he hadde slayne hym, he sayd he hadde slayne but a baron, and that there were none that wolde make hym ony warre for his sake.

CAP. LXXX

Howe the duke of Bretayne sente for all his lordes and knyghtes to come to counsayle unto Wannes, and after counsayle he desyred the constable to goo and se his castell of Ermyne: and howe he toke hym there prysoner, and the lorde of Beaumanoyre with hym.

ON this foresayd ymagynacyon the duke of Bretayne rested. And to come to his entente he somoned his counsayle to come to Wannes,[1] and desyred all the lordes and knyghtes of Bretayne effectuously for to come thyder, and he dyd sende out his letters unto them, and specyally he requyred syr Olyvere of Clysson, constable of Fraunce, that he sholde not fayle but for to be there, sayenge, howe he wolde gladlyer se hym then ony other. The constable wolde not exscuse hymselfe, bycause the duke of Bretayne was his naturall lorde, and was gladde to have his good wyll; and soo he came to Wannes, and soo dydde a grete nombre of other lordes of Bretayne.

[1] *Vannes.*

This counsayle was longe, and many matters debated therin, touchynge the duke and his countrey, without ony worde spekynge of the voyage that they were in purpose to make into Englande; the duke dyssymuled the matter. This counsayle was in the cyte of Wannes, in a castell called the Mote.

The duke made all the lordes a grete dyner, and fedde

CAP. LXXX

Howe the duke of Bretayne sente for all his lordes and knyghtes to come to counsayle unto Wannes.

them with fayre lovynge wordes tyll it was nere nyght, and then they retourned to theyr lodgynges into the subbarbes withoute the cyte. And the constable of Fraunce, to please the knyghtes and squyers of Bretayne, he desyred them all the nexte daye to dyne with hym. Some dyd soo, and some departed to theyr owne howses to take leve of theyr wyves and parentes; for the constable was purposed as soone as he departed thens strayght to goo unto his navye at Lentrygnyer; the duke of Bretayne knewe it ryght well, but spake noo worde therof, makynge semblaunte as thoughe he knewe noo thynge. Soo this dyner ended, where as were the moost parte of the barons of Bretayne; and sodaynly unto them came the duke of Bretayne ryght amorously by semynge, but he thought otherwyse in his harte; none knewe therof but suche as he hadde dyscovered his mynde unto. As soone as he entred into the constables lodgynge, some sayd, Beholde here cometh the duke: then every man rose, as reason was, and swetely receyved hym, as they ought for to doo theyr lorde, and he delte ryght gentylly, and he sate downe amonge them, and ete and dranke, and kepte good company, and shewed them more tokens of love then ever he dydde before. And he sayd unto them, Fayre lordes, my lovers and frendes, God sende you well to goo and well to come agayne, and sende you joye, and that you maye doo suche dedes of armes as maye please you, and that it maye be honourable unto you all. And when they herde these swete wordes of the duke, they all answered and sayd, Syr, we thanke you, and God rewarde you of your grete kyndnesse, that it pleaseth you to come and se us at our departynge.

This same season the duke of Bretayne was makynge of a castell nere to Wannes, called the castell of Ermyne, the whiche as then was nere furnysshed; and to the entente to attrappe the constable, there he sayd unto hym, and unto the lorde de la Vale, and to the lorde of Beawmanoyre, and to other lordes that were there, Syrs, I requyre you or ye departe to come and se my newe castell of Armyne: ye shall se howe I have devysed it, and also howe I purpose for to doo.

They all agreed unto hym, bycause they sawe hym come

CAP. LXXX

Howe the duke of Bretayne sente for all his lordes and knyghtes to come to counsayle unto Wannes.

soo lovyngly amonge them, for they thought none evyll. And soo the moost parte of them mounted on theyr horses, and rode forth with the duke to the castel of Armyne: then the duke, the constable, the lorde de la Vale, and the lorde of Beawmanoyre, and dyvers other lordes and knyghtes alyghted of theyr horses and entred into the castell, and the duke ledde the constable by the hande fro chambre to chambre, and into every house of offyce, and made them drynke in the seller. Then the duke brought them to the chefe towre, and at the dore therof he sayd to the constable: Syr Olyvere, I knowe noo man on this syde the see that knoweth more in buyldynge then ye doo: wherfore I praye you mounte up the stayres and beholde the buyldynge of the towre; yf it be well I am contente, and yf ony thynge be amysse, yt shall be refourmed after your devyse. The constable thynkynge none evyll, sayd, Syr, with ryght a good wyl: please it you to goo before and I shall folowe you. Naye syr, sayd the duke, goo your waye up alone, and in the meane tyme I wyll talke with the lorde de la Vale. The constable wente up the stayres, and when he was above and paste the fyrste stage, there were men in a chambre layde in a busshment, and they opened the dore, and some wente downe and dyd shote the dore bynethe, and the other wente up all armed to the constable; there they toke and ledde hym into a chambre, and fetered hym with iii. boltes of yron, and sayd to hym, Syr, pardon us, for we must nedes do that we do, we be thus commaunded by our lorde the duke of Bretayne. Yf the constable were abasshed at that tyme it was no mervayle.

The constable ought not to have grete mervayle of that chaunce, for after that the dyspleasure fell bytwene the duke and hym, for ony letters that the duke coulde wryte to hym, or for ony desyre or saufconduyte to come and goo saufely, yet for all that the constable wolde never come in the dukes presence, for he durste not trust hym. And nowe he is come to his mysfortune, for he founde the duke in grete dyspleasure with hym, and that was well shewed. And when the lorde de la Vale, beynge bynethe at the stayre foote, sawe the dore closed, his blood began to trymble, and had grete fere of his broder, and behelde the duke, who

waxed pale and grene as a lefe. Then he knewe that the matter wente amysse, and sayd, A, syr, for Goddes sake have mercy. What wyll you do. Take none evyll wyll agaynst the constable. Syr, sayd the duke, take ye your horse and departe, ye maye goo when ye wyll, I knowe well ynoughe what I have to do. Syr, sayd the lorde de la Vale, I wyll not departe hens without I have my broder the constable with me. With those wordes there came unto them the lorde of Beawmanoyre, whome the duke also hated, and he in lykewyse demaunded to have the constable. Then the duke drewe his dagger and came unto hym, and sayd, Beawmanoyre, wylte thou be in the same poynte as thy mayster is in. Syr, sayd he, I trust my mayster is in good case. Well, sayd the duke, I demaunde of the yf thou wylte be in lyke case. Ye syr, sayd he. Thenne the duke toke his dagger by the poynte, and sayd, Yf thou wylte be in lyke case, it behoveth the to put out one of thyne eyen. The lorde of Beawmanoyre sawe well the matter wente not well, and sawe the duke waxe pale for angre; then he kneled downe on his knee, and sayd, Syr, I repute soo grete noblenes in you that I trust in God and you that ye wyll doo us ryght: we be at your mercy, and we are come hyder at your request: we trust ye wyll not dyshonour yourselfe to accomplysshe ony evyll wyll that ye have to us, it sholde be a straunge novelte. Well, sayd the duke, come on thy waye, for thou shalte have noo more nor no lesse then he shall have: soo he was ledde into another chambre, and fetered also with thre payre of yrons. If he were abasshed he hadde a grete cause, for he perceyved well the duke loved hym but lytell, nor the constable also, but then he had no remedy.

CAP. LXXX

Howe the duke of Bretayne sente for all his lordes and knyghtes to come to counsayle unto Wannes.

Anone tydynges spredde over the castell, and also the towne, howe that the constable of Fraunce, and the lorde of Beawmanoyre, and also the lorde de la Vale, were taken prysoners, and howe the lorde de la Vale myght departe when he wolde, for the duke demaunded nothynge of hym; wherof the people hadde grete mervayle, and also grete cause why: for every man sayd howe the duke wolde put them bothe to dethe, he hated them so mortally. The duke was gretely blamed of all knyghtes and squyers that herde therof, and they sayd there was never a gretter dyffamacyon

CAP. LXXX

Howe the duke of Bretayne sente for all his lordes and knyghtes to come to counsayle unto Wannes.

on ony prynce, then was on the duke of Bretayne, seynge that he had desyred the constable to dyne with hym and to se his house, and to make hym good chere, and soo to take hym prysoner; they sayd they never herde of case lyke, wherfore he was infamed, and never man more dyshonoured, nor therby noo man sholde trust in ony prynce, syth the duke had dysceyved these noblemen. What wyll the Frensshe kynge say when he knoweth this, for by this his voyage into Englande is broken? There was never soo grete a shame ymagyned. But nowe the duke sheweth what laye in his harte. We trowe there was never sene in Bretayne case lyke, nor in none other place; yf a poore knyght had done suche a dede he were dyshonoured for ever; in whom sholde a man trust but in his lorde, and that lorde sholde maynteyne hym in his ryght, and doo hym justyce: who shall make correccyon of this dede; none but the Frensshe kynge. Nowe the duke sheweth playnly howe he is on the Englysshe parte, and wyll susteyne and holde with the oppynyon of the kynge of Englande, syth he hath thus broken the voyage by the see that sholde have gone into Englande. What shall become nowe of the knyghtes and squyers of Bretayne when they shall here these tydynges; nothynge, but incontynent come fro theyr houses, and lay syege to the castell of Armyne, and close the duke within, and there tary tyll they have taken hym outher deed or quycke, and lede hym lyke a false prynce to the Frensshe kynge. Thus the knyghtes and squyers aboute the marches of Wannes spake and comoned togyder, and suche as were come thyder to that counsayle with the sayd lordes; and they were in grete doubte that the duke wolde put them to dethe. Then some other sayd, As for the lorde de la Vale is in no jeopardy, he is soo wyse that he wyll tempre the duke in all his busynes. And truely so he dyd, for and he had not ben, the constable had ben deed the fyrst nyght if he had had a M. lyves.

It ought to be byleved that syr Olyver of Clysson was not at his ease when he saw hymselfe soo taken and attrapped, and fetered and kepte with xxx. persones, and hadde noo comforte by them, for they knewe not the wyll of theyr lorde, soo that he rekened hymselfe but as a deed man, and

also he hadde noo hope to lyve tyll the nexte daye. And surely he was in grete daungere, for iii. tymes he was unfetered and brought to have ben beheded, or elles drowned; and surely so he had ben yf the lorde de la Vale had not ben; but when this lorde de la Vale herde the dukes strayte commaundement to put hym to dethe, he kneled downe before hym, lyftynge up his handes sore wepynge, and sayd, Syr, for Goddes sake take mercy: advyse you, shewe not your cruelte agaynst the constable, he hath deserved no dethe; syr, of your grace that it may please you to shewe me the cause of your dyspleasure agaynst hym; and syr, I swere unto you ony trespace that he hath done, he shall make you suche amendes with his body and goodes, or elles I for hym, as ye yourselfe shall demaunde or judge; syr, remembre you howe in your yongth ye ii. were companyons togyder, and brought up bothe in one house with the duke of Lancastre, who was soo gentyll a prynce that there was none lyke hym; also syr, remembre howe before his peas was made with the Frensshe kynge alwayes he truely served you; he ayded you to recover your herytage, ye have alwayes founde in hym good comforte and counsayle: yf ye be now moved or enfourmed agaynste hym otherwyse then reason sholde requyre, yet he hathe not deserved dethe. Syr de la Vale, sayd the duke, let me have my wyll: for Olyver of Clysson hath soo often tymes dyspleased me, and nowe is the houre come that I maye shewe hym my dyspleasure: wherfore departe you hens and let me shewe my cruelte, for I wyll he shall dye. A, syr, sayd the lorde de la Vale, refrayne your evyll wyll, and moderate your courage, and regarde to reason, for yf ye put hym to deth there was never prynce soo dyshonoured as ye shall be; there shall not be in Bretayne, knyght nor squyer, cyte nor castell, nor good towne, nor noo man but he shall hate you to the dethe, and doo that they can to dysenheryte you; nor the kynge of Englande, nor his counsayle, shall gyve you no thanke therfore. Syr, wyl you lese yourselfe for the dethe of one man; syr, tourne your ymagynacyon, for this thought is noo thynge worth but dyshonourable, that ye sholde cause suche an honourable knyght as syr Olyvere of Clysson is to dye, comynge unto you at your owne desyre. Surely syr this

CAP. LXXX

Howe the duke of Bretayne sente for all his lordes and knyghtes to come to counsayle unto Wannes.

CAP. LXXX

Howe the duke of Bretayne sente for all his lordes and knyghtes to come to counsayle unto Wannes.

dede sholde be treason and grete reproche bothe before God and the worlde, to desyre hym thus to dyner, and he comynge to you, and after that ye went to hym into the towne desyrynge hym to se your newe buyldynges, and he obeyed in every thynge to you, and dranke of your wyne: and is this the grete love that ye shewed hym, to put hym to dethe. There was never soo grete blame layde to ony lorde as shall be layde to you; all the worlde shal reproche you and hate you mortally, and be glad to make you warre. But syr, I shall shewe you what ye shall do syth ye soo sore hate hym; put hym to raunsome to a grete some of floreynes, this ye may well do; and if he holde outher towne or castell that sholde be yours, demaunde them agayne and ye shall have them; and loke, what covenaunt ye make with hym I shall become pledge therfore. And when the duke herde the lorde de la Vale speke so reasonably, and pressed so sore on hym, as in a maner all that nyght he wolde not departe from hym, then the duke studyed a lytell, and somwhat refrayned his evyll wyll, and at last spake and sayd, Syr de la Vale, ye be a good meane for hym; howbeit, I wyl ye knowe syr Olyver of Clysson is the man in the worlde that I moost hate, for and ye were not he sholde not skape without dethe this same nyght: your wordes hath saved hym; go to hym and demaunde yf he wyll paye to me a C. M. frankes incontynente, for I wyll nother have hym nor you to pledge, nor nothynge elles but the redy money: and besyde that to yelde to me iii. castelles and a towne, suche as I shall name, the castell of Breth,[1] the castel of Josselyn, the castel of Blancke,[2] and the towne of Jugon, and put me in possessyon of them or my deputyes: this done I shall delyver hym to you. This shal be done, sayd the lorde de la Vale; and syr, I thanke you that ye wyl thus do at my desyre; and syr, be you sure all that ye have demaunded shall be done, these castelles and towne delyvered, and these C. M. frankes payde or he departe.

[1] *Bourg.*
[2] *Blain.*

Then the lorde de la Vale was gretely rejoyced when he sawe the constable out of peryll of deth. Then the towre dore was opened, and the lorde de la Vale mounted up and came there as the constable was syttyng sore abasshed, for he loked for nothynge but for dethe. And when he sawe

the lorde de la Vale his herte revyved, and thought there was some tretye in hande. Then the lorde de la Vale sayd to them that were thereby, Syrs, take of his yrons that I maye speke with hym fro the duke; and sayd to hym, Syr, howe say you, wyll you do that I shall shewe you. Ye, truely syr, sayd the constable. Then his yrons were taken of, and the lorde de la Vale drewe hym aparte and sayd, Fayre broder, with grete payne and moche busynes I have saved your lyfe and made your ende, but ye must pay or ye departe hens in redy money a C. M. frankes, and moreover to yelde up to the duke iii. castelles, and the towne of Jugon, otherwyse ye can have no delyveraunce. Then the constable sayd, I wyll not refuse that bargayne; but who shall go to Clysson to fetche this money; fayre broder, sayd the constable, I thynke ye must be fayne to go therfore. Naye syr, not so, sayd the lorde de la Vale, for I have promysed never to departe out of this castell tyll I have you with me, for I knowe wel the duke is ryght cruell, and peradventure in myne absence wyll repente hym by some lyght informacyon, and so then al were lost. Why, who shall go then, sayd the constable. Syr, sayd he, the lorde of Beawmanoyre shall goo, he is here in pryson as wel as ye be, he shal make al this provysyon. That is well sayd, sayd the constable, go your waye downe, and ordeyne every thynge as ye lyst.

CAP. LXXX Howe the duke of Bretayne sente for all his lordes and knyghtes to come to counsayle unto Wannes.

CAP. LXXXI

Howe the constable of Fraunce was delyvered at the request of the lorde de la Vale, payenge certayne raunsome; and howe the constable delyvered to the duke iii. castelles and a towne, and payde C. M. frankes.

THUS the lorde de la Vale wente downe out of the towre to the duke, who was goynge to bed, for of all that nyght he had not slepte. Then the lorde de la Vale kneled downe and sayd, Syr, ye shall have al your demaunde; but syr, ye must delyver the lorde of Beawmanoyre that he maye speke with the constable, for he must

CAP. LXXXI

Howe the constable of Fraunce was delyvered at the request of the lorde de la Vale.

go and fetche this raunsome, and put your men in possessyon of the castelles that ye desyre to have. Wel, sayd the duke, delyver them out of pryson, and put them into a chambre, and be you the meane of theyr tretye, for I wyll not se them, and retourne agayne to me when I have slepte and I wyll speke with you. Then the lorde de la Vale yssued out of the chambre, and went with two knyghtes thyder where as the lorde of Beawmanoyre was in pryson, who was gretely abasshed and doubted sore the dethe: he fered when he herde the dore open, that they were come to have put hym to dethe. But when he sawe the lorde de la Vale entre, his harte revyved, and more when he herde hym speke, sayenge, Syr of Beawmanoyre, your delyveraunce is made, wherfore ye maye be gladde. Then his fetters were taken of, and so he wente into another chambre, and then the constable was also brought thyder, and mete and wyne was brought to them, for all the servauntes of the howse were gladde of theyr delyveraunce, for they were sory of that case; howbeit, they myght fynde no remedy, it behoved them to obey theyr maysters commaundement in ryght or in wronge. And as soone as the castell gate was shote, and the brydge drawen, there entred nor yssued nother man nor woman, for the keyes were in the dukes chambre, and he slepte tyll it was iii. of the clocke. And the knyghtes and squyers that were without abydynge for theyr maysters were sore abasshed, and sayd, Nowe our season and voyage by the see is lost and broken, A, constable, what myshap is fallen to you, what counsayle hath dysceyved you; the counsayle that was made and assembled at Wannes was made for none other entente but to attrappe you; ye were wonte to be of the oppynyon that yf the duke had sente for you, and hadde made you a M. assuraunces, yet ye wolde not have gone nor come at his commaundement, ye doubted hym so sore, and nowe ye wente symply at his desyre. Every man thrughe the duchy of Bretayne complayned for the constable, and wyst not what to do nor say. And all knyghtes and squyers sayd, What do we here, why do we not go and enclose the duke in his castel of Ermyne; and yf he have slayne the constable, serve hym in lyke maner, and yf he kepe hym in pryson, let us doo soo, that we maye

have hym agayne; there fell never suche a myschefe in Bretayne: thus one and other sayd, but there were none that styred forwarde, but taryed to here other newes. Thus tydynges spred abrode soo that within two dayes it was at Parys, wherwith the kynge and his uncles, the duke of Berrey, and the duke of Borgoyne, had grete mervayle. As then the duke of Borbon was gone to Avygnyon, to go into Castell, and had sene the pope Clement on his way: these tydynges came to hym as he was at Lyon sure le Rone, and with hym the erle of Savoy.

CAP. LXXXI

Howe the constable of Fraunce was delyvered at the request of the lorde de la Vale.

And the erle of saynt Poule, the lorde of Coucy, and admyrall of Fraunce, beynge at Harflewe redy to have entred into the see towarde theyr voyage, when they herde howe the duke of Bretayne hadde taken the constable of Fraunce prysoner in his castell of Ermyne, and the lorde de la Vale, and the lorde of Beawmanoyre with hym; and they that brought those tydynges sayd, howe the bruyte ranne in Bretayne, howe the duke of Bretayne hadde putte to dethe the constable of Fraunce, and the lorde of Beawmanoyre. These were harde tydynges to these lordes, and they sayd, Nowe our voyage is broken, lette us gyve leve to all our men of warre to departe, and let us goo to Parys to the kynge, and se what he wyll do. Then the admyrall sayd, It is good we do soo, but let not our men departe: peradventure the kynge wyll sende them to some other parte, may happen into Castell, for the duke of Borbon is goynge thyder, or elles peradventure he wyl sende them into Bretayne to make warre agaynst the duke: thynke you that the Frensshe kynge wyl suffre that matter thus to overpas. Nay surely, for the kyng shal receyve by this bergayne domage to the some of ii. C. M. floreynes, besyde the losse and hurte that is done to his constable, yf he scape the lyfe; was there ever case lyke, thus the kynge to breke his voyage, who was in good mynde to have done domage to his enemyes; let us tary here styll a ii. or iii. dayes, and peradventure we shall here some other tydynges out of Fraunce, or out of Bretayne.

CAP. LXXXII

Howe wrytynges were made at the duke of Bretaynes devyse, for the constable to rendre his towne and castelles to the duke, and to his heyres for ever, and howe they were delyvered to the duke.

NOWE let us speke a lytell of the duke of Bretayne, who when he hadde slepte, rose and made hym redy, and then he sente for the lorde de la Vale, who came to hym, and there they were togyder a longe space. Fynally, letters were wryten accordynge to the dukes wyll, makynge mencyon that the constable, syr Olyver of Clysson, renounced clene his tytle for ever of the sayd towne and castell, and yelded them purely to the duke of Bretayne, and to his heyres for ever; and that these wrytynges sholde be permanent without ony repell. And then the lorde of Beawmanoyre was ordeyned by the constable to goo to these castelles, and to cause them that had the rule of them to departe thens, and to put in possessyon the dukes men; and besyde that to levy in redy money a C. M. frankes to pay to the duke. When all this was concluded the gates of the castell was opened, and the lorde of Beawmanoyre yssued out charged and ordeyned by the constable to accomplysshe all these ordeynaunces, and he was desyred to make al the dylygence that myght be. And with hym wente servauntes of the dukes, and noysed as they wente howe the constable was sure of his lyfe, and was put to raunsome. All suche as loved hym, knyghtes and squyers, were glad therof, and so therby sate styll, for they were determyned to have gone and layde syege to the castell of Ermyne, and have closed the duke therin: they never dyd thynge that they wolde have ben gladder of. So these tydynges ranne abrode with the wynde, so that the lordes and knyghtes beyng at Harflewe herde therof, and had certayne knowledge that the constable had ben deed, and the lorde de la Vale had not ben. And they sayd, As for the delyveraunce of his towne and castelles, he shall recover them agayne, or elles other at

CAP. LXXXII

Howe wrytynges were made at the duke of Bretaynes devyse.

tyme and leysure; the Frensshe kynge hath ynowe for hym yf he nede; nowe we maye departe fro hens, our voyage is broken, let us gyve our men leve to departe, and let us goo to Parys and lerne tydynges there; for we here saye that all suche as were at Lentrygnyer are countermaunded, the whiche is a sygne that we shal go no where at this season. Thus they gave lycence to al theyr men of warre to departe, and themselfe departed towarde Parys where the kynge was.

The lorde of Beawmanoyre dyd so moche that within iiii. dayes he had set the duke of Bretaynes servauntes in possessyon of the foresayd castelles and towne of Jugon, and after he payde the C. M. frankes for the constables raunsome, there as the duke commaunded. When all was done, the lorde de la Vale sayd to the duke, Syr, ye have nowe that you demaunded, the C. M. frankes, the towne of Jugon, the castell of Bourcke, and the whyte castell of Josselyn,[1] therfore syr, nowe delyver me the constable. I am contente, sayd the duke, let hym goo when he wyll, I gyve hym leve. Thus the constable was delyvered, and he and the lorde de la Vale departed fro the castell of Ermyne; when they were abrode in the feldes, the constable made no longe taryenge in Bretayne, but mounted on a good horse, and his page on another, and so rode that within two dayes he came to Paris, and alyghted at his owne howse, and then wente to the castell of Lowre, to the kynge and his uncles, the duke of Berrey, and of Borgoyne; his men folowed after hym at theyr leysure. The kynge knewe of his delyveraunce, but he knewe not that he was so nere, and was glad when he herde therof, and caused the chambre dores to be set open agaynst hym, and so he came into the kynges presence, and kneled downe before hym and sayd: Ryght redoubted lorde, your fader, whome God pardon, made me constable of Fraunce, whiche offyce to my power I have well and truely exercysed; and yf there be ony excepte your grace, and my lordes your uncles that wyll saye that I have not acquyted myselfe truely, or done ony thyng contrary to the crowne of Fraunce, I am here redy to cast my gage in that quarell. The kynge nor none other made none answere to those wordes. Then he sayd further, Ryght dere syr and noble kynge, it fortuned in Bretayne in doynge of myne offyce,

[1] *Chastel-Josselin et le Blain.*

CAP. LXXXII

Howe wrytynges were made at the duke of Bretaynes devyse.

the duke of Bretayne toke me and helde me in his castell of Ermyne, and wolde have put me to deth without reason, by reason of his fyers courage, and God had not ben, and the lorde de la Vale: so that I was constrayned, if I wolde be delyvered out of his handes, to delyver to hym a towne of myne in Bretayne, and iii. castelles, and the some of a C. M. frankes; wherfore ryght dere syr and noble kynge, the blame and domage that the duke of Bretayne hath done, gretely regardeth your mageste royall, for the voyage that I and my company sholde have made by the see is broken: wherfore syr, I yelde up the offyce of the constableshyp; syr, provyde for another, suche as shall please you, for I wyll noo more bere the charge therof, I sholde have none honoure to do it. Constable, sayd the kynge, we knowe well that ye have hurte and domage, and is a thynge gretely to the prejudyce to our royalme; we wyll incontynente sende for the peres of Fraunce, to se what shall be best to be done in this case, therfore take ye no thought, for ye shal have ryght and reason.

Then the kynge toke the constable by the hande, and reysed hym up and sayd, Constable, we wyl not that ye departe from your offyce in this maner, but we wyll that ye use it tyll we take other counsayle. Then the constable kneled downe agayne and sayd, Syr, this matter toucheth me soo nere that I can not use it: the offyce is grete, for I must speke and answere every man, and I am so troubled that I can answere no man: wherfore syr, I requyre your grace to provyde for another for a season, and I shall alwayes be redy at your commaundement. Syr, sayd the duke of Borgoyne, he offereth ynoughe, ye shall take advyse. It is true, sayd the kynge. Then the constable arose and wente to the duke of Berre, and to the duke of Borgoyne, and advysed to shewe them his busynes, and to enforme them justely all the matter, seynge the case touched them gretely in that they had the governynge of the royalme. But in spekynge with them, and herynge the hole matter, he perceyved the matter touched not them soo sore as he made of,[1] soo that fynally they blamed hym for goynge to Wannes, sayenge to hym, Syth your navy was redy, and that knyghtes and squyers taryed for you at Lentrygnyer,

[1] *que le roy en avoit respondu.*

CAP. LXXXII

Howe wrytynges were made at the duke of Bretaynes devyse.

and also when ye were at Wannes, and hadde dyned with the duke and retourned agayne to your castell of Bourke,[1] what had you then ony thynge to do to tary there ony longer, nor to goo agayne to the duke to the castell of Ermyne. Syr, sayd the constable, he shewed me soo fayre semblaunt that I durst not refuse it. Constable, sayd the duke of Borgoyne, in fayre semblauntes are grete decepcyons: I reputed you more subtel then I take you nowe; go your way, the matter shall do well ynoughe, we shall regarde it at leysure. Then the constable perceyved well that these lordes were harder and ruder to hym then the kynge was; soo he departed and wente to his owne lodgynge, and thyder came to hym certayne of the lordes of the parlyament to se hym, and sayd to hym that the matter sholde doo ryght well. And also there came to hym to counsayle hym, the erle of saynt Poule, the lorde of Coucy, and the admyrall of Fraunce, and they sayd to hym, Constable, make noo doubte, for ye shall have reason of the duke of Bretayne, for he hath done agaynst the crowne of Fraunce grete dyspleasure, and worthy to be shamed and put out of his countrey. Goo your wayes and passe the tyme at Mount le Herry; there ye shal be on your owne; and let us alone with the matter, for the peres of Fraunce wyll not suffre the matter to rest thus. The constable byleved these lordes, and so departed fro Parys, and rode to Mount le Herry. Soo the offyce of constableshyp was voyde for a season, as it was sayd that syr Guy of Tremoyle sholde be constable: but it was not soo: he was soo well advysed that he wolde not take it out of the handes of syr Olyver of Clysson.

[1] *à vostre hostel ou bourg.*

CAP. LXXXIII

Howe tydynges came to the Frensshe kynge from the partyes of Almayne, the whiche were to hym ryght dyspleasaunt, and unto his uncles.

THE same weke that tydynges came to Parys of the takynge of the constable, there came also tydynges frome the partyes of Almayne, whiche were ryght dyspleasaunt to the kynge and to his uncles. I shall shewe you how and wherfore. The duke of Guerles, sone to the duke of Julyers, was alyed with the kynge of Englande to make warre agaynst Fraunce, and hadde taken a pencyon of foure thousande frankes by the yere, whiche pencyon the duke of Julyers his fader hadde in tyme past out of the kynge of Englandes cofers; but or he dyed he renounced it. And then his sone, who was but yonge, toke it agayne at the kynge of Englandes desyre, so that he wolde defye the Frensshe kynge, and to make warre agaynst hym; and he was enclyned to take the Englysshe parte bycause he had warre with the lady of Brabant, for he sawe well that the duchy of Brabant was favourable to the royalme of Fraunce, for it sholde after retourne to the duke of Borgoyne and to his chyldren. Therfore the duke of Guerles wolde shewe that the matter touched hym so nere that he wolde doo the domage that he myght to the royalme of Fraunce, and to all theyr alyes. So he sente letters of defyaunce to the Frensshe kynge, whiche were nothynge pleasaunt accepted of the kynge nor of his counsayle, as I shall shewe you hereafter in the hystory, when it shal be convenyent to speke therof, in the shewynge of the warre of Bretayne and of Guerles. The Frensshe kynge made noo semblaunt therof, but made good chere to the squyer of Guerles, who hadde brought the defyaunce. Howbeit, he was afrayde, for when he came to the cyte of Tourney he wolde have gone no further, but he had shewed the defyaunce to the provost of the towne, and so wolde have retourned agayne, sayenge, that it was suffycyent to declare his message in soo noble a towne as Tourney. But they of the towne were not so

contente, but arested the squyer and put hym in sure pryson, and then they sente worde therof to the duke of Borgoyne to know his pleasure. Then the duke wrote to the provost of Tourney that he sholde sende to hym the squyer with his defyaunces; and so he was brought to Parys, and he fered lest he sholde dye; but when he came to Parys, the kynge and his uncles, and the other lordes, dyd noothynge to hym but all courtoysye. And the Frensshe kynge gave hym a goblet of sylver weynge iiii. marke, and l. frankes within it, and they gave hym a saufconduyte to retourne into his countrey. So by reason of these tydynges the courte of Fraunce was sore troubled, and the Frensshe counsayle was sore troubled, when the constable of Fraunce came and made his complaynte of the duke of Bretayne, for they sawe well that trouble and expence began to ryse on every syde, and they sawe well howe they must enploy all theyr wyttes to exchewe suche inconvenyentes. They thought that the constable who had served the kyng soo longe in Flaunders and other places, sholde have some helpe, in that the duke of Bretayne hadde raunsomed hym, and taken his castelles, without tytle or good reason, and specyally the lorde of Coucy, and the admyrall, was sore dyspleased with it.

CAP. LXXXIII

Howe tydynges came to the Frensshe kynge from the partyes of Almayne.

Nowe let us retourne to the duke of Lancastre, and to the kynge of Portyngale, who were in Galyce, and made sore warre agaynst the kynge of Castell.

CAP. LXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Lancastres men assayled the towne of Aurene and toke it, for it gave up as other dyd.

HERE before ye have herde how dedes of armes were done bytwene syr Johan Holande, and syr Raynolde of Roy, in the presence of the kynge of Portyngale and his wyfe; and at the kynges departynge he promysed to the duke that as soone as he was retourned to the cyte of Porte, that he wolde not tary past vi. dayes, but that his army sholde sette forthe. Thenne the duke sente Constaunce

CAP. LXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Lancastres men assayled the towne of Aurene and toke it.

his wyfe to the towne of saynt James, under the guydynge of the lorde Fytzwater,[1] a grete baron of Englande, with a hundred speres, and two hundred archers. And the duke sayd to her, Madame, ye shall kepe you in the cyte of Compostella, and the kynge of Portyngale my sone, and our people, shall goo into Castell, to seke for our enemyes to fyght with them whersoever we fynde them, and nowe it shall be sene yf ever we shall have ony thynge in the royalme of Castell or not. Syr, sayd the lady, as God wyll, so be it. Thus they departed for that present tyme, and syr Thomas Percy, and the lorde Fytzwaren, conveyed the duches with two hundred speres out of all daungers, and thenne retourned to the duke, who was as then departed fro Besances, towardes a towne in Galyce, named Aurene,[2] whiche rebelled agaynst hym, and wolde not obey; bycause it was stronge, and therin a garyson of Bretons, who hadde on theyr parelles undertaken to kepe it, and they had well fortefyed it, bycause they hadde knowledge that the duke wolde come thyder. The marshall of the dukes oost hadde well herde howe they of Aurene, in Galyce, wolde not obey, but dayly fortefyed them; he counsayled the constable to goo thyder, and soo every man drewe to that parte, and soo came and lodged nere to it. The season was fayre, aboute the Ascencyon tyme. Then tentes and pavylyons were pyght up in the fayre playnes under the olyves, and soo laye al that fyrst nyght, and the nexte day, without gyvyng of ony assaulte, thynkynge that the towne wolde have gyven up. And indede the men of the towne wolde gladly have yelded them, but the lordes and capytaynes wolde not suffre them, who were Bretons and companyons adventurers; two Bretons were capytaynes, called the bastot of Alroy, and the other the bastarde of Peneforte, they were good men of warre; and that well appered in that they toke on them to kepe that towne so farre out of all socour agaynst the duke of Lancastre.

[1] *Fythwaren* P.

[2] *Orense.*

On the iii. daye that the Englysshemen were thus lodged aboute the towne, and had well regarded howe they myght at theyr advauntage assayle the towne, thenne the constable, the marshall and the admyrall caused theyr trompettes to sounde to the assaulte. And then every man drewe forth

CAP. LXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Lancastres men assayled the towne of Aurene and toke it.

into the felde, and there devyded them into iiii. bandes, to assayle the towne in iiii. partes, and so in goodly ordre approched the towne and taryed on the dykes, wherin there was no water, but it was well fortefyed with pales and hedges. Then the assaulte began in iiii. partes. Then men of armes and other wente downe into the dykes with axes in theyr handes, and therwith cutte downe the hedges; and they within cast downe dartes and other thynges, that yf they hadde not ben well pavessed, there hadde ben many sore hurte and slayne; and also on the edge of the dyke the archers shotte so fyersly that they within durste not appere. The duke of Lancastre came to beholde the assaulte, whiche made it the more fyerser: he sate there on horsbacke the space of thre houres, he had suche pleasure to regarde them. At this fyrst assaulte the dykes were clensed of all the thycke hedges, soo that men myght goo to the pales; then the retrayte was sowned for that day. Then the duke sayd to the marshal, Syr Thomas, our men have done theyr devoyre for this daye, let them withdrawe and ease themselfe. Syr, it shal be done, sayd the marshall: so the assaulte was seased, and every man wente to his lodgynge, and the hurte to be dressed, and so passed that nyght. They had wynes to drynke plentye, but they were soo hoote and myghty, that it was moche payne to drynke them, and suche as dranke of them without water were in that case that they coulde not helpe themselfe the nexte day.

The nexte day it was advysed that they sholde make none assaulte, bycause the daye was soo hoote, and theyr men soo wery and overcome with stronge wynes: but determyned that the nexte daye after they sholde begyn theyr assaulte at the sone rysynge, and to endore tyll iii. of the clocke at afternoone; and so every man was commaunded to take theyr ease tyll they herde the sowne of the marshalles trompet. And the same daye the duke of Lancastre herde tydynges of the kynge of Portyngale, howe he was departed fro the cyte of Porte, and drewe towardes the porte Saynt Yrayne: that waye he was purposed to entre into Castell, and bothe oostes to mete on the ryver of Derne,[1] besyde the towne of Perpygnen,[2] or elles before the towne of Arpent.[3] Thus the Portyngales had devysed, if the kynge of Castell

[1] *Douro.*
[2] *Benavente.*
[3] *Villalpando.*

CAP. LXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Lancastres men assayled the towne of Aurene and toke it.

and the Frensshemen dyd not encountre them before; and yf they were lykely so to doo, then to drawe togyder soner. Of these tydynges the duke was ryght joyous, and gave the messangere for his tydynges x. nobles.

And in the mornynge whenne it was daye, the marshalles trompet began to sowne before the lodgynges to reyse up every man. Then knyghtes and squyers began to make them redy, every man under his owne standerde: then the marshall drewe into the felde, and all suche as were ordeyned to goo to the assaulte. They of the towne had knowledge howe the Englysshemen wolde assayle them, by theyr watchemen, who had herde the mershalles trompet. Then the Bretons reysed up every man and woman in the towne, and sayd to them, Syrs, shewe yourselfe lyke good men, and be not abasshed for nothynge that ye se: we are stronge ynoughe, we have dartes, and speres, and stones, and other artyllery, suffycyent to withstande our enemyes, and if the worste fall, at all tymes they wyll take us to mercy; worse they can not doo to us: we have ben or this in dyvers places farre febler then this is, and yet we have kepte it without daunger or domage. Soo by reason of theyr wordes the Galycyens were incouraged, for of themselfe they hadde rather have yelded them up; for accordynge to trouthe the comons in Castell and Galyce are lytell worth in batayle, they are but evyll armed, and small of courage; the gentyllmen are ryght good on horsebacke.

Thus the Englysshemen, redy apparelled to the assaulte aboute the sone rysynge, came into the dykes juste unto the pales, and with axes and other wepons bet downe the pales to theyr feete, but yet for all that they were not on the walle, for thenne they hadde another dyke to passe as large as the other was; thenne with moche payne they passed that dyke and came to the walles. And when they within sawe them come soo nere they defended themselfe valyauntly. Thenne the Galycyens cast out dartes in suche wyse that whomesooever they strake were soore hurte, without he were well pavessed. Thenne they reysed up ladders for to mounte up too the walles; there knyghtes and squyers avaunced themselfe to mounte with targyes over theyr heedes, and swordes in theyr handes, and so came and fought hande to

CAP. LXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Lancastres men assayled the towne of Aurene and toke it.

hande with the Bretons, who defended themselfe ryght nobly, for I repute it for a grete valyauntnes that they wolde abyde the assaulte, for they knewe well they sholde have as thenne no socoure: for it was determyned bytwene the kynge of Castell and the Frensshemen, to suffre the Englysshmen at that tyme to do what they lyst in Galyce, or elles where, and to passe without batayle. Then some of the Englysshemen sayd, Yf other townes in Castell gyve us as moche to doo as this doth, it shall be longe or we wynne the royalme; and thenne other sayd, There is moche pyllage within the towne brought thyder out of all the countrey aboute, and therfore they are lothe to yelde up the towne. Thenne some demaunded who were capytaynes within the towne. And suche as knewe them sayd, Two basterdes, Bretons, borne good men of armes, and experte in all syeges: and the one is called the bastarde of Pennefort, and the other the basterde of Aulroy; but what soever they be, they be valyaunt men of armes, for they se none apparence of socoure, and yet they wyll not yelde up. And suche as were mounted up were beten downe agayne perforce. And when the duke of Lancastre was up and redy and herde the bruyte of the assaulte, he sayd he wolde goo and beholde them; and soo lepte on a courser and unarmed rode to the assaulte, and his standerde before hym, with the hole armes of Englande and of Fraunce, and at his comynge the assaulte encreased. Thenne every man avaunced hymselfe to gete lawde and prayse: and in lyke wyse they within whenne they sawe that the duke was there, they enforced themselfe to shewe theyr valyauntnes. Thus in assaylynge and defendynge they contynued tyll it was thre of the clocke, and it was not apparent that they sholde have wonne the towne at that assaulte. Thenne the duke demaunded who were capytaynes within the towne, and it was shewed hym. Thenne he sayd, I wolde the marshall sholde speke with them, to know yf they wyll yelde them or not: I thynke they have not as yet ben demaunded, wherfore byd the marshall come and speke with me. A knyght wente to hym and sayd, Syr, my lorde the duke wolde ye sholde come and speke with hym. Then he came to the duke, and the duke sayd, Marshall, knowe ye yf these Bretons wyl put themselfe under myne obeysaunce

CAP. LXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Lancastres men assayled the towne of Aurene and toke it.

or not; we travayle sore our men, and there be dyvers of them sore hurte, and we waste our artyllery, and we can not tell when we shall have nede therof, wherfore I praye you goo to them and take some treatye with them. Syr, sayd he, it shall be done; syth ye wyll take them to mercy, it is reason they be herde speke.

Then the marshall wente from the duke to the assaulte, and sayd to an heraulte, Go thy way and fynde the meanes to speke with the capytaynes within the towne, and shewe them how I wolde speke with them. The heraulte departed and wente into the dykes with his cote armure on his backe, with the armes of the duke of Lancastre, and soo his company made hym waye by the commaundement of the marshal. The bastarde of Alroy sawe wel the heraulte, and so came to the wall, and sayd, Heraulte, what wolde you, I am one of the capytaynes, I thynke ye be sente to me. That is trewe syr, sayd the heraulte, who was called Percy; and syr, the marshall desyreth you to come to the barryers and speke with hym. I am contente, sayd the bastarde, soo that ye cause your men to leve the assaulte, otherwyse I wyll not come. I thynke that shall be soone done, sayd the heraulte. And soo he retourned to the marshall, and shewed hym as ye have herde.

Then the marshall called his trompet, and caused hym to blowe the retrayte, and soo he dydde; thenne the assaulte seased on all partyes. Thenne the capytaynes came to the barryers, and there was redy the marshal, syr John Holande, and syr Thomas Moreaus, and dyvers other Englysshemen. Syrs, sayd the Englysshemen, wyll ye be taken perforce and be utterly lost and slayne, poore and ryche. We knowe well that the comonte of the towne wolde gladly yelde them to my lorde the duke, and to my lady the duches, for they had gyven up this towne or this, and ye had not ben, wherfore yf ye be taken, it is evyll for you; and one thynge ye maye be sure of: we wyll not departe hence tyll we have it, outher by fayre meanes or otherwyse, therfore speke ye togyder and advyse you, and gyve me an answere, for I knowe my charge. Syr, sayd the basterde, we are agreed allredy togyder, and that is, yf ye wyll cause us surely to be conduyted to the towne of Arpent, without daunger or peryll,

CAP. LXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Lancastres men assayled the towne of Aurene and toke it.

we shall yelde up the towne to you, soo that the men and women within maye lyve in peas and surety under the obeysaunce of the duke, in lyke maner as other townes do in Galyce, and none otherwyse; we knowe well ye be the marshall of the oost, and that all treatyes perteyneth to you, and what soever ye do the duke wyll agree to the same. That is trewe, sayd syr Thomas, it shall be as ye desyre, soo that ye bere with you nothynge but that is your owne, and not to robbe nor pyll the towne, nor that ye have wonne in the countrey, for that may cause ryot to be made bytwene you and our men. Syr, sayd the bastarde, we shall cary nothynge with us but that is our owne, and yf ony of our company have bought ony thynge of ony of the towne, and are but evyll payde, yet we shall make noo ryot therfore; I thynke as for mete and drynke syth we came hyder in garyson our men have payde nothynge. As for that, sayd the marshall, is excepte, take all vytayle in advauntage, for soo wyl our men do: but I say ye shall cary away no movables. Syr, sayd the bastarde,[1] we be not soo wyse men, but that some of our company wyll take somwhat. Well, sayd syr Johan Holande, let them passe, that is theyr owne is theyr owne, we wyl not go so nere them as to serche theyr males. Soo be it, sayd the marshall. Then there was an abstynence made for that daye, and the nexte daye they sholde departe. Then the Englysshmen went to theyr lodgyng and unarmed them, and toke theyr ease, and the Bretons all that daye trussed and gadered togyder grete pyllage that they had wonne before in the countrey of Castell, for all was abandoned to them, soo that therby suche as came fyrste into that countrey wanne grete good. And so in the trussynge of theyr baggage they toke many thynges from the men of the towne, as cloth and fethers, and other stuffe, suche as they founde. And when ony of the poore men spake to them, sayenge, Syrs, that good ye take is none of yours, it is our good, ye brought it not hyder; then the Bretons wolde say agayne, Holde your peas ye vyllaynes, we have a commyssyon of the kynge of Castell to paye ourselfe of our wages: ye wyll not paye us, and thoughe ye hadde payde us well and truely, yet we must have newe wages agayne, therfore this that we take is our owne.

[1] *barstarde* P.

CAP. LXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Lancastres men assayled the towne of Aurene and toke it.

Then the nexte daye the marshall lepte on his horse, and a lx. speres in his company, and soo came to the barryers of the towne, and there taryed a space. Thenne the capytaynes of the Bretons came thyder, and the marshall sayd, Syrs, be ye redy to depart. Ye, syr, sayd they, so we may have conduyte to guyde us. Whether wyll you go, sayd the marshall. To the towne of Arpent, sayd they. Well sayd, quod the marshall; beholde here them that shall conduyte you. Thenne he called forthe a knyght of Englande, called syr Steven Stebery, and sayd to hym, Take x. speres with you, and brynge these Bretons to Arpent, and retourne you to morowe. He dyd as he was commaunded, and soo guyded forthe these Bretons with moche baggage. And whenne they were al departed, thenne the marshall and his company entred into the towne, and the people of the towne made hym grete reverence, for many of them thought it had ben the duke hymselfe. When the marshall sawe these Bretons departe with so grete caryage, he demaunded of them of the towne yf they hadde taken away ony of theyr goodes or not. Ye, syr, truely, sayd they, and that to a grete substaunce. Why dyd you not, sayd the marshall, shewe me that betymes, for I sholde have caused them to have rendred it agayne. Syr, sayd they, we durst not, for they thretened to slee us yf we spake therof: syr, they be cursed people; there is none of them but he is a stronge thefe; it is noo mervayle thoughe they robbe us, for eche of them wyll robbe other. The marshal smyled, and then he sente for the chefe men of the towne, and they came before hym; then he made them to swere to holde the towne of Aurene of the duke of Lancastre for ever, in lyke maner and fourme as the other townes in Galyce hadde doone before.

Then he ordeyned newe offycers, and toke of every man theyr faythes and othes, and soo dranke and retourned to the duke into the felde, under the shadowe of the olyve trees, for the hete of the sone, whiche was soo excessyve hoote that man nor horse coulde abyde it, nor noo man durst ryde a foragynge tyll after the houre of iii. for the hete.

The grettest ymagynacyon that the duke hadde, was for that it was shewed hym howe the kynge of Castell was abrode,

and with a grete armye comynge agaynst hym to fyght. For he sawe well that he coulde not perfytely come to the chalenge of Castell but by force of batayle, and soo he sente out spyes into every coost. But thenne it was surely enfourmed hym by his spyes and by pylgrymes that the kynge of Castell made none assembly for to come into the felde, but kepte hymselfe and his men in garysons; and also that the duke of Borbon was not as then come into Castell, nor no tydynges there of his comynge. Soo when the duke hadde taryed fyve dayes in the marches of Auranches, he determyned to goo to Noye, and there to assaye by assaulte to passe the brydge over the ryver of Erne.[1]

CAP. LXXXIIII

Howe the duke of Lancastres men assayled the towne of Aurene and toke it.

[1] *Douro.*

Then the knyght that had conduyted the Bretons to the towne of Arpent retourned agayne, and it was demaunded of hym what company of men of warre were there in garyson. He sayd, howe syr Olyver of Clesquy was there with a thousande speres, Bretons and Frensshemen. Then the constable and marshall sayd to the duke, Syr, it were well done we wente and scrymysshed with them; peradventure they wyll yssue out to demaunde dedes of armes, for there be some of them hath grete desyre therto. I am contente, sayd the duke; let us dyslodge; here we take noo profyte. Then it was ordeyned to dyslodge the nexte mornynge, and to goo to Noye, and thenne after to Arpent.

Nowe lette us somwhat speke of the kyng of Portyngale, and of the waye that he toke for to entre into the royalme of Castell, and thenne we shall retourne agayne to the duke of Lancastre.

CAP. LXXXV

Howe the kynge of Portyngale brente a towne when he was departed fro Porte, and besyeged ii. castelles.

THE kynge of Portyngale departed from Porte, and lefte there the quene his wyfe and her syster, doughter to the duke of Lancastre; and to kepe them and the cyte, he ordeyned the erle of Nowar[2] to abyde there with a hundred speres of Portyngales and Gascoynes, suche as were

[2] *Nuno Alvares.*

CAP. LXXXV

Howe the kynge of Portyngale brente a towne when he was departed fro Porte.

come to serve hym. And then he rode forthe, and the fyrst nyght lodged a thre legges from the cyte of Porte, and the nexte daye departed in thre batayles a fayre softe pace, bycause of his fote men, wherof there were a xii. thousande, with all the caryage; and after, the kynge folowed with a thousande speres. There was with hym Don Galoys, Ferrant Partecke, and Pouvase de Cougne; and Vas Marten de Cougne bare the kynges baner. Also there was John Radyghes de Sar, and the mayster Denyce, called Ferrant Radyghes, with other grete barons and knyghtes; and the reregarde ledde the constable of Portyngale, the erle of Angouse, and the erle of Escall, the lytell[1] Dan de Mondest Radygo, Radyghes of Vale Conseaulx, Ange Salvage of Gevene, Johan Ansale of Popelan, and other lordes and knyghtes, to the nombre of fyve hundred speres. Thus they rode forth, and tooke the waye to Saynt Yrayne by small journeys, for they toke theyr lodgynge ever by thre of the clocke, and so came to the Cabase of Juberoth, and there taryed ii. dayes. And from thens, at two journeys, they rode to Aurach,[2] in Portyngale, and there rested other ii. dayes; and then they came to Saynt Yrayne and there lodged; the towne was lefte voyde ever syth the batayle of Juberoth; the people were drawen into Castel, exepte the castelles, wherin were Bretons and Poyctevyns in garyson. The kynge of Portyngale determyned that bothe the castelles sholde be assayled, for he thought with his honoure he myght not passe by without shewynge of some dedes of armes, for the Castellyans hadde wonne the castelles; therfore he thought to assaye for to wynne them agayne. The kynge hadde brought with hym from the cyte of Porte certayne engynes, for he knewe well he sholde have some assaultes in his waye.

[1] *le Petit, le Podich*, i.e. *Lopo Dias.*

[2] *Ourem.*

Thus the kynge of Portyngale and his men lodged in the marches of Saynt Yrayne, whiche was the entre into the royalme of Castell, all alonge by the ryver of Tese,[3] rynnynge to Syvyll the grete. By this foresayd ryver myght well be brought into the oost all maner of thynges frome Lyxbone and frome Porte; and soo they were a thyrty thousande one and other. The constable and his rowte, with halfe of the comonte, laye before the castell Perrade into

[3] *Pese* P.

CAP. LXXXV

Howe the kynge of Portyngale brente a towne when he was departed fro Porte.

the eest parte; and aboute the other castell in the west parte, called Tayllydon, lay the marshall and his company: in the castell Perrade was capytayne a knyght of Bretayne, called syr Moreys Fouchance, an experte man of armes; and in the castell Tayllydon was syr Jaques of Mountmellyer, a knyght of Poyctou; and eche of them hadde a l. speres. The syege thus lay a xv. dayes without doynge of ony thynge, savynge there were engynes reysed up. And they dydde cast x. or xii. tymes a daye grete stones agaynst the walles, but lytell hurte they dyd, but on the coverynge of the houses, for the houses within were well vawted with stone, so that the engynes nor spryngalles dyd the men but small domage. When the kynge sawe that the castelles wolde not be wonne, and that his men began to waxe wery, he determyned then to dyslodge and to entre into Galyce, and to approche nerer to the duke of Lancastres oost, to the entente that they myght determyne togyder what waye were best for them to take. Soo on a day they dyslodged, and trussed and departed fro Saynt Yrayne, at whiche tyme they brente the towne in suche wyse that there was not a place lefte unbrente able to lodge a horse. When they of the castell sawe them departe, they were ryght joyous, and sowned theyr trompettes, and made grete chere and melody tyll they were all paste. That daye the oost wente and lodged at Pount Ferraunt in Galyce, and the nexte daye in the vale saynt Katheryne, and on the iii. day they came before Feroull in Galyce, a stronge towne, holdynge on the kynge of Castelles parte, and there they rested.

CAP. LXXXVI

Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his oost came before Feroull, and assaulted it, and it was wonne, and brought under the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre.

WHEN the kynge of Portyngale and his men were before Feroull, they founde there a good countrey; and the constable and marshall sayd it sholde be assaulted, affyrmynge howe it was preygnable. They were two dayes without ony assaulte gyvynge, trustynge they wolde have gyven it up, but they dyd not, for within were Bretons and Borgonyons, that sayd they wolde defende it: by the thyrde daye the engynes were reysed up, and the marshall sowned his trompettes to the assaulte; then every man made hym redy to approche the towne. And they within, when they herde the trompettes blowe to the assaulte, they drewe every man to theyr defence, and women caryed and brought stoones to caste, for in Castell and Galyce women be of grete defence and of grete courage, in maner as grete as the men. The Portyngales came to the dykes, whiche were depe, but there was no water in them; then they boldely entred into the dykes, and clymed up agayne on the other syde, but they had moche adoo, savynge they were well pavessed, for they on the walles caste downe stoones, and hurte many, and caused them to recule; also ther was good castynge of dartes, bothe outwarde and inwarde. Thus the assaulte endured tyll it was thre of the clocke, and the men were sore chaced, for the sone was hoote, and they in the dykes hadde none eyre nor wynde, so that they thought they perysshed for hete, soo that therby the assaulte seased; and all that season the engynes dydde caste into the towne at adventure. Thenne the marshall counsayled noo moore to assaulte the towne, but styll to let the engynes caste, and to scrymysshe at the barryers, and to shewe some dedes of armes; and so as he devysed it was doone, and dayly scrymysshes made. And they within often tymes

were closed without the gate, bytwene the barryers and the gate, for to scrymysshe moore at theyr ease. CAP. LXXXVI

And whenne the marshall of Portyngale sawe theyr maner, he devysed theron, and sayd to syr John Ferrant, I se well the sowdyours within at some season are closed bytwene the gate and the barryers; let us take a v. or vi. C. of our men and laye a bysshment, and with a fewe persones let us scrymysshe a whyle, and then withdrawe lytell and lytell, and we shall se that they wyll yssue oute on truste to wynne some what of us; thenne let us tourne agayne sodaynely to the barryers and busye them some what, and thenne our enbusshe of horsemen sodeynly to come on them: and when they se that they wyll forsake theyr barryers, and open the gates to entre, and soo peradventure we may entre with them; and at the leest yf they within open not the gate, they that be without shal be al oures. That is true, syr, sayd syr John Ferrant. Well, sayd the marshall, who was called syr Alve Perreer, do you the one feate and I shall doo the other: goo you and syr Martyne de Marlo, and Pouvas de Cougne, and kepe the enbusshe, and I shall go and make the scrymysshe, it perteyneth to myne offyce. As they devysed so they dyd; there were appoynted out v. C. horsemen for to kepe the enbusshe. And so of iii. dayes they made noo scrymysshe, wherby they within of the garyson hadde mervayle, and sayd to the Galycyens within the towne, Lo, ye unhappy people, ye wolde have gyven up this towne at theyr fyrste comynge, and we had not ben; we have gretely preserved the honoure of your towne, for ye shal se the kynge of Portyngale and all his oost shortely departe hens, without doynge ony domage to us. Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his oost came before Feroull.

On the fourthe daye the marshall, as was devysed, began the scrymysshe with a small company, and the horsemen laye styll pryvely in theyr busshment. And the Bretons within, when they sawe theyr enemyes, in trust to gete some good prysoner, opened theyr gate, and lefte it styll open, to the entente it sholde be the more redyer at theyr retourne, for they trysted not gretely the Galycyens within the towne. So they came to the barryers, and dyd there as it apperteyned to a scrymysshe: then, when the marshall sawe his tyme, he made semblaunt as thoughe he and his men hadde

CAP. LXXXVI

Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his oost came before Feroull.

ben wery, and as halfe dyscomfyted, reculed lytell and lytell. And when the Bretons saw that, they thought to have wonne all, and opened theyr barryers all at ones and yssued out, and came out and toke xxv. prysoners, and they hadde so moche haste to gete them into the towne, that they lefte theyr barryers styll open. Then the marshall made a sygne to the busshement, and they brake out a v. C. horse, and came more then a galoppe, and entred the barryers; and when the Frensshemen and Bretons sawe that, they wolde have reculed to theyr barryers, but they coulde not, for the Portyngales entred as soone as they into the towne. Thus was the towne wonne and dyvers slayne, and the sowdyours that were there in garyson were taken prysoners, excepte suche as saved themselfe by another gate, and soo yssued into the feldes and rode to Arpente, where as syr Olyver of Clysquy was, and a thousande speres with hym: and there they shewed howe the towne of Feroull was lost.

Thus as I have shewed you fell of this towne of Feroull in Galyce. The Portyngales wanne it, and dydde put it under the obeysaunce of the duke of Lancastre, in whose tytle they made that warre. The kynge of Portyngale was gretely rejoyced of that his men hadde done soo well, and incontynente he sente worde therof to the duke of Lancastre, shewynge hym howe he hadde encreased his herytage, for he hadde wonne hym that towne, and he trusted to wynne moo. The duke was gretely rejoyced of those tydynges, who was as then come before Noy, wherin was the Barroys of Barres, and syr John of Chatelet Mouraunte, and syr Trystram de la Gayle, syr Raynolde du Roy, syr Wyllyam of Mongteney, and dyvers other knyghtes and squyers of Fraunce. And when the dukes marshall sawe the castell of Noye, he sayd, Loke, as Coulongne is one of the keyes of Castell towarde the see, soo is this castell of Noye another keye towardes Castell, for he is no lorde of Castell without he be lorde of Coulongne and of Noye. Lette us goo loke what company there is there; it is shewed me howe the Baroys of Barres, an experte man of armes of Fraunce, is there: I thynke at the entrey of the brydge we shall have some scrymyssh. Syr, sayd syr Mamburyne[1] of Luners, and syr John Dambreticourte, that wolde we gladly se. The

[1] *Lamburyne* P.

CAP. LXXXVI

Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his oost came before Feroull.

vaungarde, wherin were a v. C. speres of good men of armes, rode forthe in good ordre, and the duke sente parte of his company thyder to make the gretter mustre, for he knewe well that his marshall wolde shewe there some dedes of armes.

When the watche of the castell sawe the vowarde approche, he sowned alaram: thenne the capytaynes knewe incontynente that the Englysshmen came thyder. They armed them and put themselfe in good ordre; they were a hundred men of armes; and some came to theyr barryers with a xii. penons, but syr Barroys of Barres was moost of reputacyon. And also he hadde the chefe charge, and also syr Johan of Chatell Morant was the nexte. And when syr Thomas Moreaus, marshall of the oost, sawe that he was nere the towne, he alyghted afoote and all his company, and delyvered theyr horses to theyr pages, and so came togyder to the barryers with theyr speres in theyr handes, and at every vi. paces they rested, to kepe themselfe close togyder; it was a goodly syght to beholde them. And so on a fronte they came to the barryers, and there they were receyved valyauntly, and I thynke yf they had ben in the playne felde there had ben noo goodlyer dedes of armes done then was done there, and yet the barryers was bytwene them. And there the marshall without was matched with syr John of the chateau Morant within, and eche of them sore travayled to hurte eche other, but theyr armure was so good that noone of them toke domage; and syr Thomas Percy was coped with le Barroys, and Mauburyn of Lynyers with syr Wyllyam of Mongteney, and syr John Dambretycourte with syr Reynolde of Roy, and the lorde Talbot with Trystram de le Gayle. Thus they were matched and scrymysshed togyder with theyr speres; and when they were wery they rested, and other knyghtes and squyers came and scrymysshed in theyr places: this scrymysshe endured tyll hyghe noone. Then archers came to the place, but then the gentylmen departed, and set crosse bowes to shote agaynst the Englysshe archers and Spanyarde with dartes, and they scrymysshed tyl it was past one of the clocke; then came other yomen and varlettes, and soo scrymysshed tyll it was nyght. Then the Englysshemen retourned, and they of the castell retourned into theyr garyson, and made

CAP. LXXXVI

Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his oost came before Feroull.

good watche. Aboute halfe a legge frome the castell of Noye, alonge by the ryvers syde, the Englysshemen laye, the whiche ryver dydde them grete ease for theyr horses, for they had grete lacke of water tyll they came there. There they refresshed them a v. or vi. dayes, and then wente before the towne of Arpente, to se the dealynge of the constable of Castell and of the Frensshmen; and there they herde tydynges of the kynge of Portyngale, who laye in the playnes of Feroull and all his oost, and was in purpose to come to the towne of Padron in Galyce, whiche was in the waye towarde the duke and the Englysshemen. And there it was ordeyned that the kynge and the duke sholde mete togyder to comon and determyne howe they sholde perceyver in theyr warre.

They had ben a moneth abrode in the countrey, and hadde nere hande brought all Galyce into theyr obeysaunce, and they coulde here no tydynges of the kynge of Castel nor of the Frensshemen; wherfore they hadde grete mervayle, for it was sayd that the kynge of Castel had somoned his people at Burgus fro all the partyes of the royalme, as of Castell, Syvell, Cordowayne, Tollede,[1] Spayne, Lyon, Struges, Vale Olyve, and of Sury; and that he had lx. M. men and vi. M. speres of pure Frensshemen; and howe that thyder sholde come the duke of Borbon, who, as it was sayd, was departed out of Fraunce to come thyder. Therfore the Portyngales and the Englysshmen thought to drawe togyder to be the more stronger and redyer yf theyr enemyes come on them, and they byleved these tydynges to be trouthe; wherfore they were joyfull, for they wolde gladly have made an ende by batayle, for otherwyse they sawe well they coulde not atteyne to theyr desyred entrepryse. And syr Wyllyam of Lygnac and syr Gaultyer of Passac were alwayes aboute the kynge of Castell, and every weke they had tydynges out of Fraunce what busynes there was there, and of the departynge of the duke of Borbon, and howe he toke in his waye of Avygnyon to se pope Clement and the cardynalles there: ever they counsayled the kynge not to fyght tyll the duke of Borbon were come. And amonge other tydynges they herde of the duke of Bretayne, howe he had taken in the castell of Ermyne the constable of Fraunce,

[1] *Collede* P.

CAP. LXXXVI

and raunsomed at a C. M. frankes, and of his iii. castelles and towne that was delyvered to the duke of Bretayne, and howe that therby the journey and voyage into Englande was broken. They had mervayle of this, and to what purpose the duke of Bretayne dyd it; they supposed that the counsayle therof came out of Englande.

Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his oost came before Feroull.

Thus, as I have sayd before, the royalme of Fraunce was brought into trouble, and specyally the kynges uncles were sore moved with the defyaunce that came fro the duke of Guerles, for they were fell and rude, and out of the course of other defyaunces, as I shall shewe you when I declare the matter. And also the Frenssh kynge and his uncles were sore dyspleased in that the duke of Bretayne had broken theyr voyage into Englande by the see, and he that was chefe of the entrepryse taken, that was the constable of Fraunce, and raunsomed as before is sayd at a C. M. frankes, and taken fro hym iii. castelles and a towne, whiche was a thynge gretely prejudycyall to the kynge and to the royalme of Fraunce. Howbeit, the kynge soone passed over all the matters, for he was but yonge, wherfore he regarded it not so sore as though he had ben of perfyte age. But suche as were auncyent and wyse sayd, that by suche lyke matters the royalme of Fraunce hath had moche a do in tyme past, as when the kynge of Navare caused syr Charles of Spayne, constable of Fraunce, to be slayne, for whiche cause kynge John never loved after the kynge of Navare, and toke fro hym all his landes in Normandy. Then some other wolde saye, Yf kynge Charles, fader to the kynge that nowe is, were alyve, he loved the constable soo well, surely he wolde be revenged, and make warre to the duke of Bretayne, and to take fro hym all his landes, whatsooever it cost hym. Thus every man spake of this deed, and sayd it was evyll done. Then the kynges uncles and the counsayle of the royalme, somwhat to satysfye the people, who were sore dyspleased with the duke of Bretayne, determyned that a prelate and iii. barons sholde be sente to the duke, to speke with hym and to here his reasons, and to commaunde hym to come to Parys to make his exscuse of that he had done: thyder sholde go the bysshop of Beawvoys, syr Myles[1] of Dormans,[2] a sage and a ryght valyaunt man, and well langaged,

[1] *and syr Myles* P.

[2] *Dornams* P.

CAP. LXXXVI

Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his oost came before Feroull.

and with hym syr John of Vean,[1] syr John of Beuell, and the lorde de la Ryver, who had theyr charge what they sholde saye and do. And the bysshoppe of Beawvoys toke his waye by Mount le Herry, where as the constable was, for the towne and castell perteyned to hym; kynge Charles had gyven it to hym and to his heyres. And whyle the bysshop was there a sykenes toke hym, and so lay in a fever a xv. dayes and dyed: then in his stede was sente the bysshop of Langers, and he toke his waye with the other into Bretayne.

[1] *Bean* P.

It myght be demaunded of me howe I knewe all these matters, to speke so proprely of them. I answere to all suche, that I have made grete dylygence in my dayes to knowe it, and have serched many royalmes and countreys to come to the true knowledge of all the matters conteyned in this hystory, wryten and to be wryten, for God gave me the grace to have the laysure to se in my dayes, and to have the acquayntaunce of all the hyghe and myghty prynces and lordes as well in Fraunce as in Englande. For in the yere of our Lorde God a M. iii. C. iiii. score and x. I had laboured xxxvii. yeres, and as then I was of the age of lvii. yeres; and in xxxvii. yeres, a man beynge in strength, and wel reteyned in every coost as I was, for after my yonge dayes I was in the kynge of Englandes courte v. yeres with the quene, and also I was welcome to kynge John of Fraunce and to kynge Charles his sone, myght well lerne many thynges; and surely it was alwayes my chefe ymagynacyon and pleasure to enquyre and to retayne it by wrytynge; and howe I was enfourmed of the takynge of the constable of Fraunce I shall shewe you. A yere after this matter fell, I rode from the cyte of Angyers to Towres in Towrayne. And I laye on a nyght at Beauforte in the vale, and the nexte day I met with a knyght of Bretayne, called syr Wyllyam Dancenys; he was rydynge to se my lady of Mayll in Towrayne, his cosyne, and her chyldren; she was newly a wydowe. And I fell in aquayntaunce with this knyght, and founde hym ryght courtoys and swete of wordes; then I demaunded of hym some tydynges, and specyally of the takynge of the constable, whiche matter I was glad to here, and to knowe the trouth therof; and he shewed me and sayd howe he had ben at the parlyament at Wannes, with

CAP. LXXXVI

Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his oost came before Feroull.

the lorde of Ancenys his cosyne, a grete baron of Bretayne. And in lyke maner as syr Espayne de Lyon enfourmed me of all thynges that had fallen in Foyze, in Byerne, and in Gascoyne, and also as syr John Ferrant Parteke shewed me of all the matters of Portyngale and of Castell, in lyke maner this knyght shewed me many thynges, and more wolde have done, if I had ryden longer in his company. Thus bytwene Mounte le Herry[1] and Premylly[2] was iiii. grete leages, and we rode but softely, and in this way he shewed me many thynges, the whiche I bare well in my remembraunce, and specyally of the adventures of Bretayne. And thus as we rode, and that we came nere to Premylly, we entred into a medowe: there this knyght rested and sayd: A God have mercy of the soule of the good constable of Fraunce; he dydde here ones a goodly journey, and profytable for the royalme, under the baner of syr John de Bewell, for he was not as then constable, but newly come out of Spayne. And I demaunded of hym howe it was. I shal shewe you, sayd he, when I am on horsebacke; and so we mounted; than we rode forthe fayre and easely, and as we rode he sayde:

[1] *Mont-la-Herne in French texts: read Beaufort.*

[2] *Rillé.*

In the season that I have shewed you, quod this knight, this countre here was full of Englysshmen, robbers and pyllers of Gascoyne, Bretons, and Almayns, and adventurers of all nacions, for all the countre on bothe sydes of the ryver of Loyre were replenysshed with them: for the warre bytwene Fraunce and Englande was newly renewed, so that all maner of theves and robbers entred into this countrey: for here they assembled and fortifyed themselfe to conquere; the castell of Beauforde in the valey, that ye sawe but late, was in their handes and all the countrey about. Thus, to come to my purpose, the Englysshmen and Gascoyns had in their handes the towne and castell of Prinulley, and had gretly fortifyed it; and they helde also other smalle forteresses alonge by the ryver of Loyre; and whansoever they wolde ryde, they were to the nombre bytwene a thousande and eyght hundred fightynge men. Than sir Bertram, sir Johan of Beull, and the lorde of Mailly, and other knyghtes of this countrey sette their ymaginacions howe they myght delyver the countrey of these people, and

CAP. LXXXVI

Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his oost came before Feroull.

gathered toguyder a fyve hundred speares, and had spyes, and knewe whan the Englysshemen wolde ryde, and were in purpose to come before Samure, for the capytaynes of all their fortresses were assembled togyder at Prinully, whiche is a lytell here before us. The Frenchmen rode and passed the water that ye se here by us, and layde themselfe in a busshment in a wode, a lytell here besyde on our ryght hande. And in the mornynge, at the sonne risynge, the Englysshemen and other departed from Prinully, and they were a nyne hundred men. And whanne oure men sawe them, they knewe well they must fyght; and there they communed toguyder what crye they shulde call on that daye. Some wolde have cryed the crye of sir Bertrame, but he wolde in no wyse agre therto; and moreover he sayd, that he wolde displaye no baner that day, but that he wolde fyght under the baner of syr Johan de Beull. Than our ennemyes came into this medowe, where as I lyghted right nowe; and as soone as they were entred, we brake out of our busshement and entred into the medowe; and as soone as they sawe us they alyghted a fote, and we in lykewise, and so entred eche within other: ther was sore foynynge eche agaynst other, and dyvers of bothe parties overthrowen. Thus our batayle endured a longe space, without knowyng who shulde have the vyctorie: but, to saye the trouth, we were all chosen men of armes, and many of our ennemyes were but yvell armed, and were but theves and robbers. Howbeit, they founde us worke ynoughe, and oure handes full: but than sir Moris Tresiquede[1] and sir Geffray Richone, sir Geffray Caresnell[2] and Morfouase,[3] folowed sir Bertram at the spurres. They came and refresshed us with a thre score speares of good men of armes, and they rushed in with their horses and brake oure ennemyes so abrode, that they coude nat assemble toguyder agayne. And whanne the capytayns of these pyllers sawe that the journey wente agaynst them, they tooke their horses, nat all, for there abode in the felde a thre hundred slayne and taken; and the chase endured to saynt Mors on the ryver of Loyre, and there they entred into a bastel; sir Robert Sem,[4] Robert Herve,[5] Richarde Gylle, and Jacomyne Clerke, these foure saved themselfe, and passed over the ryver of Loyre, and so entred into foure

[1] *Cresiquede* P.
[2] *Kerimel.*
[3] *Morsonase* P.
[4] *Cheyne.*
[5] *Richard Elmham.*

fortresses, that their men helde on that syde the ryver; but they taryed nat longe there, but rode into Auvergne and Lymosyn.

CAP. LXXXVI

Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his oost came before Feroull.

Thus by this journey all the countre here aboute was delyvered, for the robbers nor they assembled no more toguyder after. Therfore I saye, that sir Bertram the constable was a valyaunt man, and profitable for the realme of Fraunce. Sir, quod I, it is trewe, he was a valyaunt man, and so is sir Olyver of Clesquyn. And whan I named hym Clesquyn, the knight smyled, and I demaunded of hym where at he smyled. Sir, quod he, I shall shewe, bycause ye name hym Clesquyn, for that is nat his right name, nor never was; thoughe every man call hym so, yet all we of Bretayne call hym the same. And sir Bertram, while he lyved, wolde gladly have hadde it refourmed, but he coude nat amende it, for the worde is redyer to falle on a mannes tonge than his right name. Than I desyred hym of his courtesy to shewe me if there were any grete difference bytwene his names. Nay, sir, quod he, there is no grete difference; but where he is called Clesquyn, he shulde be named Glaye Aquyne; and I shall shewe you, as I have herde it reported, howe that name came to hym, and it is of trouthe, for ye shall fynde it written in the auncyent cronycles of Bretaygne. The wordes of this knight greatly pleased me; and I said to hym, Sir, ye shall do me great pleasure to shewe me the mater, and I shall never forgete it, for sir Bertram was so valyaunt a knyght, that his dedes ought to be put in remembraunce. That is true, quod the knyght, and I shall shewe you. Thus sir Wyllyam of Aunsiens began his tale:

In the season whan Charles the great raigned in Fraunce, who conquered and augmented the faythe, and was Emperour of Rome and kyng of Fraunce and of Almaygne, and lyeth at Ayes the chapell, this kynge Charles, as we rede and fynde in the auncyent cronycles, for ye knowe well that all the knowlege in the worlde is knowen by writyng, for we have nothyng to founde upon trouthe nor to aprove it but by scripture: this kyng Charles was in Spayne divers tymes, and at one tyme he was styll there a ix. yere, without retournyng into Fraunce, but styll went

CAP. LXXXVI

Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his oost came before Feroull.

forthe on his conquest. In the same season ther was a kyng Sarazyn, called Aquyn; he was kyng of Bougie in Barbary, right over agaynst Spaigne; for Spaygne is a great countrey, begynnyng at saynt Johns Pie du Porte: for the realme of Arragon and Naver, of Bisquay, of Portugale, of Connymbres, of Lixbone, of Civyle, of Tollet, of Cordwayne, and of Lyon, all these be inclosed within Spayne, and other. And this great kyng Charlemayne conquerid all these countreis. And in this season that the kyng taryed there so longe, this kyng Aquyn of Bougy in Barbary assembled his men, and came by see into Bretaygne, and arryved at the porte of Wannes, and he hadde there with hym his wyfe and chyldren, and there he conquered and went forwarde. Kynge Charles was well enfourmed of this viage, and howe kynge Aquyn prospered in Bretayne; but for all that he wolde nat breke his vyage, and sayd, Lette hym alone in Bretaygne; it shal be but a small mater to delyver the countrey of hym and of his, whan we have ones subdued his countrey here, and brought it into the Holy Faythe. This kynge Aquyn buylded a towre by the see syde, nat farre of fro Wannes, a goodly and a fayre towre, and it was called Glaye; and there this kynge Aquyn lay moche. And whan kyng Charles had accomplished his vyage, and acquyted all Galyce and Spaygne from all the myscreantes, and the kynges Sarazyns deed and slayne, and all the lande tourned to the Christen faythe, than he retourned into Bretaygne, and on a daye hadde a great batayle agaynst this kynge Aquyne, and nyghe all the myscreantes slayne. And so this kynge Aquyne fledde into the castell of Glaye, and there he hadde redy at the foote of the towre a shyppe, and therin he entred, and his wyfe and his chyldren; but he and his wyfe made suche haste, he was so nere chased, that they hadde no leysar to take with them a yong sonne that laye and slepte in the towre, of a yere olde. Thus the kynge and his wyfe departed by the see, and this chylde was founde in the towre of Glaye, and was brought to kynge Charlemaygne, who was right joyouse of hym, and said, howe the chylde shulde be baptysed, and so he was, and Rouland and Olyver helde hym over the fonte, and was named Olyver; and the kyng gave him all the landes that his father Aquyn had

CAP. LXXXVI

Howe the kynge of Portyngale and his oost came before Feroull.

conquered. This chylde, whan he came to the age of a man, was a good knight, and his men called hym sir Olyver de Glaye Aquyn, bycause he was founde in the towre of Glaye, and sonne to the kynge Aquyn.

Thus I have shewed you the firste foundacyon of sir Bertram of Clesquyn, who shulde be called Glaye Aquyne. And sir Bertram in his dayes, after the puttynge out of kynge Don Peter of Castyle, and had crowned kyng Henry, sayde howe he wolde go into Bougy to demaunde his herytage; and without fayle so he had done, for kyng Henry had lent hym men and shyppes to go into Bougye with a great armye, if a great lette had nat broken his voyage. And that was whanne the prince of Wales made warre upon the sayde kynge Henry, and dyde put hym downe, and by puissaunce dyde sette into Castyle agayne Don Peter. And than at the batayle of Marres,[1] sir Bertram was taken prisonner by sir Johan Chandos, and was sette to raunsome at a hundred thousande frankes; and at another tyme he was also taken at the batayle of Alroy, and raunsomed agayne at a hundred thousande frankes. So thus sir Bertrams purpose was brokenne, for the warres bytwene Englande and Fraunce was renewed; so that they hadde ynoughe to do. Thus he was lynially discended fro the kynge of Bougy, named Aquyne, whose kyngdome is in Barbarye.

[1] *Najera.*

Thus I have shewed you the ryght discente of sir Bertram of Clesquyn. I thanked hym, and so we came to the towne of Prinulley.

END OF VOLUME IV.

EDINBURGH
T. & A. CONSTABLE
Printers to Her Majesty
1902

D
113
F713
1901a
v.4

Froissart, Jean
Chronicle

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY